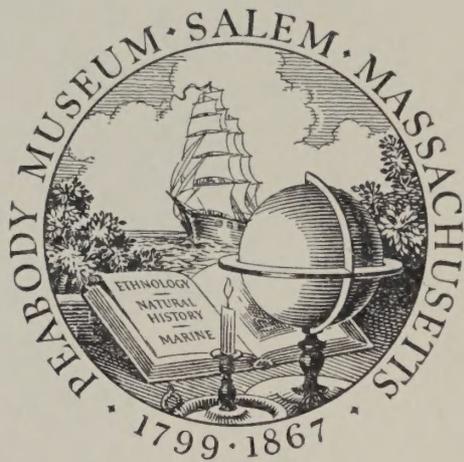


Acc. no. 21,747

Library of

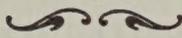


Gift of

Essex Institute

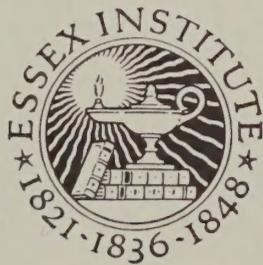
The Records
of the
First Church in Salem
Massachusetts
1629-1736

The Records
of the
First Church in Salem
Massachusetts
1629-1736



Edited by
RICHARD D. PIERCE

Introduction by
ROBERT E. MOODY



ESSEX INSTITUTE

Salem, Massachusetts

1974

C

COPYRIGHT © 1974 BY ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CATALOG CARD NUMBER: 73-93302

ISBN 0-88389-050-X

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA



974.45

S16P6

TO THE MEMORY
OF
STEPHEN PHILLIPS

1907-1971

THROUGH WHOSE EFFORTS THIS
WORK WAS BEGUN,
THIS VOLUME IS DEDICATED BY
THE ESSEX INSTITUTE

12
78

Foreword

By a generous bequest in his will, the late James Duncan Phillips made it possible for the Essex Institute to publish original records relating to Essex County. His feeling, often expressed, was that publication could preserve a unique document from the hazards of time as well as make it more widely available to scholars. With ever increasing historical research, frequent handling is hard on old material. This publication is made possible by a grant from this fund.

The Records of the First Church in Salem constitute a major document in the history of Salem and the Bay Colony as well, and the value of this publication is increased by the fortunate chance that the transcription and editing were done by Dr. Richard D. Pierce who had performed the same task for the Colonial Society of Massachusetts in the publication of the *Records of the First Church in Boston*. Despite his untimely death in August, 1973, the essential work was completed with the benefit of his great scholarship in the field of New England church history.

The Essex Institute in particular and scholars generally owe a debt of gratitude to the members of the First Congregational Society in Salem for making available the valuable records of the Society for the purposes of this work. Last, but by no means least, our thanks are due to Professor Robert E. Moody, who, on the unexpected death of Dr. Pierce, organized his nearly completed work and provided a scholarly introduction which adds greatly to its value.

W. HAMMOND BOWDEN

Table of Contents

FOREWORD	vii
INTRODUCTION	xi
THE RECORDS OF THE FIRST CHURCH IN SALEM	
Covenant, August 6. 1629	3
A Catalogue of the names of those persons that are joyned in full Comunion	5
A Catalogue of the names of the Children of the Church that are Baptized	16
A Catalogue of the names of such persons either Adult or Infants who have received baptism from the 12th of October, Anno 1718	58
The Records of the First Church in Salem from 1660	84
A Continuation of the Record of Baptism [from 1740]	304
A Catalogue of the Names of Such Persons which have Entered into Covenant with God in the Church or renewed their Baptismal Covenant: But Generally have not had light sufficient att Present, to come to the Lord's Supper, . . . beginning November 2, 1718	308
A Catalogue of the Names of such Persons who have been received to Communion att the Lords Table, in this Church — from the 28th December 1718	325
Account of the Plate etc. Belonging to the First Church in Salem. December 1718	337
APPENDICES	
A. Ministers of the First Church in Salem	339
B. Short Title List	339
C. Contemporary Works Relating to the Fisk Controversy	342
INDEX OF PERSONS	343
INDEX OF SUBJECTS	413

Introduction

“Gather my Saints together unto me that have made a Covenant with me by sacrifice. psa: 50:5.”

The Massachusetts Bay Company

In 1623 a fishing company known as the Dorchester Adventurers was organized in Dorchester, England, under the auspices of a Puritan minister, the Rev. John White, and began its activities at Cape Ann in New England. The company was a commercial failure; its leader, Roger Conant, with White's encouragement, in 1626 moved to Naumkeag, a more favorable location, soon renamed Salem. In 1628 the Adventurers, reorganized as the New England Company on the basis of a land grant from the New England Council, sent over John Endecott with a band of English colonists as the beginning of a larger plantation. While Endecott and his settlers struggled against the hardships of a New England winter, the New England Company enlarged its support in England, procured a charter (March 4, 1629) from King Charles I, gathered, with the necessary supplies, a company of about two hundred men, women and children from English Puritan parishes, and hired a fleet of five ships. In late April and early May 1629 the prospective colonists embarked from London, landing late in June at Naumkeag harbor.

The purpose of the Massachusetts Bay Company under its royal charter was to plant a colony in New England which should be a refuge for English Puritans increasingly threatened in their religious practices by the efforts of the bishops of the Church of England to enforce uniformity in the Church. To secure substantial support, the Company was organized as a joint-stock company in which wealthy Puritan landowners and merchants were urged to invest both for profit and as a religious duty. Since religion had a primary place in this colonial enterprise, provision for the worship of God in accordance with Puritan beliefs was essential to the Company's plans. Accordingly, The First Church in Salem was instituted on August 6, 1629.

The Organization of the Salem Church

The only other church in New England at the time was at Plymouth. Organized in Leyden, Holland, as a Separatist congregation, this church had migrated as a unit, expecting that at an opportune time, their pastor, Rev. John Robinson, and the rest of the congregation would join them. At Salem the colonists had been members of different parish churches, none of them Separatist. The Massachusetts Bay Company left it to the colo-

nists themselves to organize their own Puritan church providing only the necessary spiritual leaders. Three clergymen, Rev. Francis Higginson, Rev. Samuel Skelton, and Rev. Francis Bright were carefully selected, after due inquiry into their suitability, for the tasks ahead. They were well known to at least some of the members of the Company, they had been silenced in England for their refusal to conform, and they were well recommended by other Puritan clergy. They had "declared themselves to us to bee of one judgment, and to bee fully agreed on the manner how to exercise their ministry,"¹ wrote the Company to Endecott. "For the manner of the exercising their ministrie, and teaching both our owne people and the Indians, wee leave that to themselves, hoping they will make God's word the rule of [their actions], and mutually agree in the discharge of their duties; and because their doctrine will hardly bee well esteemed whose persons are not revered, wee desire that, both by your owne example and by commanding all others to do the like, our ministers may receive due honour."²

While the new group of settlers and the ministers were on the seas, John Endecott in Salem had been discussing church policy with Samuel Fuller, deacon of the church at Plymouth, who in May 1629 had come there to give medical aid to those ill with scurvy. When Fuller returned to Plymouth, Endecott wrote to Governor Bradford concerning their conversations:

"I acknowledge myselfe much bound to you for your kind love and care in sending Mr. Fuller among us, and rejoyce much that I am by him satisfied touching your judgments of the outward forme of God's worshippe. It is, as farr as I can yet gather, no other than is warranted by the evidence of truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained ever since the Lord in mercie revealed himselfe unto me; being farr from the commone report that hath been spread of you touching that perticular."³

No matter how pleasing Governor Endecott found Deacon Fuller's explanations, the fact that Endecott says that what he has heard is the same which he had "proffessed" ever since he became a Puritan means either that he had long been a Separatist or that he is writing a gracious letter of acknowledgement of a rewarding visit. We have no evidence at all of Endecott's having had Separatist ideas while in England; it seems unlikely that Fuller had converted him in so short a time. In any case, the influence of the ministers, not yet arrived in Salem, must be considered before concluding that Fuller's persuasions determined the course of Salem's church.

Discussions by the English Puritans of reforms in the Church of Eng-

¹*Mass. Bay Records*, I, 394 (April 17, 1628).

²*Ibid.*, I, 387.

³William Bradford, *History of Plymouth Plantation*, W. C. Ford, ed. 2 vols. Boston, 1912. II, 90. Hereafter cited as Bradford, *Plymouth*.

land had gone on for some time, chiefly concerning the evils and corruptions such as the use of the prayerbook, the formal ritual and the powers of the bishops, from which the reformers wished to escape. There were many ideas but little formal agreement as to the precise discipline they wished to substitute for existing practices. Even the Separatists were noted for their violent divisions. Higginson, Skelton and Bright, when they embarked for the new world, were familiar with the arguments over the position of the individual congregations within the Church. Congregational ideas were known to them, but they were not Separatists. Given the opportunity at Salem to organize a reformed church far from the bishop's restraining hands, the new arrivals adopted policies which their contemporary non-conformist critics, who decried the abandonment by the emigrants of the cause of reform in England, thought deserving of the condemnation especially directed at the Separatists. From the point of view of the Salem leaders, conditions forced them to adopt procedures in practice not in theory. As believers in uniformity, they paid tribute both to Mother England and to the Mother Church; as believers in their duty to provide a true church according to the Bible's teaching, they developed their own congregational policies, in which they could not avoid the tensions inherent in any system attempting to give liberty to true believers and at the same time an orderly way of religious life to the whole community. Henceforth the balance between the authority of the brethren, the ministers, the neighboring churches, and the state would be questions debated in every particular church.⁴

The early proceedings at Salem were described by Charles Gott, a deacon in the Salem church, in a letter, dated July 30, 1629, to Governor Bradford:

“The 20th of July, it pleased God to move the heart of our governour [John Endecott], to set it apart for a solemn day of humiliation for the choice of a pastor and teacher; the former part of the day being spent in praise and teaching; the latter part was spent about the election, which was after this manner; the persons thought on⁵ (who had been ministers in England) were demanded concerning their callings; they acknowledged there was a two-fold calling, the one an inward calling, when the Lord moved the heart of a man to take that calling upon him, and fitted him with gifts for the same; the second (the outward calling) was from the people, when a com-

⁴Within the towns themselves there was eventually a widening breach between the church composed of the “visible saints” and the parish which included both members and non-members of the churches.

⁵Rev. Francis Bright seems not to have been considered satisfactory, probably because he was not in favor of some of the congregational practices. A fourth minister, Rev. Ralph Smith, who came on his own account, left Salem because the church was not Separatist enough. Bradford, *Plymouth*, II, 95, n.

pany of believers are joined together in covenant, to walk together in all the ways of God, every member (being men) are to have a free voice of their officers, &c. Now we being persuaded that these two were so qualified as the apostle speaks of to Timothy, where he saith a bishop must be blameless, sober, apt to teach, &c. I think I may say as the eunuch said unto Philip, what should let him from being baptised, seeing there was water, and he believed; so these two servants of God clearing all things by their answers (and being thus fitted) we saw no reason but that we might freely give our voices for their election after this trial: Their choice was after this manner, every fit member wrote, in a note, his name whom the Lord moved him to think was fit for a pastor, and so likewise, whom they would have for teacher; so the most voice was for Mr. Skelton to be pastor, and Mr. Higginson to be teacher; and so they accepting the choice, Mr. Higginson, with three or four more of the gravest members of the church, laid their hands on Mr. Skelton, using prayers therewith. This being done, then there was imposition of hands on Mr. Higginson: Then there was proceeding in election of elders and deacons, but they were only named and laying on of hands deferred, to see if it pleased God to send us more able men over; but since Thursday, (being, as I take it, the 5th⁶ of August) is appointed for another solemn day of humiliation, for the full choice of elders and deacons and ordaining them.”⁷

The account written by Nathaniel Morton about forty years later gives the clergy a considerably more important part in the formation of the Salem church. He says that Higginson and Skelton told Endecott and the rest of the Salem people of their intention of settling a “Reformed Congregation,” and, finding general concurrence, they proceeded to set a date for the election and ordination of their ministers. Higginson drew up a Confession of Faith and Covenant in “Scripture-language”, inserting one article into the Confession of Faith about the “Duty and Power of the Magistrates in Matters of Religion.” Thirty copies of the Confession of Faith and Covenant were written out for the thirty original church members.

“When the sixth of *August* came,” continued Morton, “it was kept as a day of Fasting and Prayer, in which after Sermons and Prayers of the two Ministers, in the end of the day, the foresaid *Confession of Faith and Covenant* being solemnly read, the forenamed persons did solemnly pro-

⁶He was mistaken; the date was the 6th.

⁷“Governor Bradford’s Letter-Book,” Massachusetts Historical Society, *Collections*, 1st. Ser., III, 67-68. The election of Skelton and Higginson could not have been a difficult matter; they had been selected and sent over by the Company. This account, it may be noted, emphasizes the part played by the people.

fess their Consent thereunto: and then proceeded to the Ordaining⁸ of Mr. *Skelton* Pastor, and Mr. *Higginson* Teacher of the Church there. Mr. *Bradford* the Governour of *Plimouth*, and some others with him, coming by sea, were hindred by cross winds that they could not be there at the beginning of the day, but they came into the Assembly afterward, and gave the *right hand of fellowship*, wishing all prosperity, and a blessed success unto such good beginnings. After which, at several times many others joynd to the Church in the same way. The *Confession of Faith* and *Covenant* forementioned, was acknowledged onely as a Direction pointing unto that Faith and Covenant contained in the holy Scripture, and therefore no man was confined unto that form of words, but onely to the Substance, End and Scope of the matter contained therein: And for the Circumstantial manner of joyning to the Church, it was ordered according to the wisdome and faithfulness of the Elders, together with the liberty and ability of any person. Hence it was, that some were admitted by expressing their Consent to that written *Confession of Faith* and *Covenant*; others did answer to questions about the Principles of Religion that were publickly propounded to them; some did present their Confessions in writing, which was read for them, and some that were able and willing did make their Confession in their own words and way.”⁹

Cotton Mather in his *Magnalia*¹⁰ follows Morton very closely but adds:

“They did all agree with their brethren of *Plymouth* in this point,
That the children of the faithful were Church-members, with their

⁸Gott, in the statement quoted above, wrote that the ordination of the two ministers took place on July 30. Was there a second ordination on August 6, or have Morton, Hubbard, and Mather, all of whom we quote, telescoped the events of two days into one? All these accounts may be traced largely to John Higginson, son of the minister who, as a boy of fourteen, was there, and who, years later, gave all of these writers a substantial part of their material on Salem. So young a witness after the lapse of years may well have failed to remember clearly even so momentous events.

⁹Nathaniel Morton, *New-Englands Memorial; Or, A Brief Relation of the Most Memorable and Remarkable Passages of the Providence of God, Manifested to the Planters of New-England in America; With special Reference to the first Colony thereof, Called New-Plimouth*. Cambridge: Printed by S. G. and M. J. for John Usher of Boston. 1669. The prefatory note “To the Reader” was signed by John Higginson and Thomas Thacher on March 26, 1669. Some phrases of Morton’s account of Salem follow closely John Higginson’s “Directions” of 1665, which is quoted below.

¹⁰Cotton Mather, *Magnalia Christi Americana: Or, the Ecclesiastical History of New-England, from Its First Planting in the year 1620, unto the Year of our Lord, 1698*. London, 1702. Book I, ch. IV, p. 19. This volume, like Nathaniel Morton’s, had the approval of John Higginson, who wrote “An Attestation” dated “25 day of First mo. 1697.” In another place in the book, Mather states definitely his obligation to Higginson.

Parents; and that their Baptism was a Seal of their being so; only before their admission to a Particular Church, it was judged Necessary, that being free from Scandal, they should be examined by the Elders of the Church, upon whose Approbation of their Fitness, they should Publickly and Personally own the Covenant; so they were to be received unto the Table of the Lord: And accordingly the oldest son of Mr. Higginson, being about Fifteen Years¹¹ of age, and laudably Answering all the Characters expected in a Communicant, was then so received."

Rev. William Hubbard, as well-informed regarding church matters as any contemporary, stated that unlike the Plymouth people who were already a church when they came to New England, the Salem colonists were "honest-minded men, studious of reformation that only disliked some things in the discipline of the Church of England, but were not precisely fixed upon any particular order or form of government, but like *rasa tabula*, fit to receive any impression that could be delineated out of the word of God, or vouched to be according to the pattern of the Mount, as they judge. Nor are their successors willing to own that they received their platform of church order from those of New Plymouth; although there is no small appearance that in whole or part they did, (further than some wise men wish they had done,) by what is expressed in Mr. Endicot's letter, above inserted; or else good wits, as they use to say, did strangely jump very near together, into one and the same method and idea of church discipline." Moreover, wrote Hubbard, if Higginson and Skelton had followed the advice of Mr. Hildersham, the famous opponent of the Separatists, and had agreed upon their form of church government before leaving England, it would "at least have saved some of the succeeding ministers from the imputation of departing from their first principles. . . . But they had not, as yet, waded so far into the controversy of church discipline as to be very positive in any of those points wherein the main hinge of controversy lay between them and others."¹²

¹¹Mather was mistaken. John Higginson was fourteen years of age in 1629. He was born on 6 Aug. 1615.

¹²William Hubbard, *A General History of New England from the Discovery to MDCLXXX*. Second ed. Boston, 1848. Pp. 117-118. Since Perry Miller wrote his *Orthodoxy in Massachusetts, 1630-1650* [Torch book edition. Introduction by David D. Hall, New York, 1970], the positive statement that Salem derived its church discipline from Plymouth has been generally abandoned. Dissenting from Miller's position however is Larzar Ziff, "The Salem Puritans in the 'Free Aire of a New World,'" *Huntington Library Quarterly*, XX (1956-1957), 573-584. A survey of the recent literature modifying and enlarging upon Miller's pioneer work is Michael McGiffert, "American Puritan Studies in the 1960's," *William and Mary Quarterly*, 3d. Ser., XXVII (1970), pp. 36-37.

The Increase in Churches

As the Massachusetts Bay Colony grew in population and churches multiplied, tensions between members and non-members of churches in their local communities, between members of churches in their relationship to their ministers, and between individual churches, which insisted on their local autonomy, and ministers in general, most of whom saw the advisability of calling councils of neighboring churches to obtain some degree of uniformity, brought about unpleasant disputes. Though many new parishes were the result of the settling of new towns, and caused little discussion, others were formed within old communities by the withdrawal of members from existing churches, often for reasons of convenience. At times the older churches opposed what might seem to be natural division because of fear of diminishing influence. Church councils consisting of neighboring churches came to be a device for settling disputes but individual ministers sometimes opposed their use.¹³ In the face of threatened chaos over church discipline, the General Court made provision for general meetings or synods of the clergy for the discussion and resolution of prevailing difficulties. One met in 1647 which resulted in the Cambridge Platform of 1648, another in 1663, and still another, "the reforming synod" in 1679. The General Court also called for the observance of Fast Days, Days of Thanksgiving, and Days of Humiliation in order to bring to people's attention their sinful lives and the need for reform. The long-expected blessings of God upon his chosen people seemed few indeed compared to the evidences of God's wrath in the form of Indian wars, earthquakes and other natural catastrophes, as well as the multitude of tragedies of everyday life in the new world. The clear evidences of sin were all around. The clergy must be stirred to new vigilance and the Days of Humiliation were opportune occasions for the solemn renewal of church covenants.

Rev. John Higginson, installed in Salem in 1660, followed closely, if indeed he did not lead the trend to observe "renewals of the covenant" in an effort to impress the people with their need for reformation. After the Synod of 1662, he drew up "Directions" for his church in Salem, insisting however that they should be considered only as guides, while hoping that they would be universally adopted by his church. The first page of the printed document explains its content and intent:

A DIRECTION for A PUBLICK PROFFSSION In the CHURCH ASSEMBLY, after private Examination by the ELDERS.

¹³See the independence of the Salem church under Edward Norris, 1640-1659, as shown by D. A. White, *New England Congregationalism in Its Origin and Purity; Illustrated by the Foundation and Early Records of the First Church in Salem, and Various Discussion Pertaining to the Subject*, Salem, 1861. Pp. 289-290.

Which Direction is taken out of the Scripture, and Points unto that Faith and Covenant contained in the Scripture.

Being the same for Substance which was propounded to, and agreed upon by the Church of *Salem* at their beginning, in the sixth of the sixth Moneth, 1629.

In the Preface to the Declaration of the Faith owned and professed by the Congregational Churches in England.

The Genuine use of a Confession of Faith is, that under the same Form of Words they express the substance of the same common Salvation or unity of their Faith. Accordingly it is to be looked upon as a fit meanes, whereby to express that their Common Faith and Salvation, and not to be made use of as an imposition upon any.¹⁴

Again, after the Synod of 1680 and a second renewal of the covenant in Salem, another pamphlet was printed, also written by Rev. John Higginson:

A Copy of the Church-Covenants which have been used in the Church of Salem Both formerly, and in their late Renewing of their Covenant on the day of the publick Fast, April 15, 1680.

*As a Direction pointing to that Covenant of Gods Grace in Christ made with his Church and People in the holy Scripture.*¹⁵

This tract begins "There was a Church Covenant agreed upon and consented to by the Church of Salem at their first beginning in the Year, 1629, Aug. 6. The following Covenant was propounded by the Pastor, agreed upon and consented to by the brethren of the Church, in the year, 1636." Then follows, exactly as it appears in the present first volume of records, the preamble of 1636, the covenant, and finally the renewal of 1660, when Rev. John Higginson became pastor. On pages 5 to 8 is an entirely new covenant "to be used as a direction for the Renewing of our Church Covenant, as being more accommodated to the present times, and state of things amongst us."¹⁶

Mr. Higginson's high regard for the synods, his recognition of ecclesiastical councils, and his refusal to allow "errors" aroused opposition within

¹⁴See pp. 103, 107, below. The work was printed in Cambridge in 1665. The copy in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society formerly belonged to Gov. John Winthrop, Jr. who wrote on it: "The author is Mr. John Higginson Pastor of the Church of Salem." No title page is present.

¹⁵There follow six quotations from the Bible on the Covenant. The Imprint is: Boston. Printed at the desire and for the use of many in Salem, for themselves and their children, by J. [ohn] F. [oster] 1680. This exceedingly rare item has been reproduced by the Massachusetts Historical Society as no. 214 in its series of *Photostat Americana* from the copy in the American Antiquarian Society, which has the autograph (twice) of "Samuel Curwen. 1739." See also p. 151, below.

¹⁶Curiously, in spite of the all-inclusive title, Higginson did not reprint the Covenant of 1665 contained in his *Direction* of that year.

his parish. After having approved the employment of Rev. Charles Nicholet in 1672 as his assistant for a probationary year, he found him erroneous in some particular ways. The town, however, without asking the opinion of either church or pastor, approved Nicholet for an additional year and, at its conclusion, voted to give him lifetime tenure. Up to this time Higginson, desiring peace, had not openly protested. At a church meeting however he voiced his particular objections¹⁷ to Nicholet, and the latter seemingly admitted errors and agreed to reform. His adherents, desiring to give him full support, went to Lynn and at a hastily assembled gathering of ministers from Boston, Woburn, Malden and Lynn with Gov. John Leverett obtained approval for a new church. Before the conclusion of the council's deliberations, representatives from Beverly, Wenham, and Salem appeared. Their views threw a different light on the situation and the vote approving the formation of a new church was rescinded. When the dissidents, chiefly townspeople but including a few members of the church, appealed to the General Court,¹⁸ Higginson answered in an "Apologie."¹⁹ The General Court met at Salem; its Committee²⁰ recommended conciliation and a church council. The council was never held, probably because Nicholet's supporters realized that a decision by churches would be unfavorable to them. After preaching "nine farewell sermons", Nicholet returned to England, the Salem church under Higginson giving him its recommendation. The movement for separation ended, though not the controversy between the authority of the town and the authority of the church.

Other movements for separation were upon the obvious grounds that more convenient facilities for worship would be provided closer to the homes of the communicants. In 1667, the "brethren and sisters on Basse River side" petitioned to be dismissed from the Salem church to be a church by themselves. Dismissal was voted by the First Church on July 4, 1667, and on September 9, Rev. John Hale was ordained.²⁰ Shortly after, the inhabitants of Bass River petitioned for power to choose selectmen (May 27, 1668) and the town of Beverly was incorporated on November 7, 1668.²¹

Up to 1684, Marblehead had no church of its own. On June 6, 1684, the Salem Church voted to dismiss the brethren and sisters of Marblehead "that they (and their children) might become a Church of themselves."²²

¹⁷See the letter of John Higginson to Increase Mather, Massachusetts Historical Society, *Collections*, 4th Ser., IV, 269-270. See below, pp. 129-133; 134-136.

¹⁸*Mass. Bay Records*, V, 34.

¹⁹"My Apologie to the Committee, June 8. 75," Massachusetts Historical Society, *Collections*, 4th Ser., IV, 270-278.

²⁰Below, pp. 116-117.

²¹*Mass. Bay Records*, IV, Part 2, 385, 407. The church is now the First Church of Beverly.

²²Below, pp. 158-159.

Less amicable was the dismissal of members of the Salem church to form the Middle Precinct (Peabody) Church, which was considerably delayed because of the failure of the withdrawing members to consult in advance. The vote to dismiss was taken on June 25, 1713.²³

The East Church of Salem had its origin in a dispute over Rev. George Curwen who was elected minister of the Salem Church by the church but not by the parish.²⁴ The church considered calling a council to resolve the difficulty but the parish, seeing their probable defeat, acquiesced in the choice on May 8, 1711.²⁵ Subsequently "many of the inhabitants living without the Town bridge" obtained from the General Court the setting up of a separate parish. On the strength of this, the people there proceeded to build a meeting house, and finally asked, as they should have done before, dismissal from the First Church. The petition was reluctantly granted for "Peace sake" on December 25, 1718.²⁶

Rev. Samuel Fisk and the First Centennial

The death of both ministers of the First Church, Nicholas Noyes and George Curwen, in the same year, 1717, the immediate cause of the withdrawal of members to form the East Church, also opened the way to the calling of Samuel Fisk, grandson of John Fisk who had preached briefly in Salem, 1637-1640. Relieved of its withdrawn dissenters, the Church seemed on its way to a peaceful existence under the new minister. Mr. Fisk had a historical bent and in November 1728 informed a church meeting that he proposed to preach a centennial sermon the following August. No one objecting, he did so, thus observing, for the first time in American history, the hundredth anniversary of a historical event, Plymouth having neglected its opportunity in 1720. The sermon on August 6, 1729 was said to have been excellent, though it was not printed, and no one had the foresight to preserve a copy. Of the event, the *New-England Weekly Journal* recorded: "She was the 1ST CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH that was completely form'd and Organiz'd in the whole AMERICAN CONTINENT. . . . The CENTURY LECTURE Began with Singing Psal. CXXII. The Rev. Mr. *Barnard* of *Marblehead* then Prayed. We then Sang Psal. CVII. 1-8. The Rev. Mr. *Fisk* then Preach'd a very agreeable Sermon, from Psal. LXXVIII. 1-7. which is earnestly desir'd and hop'd to be Printed. We then Sang Psal. XLIV. 1, 2, 6, 7. The Rev. Mr. *Prescot* then

²³Below, pp. 213-216, 226-228. For an account of its first minister see Sibley, *Harvard Graduates*, V, 485-490.

²⁴Below, p. 212.

²⁵Below, p. 214.

²⁶Below, pp. 262-266. Robert Stanton was the first minister of the East Church. The First Church had just occupied for the first time on July 13, 1718, "a vast and beautiful yet grave house," the third on the same spot.

Prayed. We then sang Psal. C. 1st Meter, and the Rev. Mr. *Fisk* Pronounc'd the Blessing. There were *Thirteen* Ministers Present, and a considerable confluence of People both from this place and the Towns about."²⁷ In the election sermon which Mr. Fisk preached two years later he reminded the General Court that Massachusetts was "entering on the second Century of chusing our own Magistrates."

Since Mr. Fisk's innovative observance of 1729, more than two centuries have passed. In 1829, Rev. Charles Wentworth Upham delivered a second century address;²⁸ in his attempt to be scrupulously accurate in the date of the observance, he made a mistake in translating old style to new style and preached on August 17 instead of August 16. A hundred years later, in 1929, the committee scheduled the ceremonies for the period May 26 to June 3.²⁹

The Dismissal of Rev. Samuel Fisk

In spite of the harmonious appearance of the Centennial observance of 1729, all was not well in the Salem Church. Mr. Fisk was inclined to be authoritarian and to act independently of formal church meetings which it was said had been dispensed with for ten years altogether. He had but one deacon and failed to discipline some members who had been absent from communion, specifically William Gidney, with whom he had harsh and threatening words, Mr. Bickford and Nathaniel West. Resentments such as these were brought to the surface in February 1725/26 when Mr. Fisk announced that he would discontinue the lectures which he had been giving on his own account for several years. The situation was rather involved. When Mr. Fisk became minister in 1718, he discontinued the formal lectures as they had been given under his predecessors, saying that he would increase his visiting. For some reason he began giving the lectures on an informal basis, only to decide that they were too sparsely attended. In May 1726 the Parish committee asked Fisk to set up the lectures again. He replied that he did not know what the parish had to do with the lecture. Yet in March 1728, the minister preached a sermon in which he said that a vote of the church to set up a lecture was a vow to God and that not to have performed a vote to that effect taken in December 1718 was "Sac-rilege and Perjury." This rebuke aroused much resentment in some of his congregation, among whom were Judge Benjamin Lynde of the Superior Court of the Province and his son. In their discussions of the minister's

²⁷*New-England Weekly Journal*, August 18, 1729. See Albert Matthews' excellent account of this centennial and others in *Colonial Society of Massachusetts, Publications*, XXVI, 402-426.

²⁸*Principles of Congregationalism. The Second Century Lecture of the First Church*. Salem 1829.

²⁹*Three Hundredth Anniversary of the First Church in Salem, Massachusetts*. Cambridge, 1930.

remarks, the "aggrieved brethren," as they were called, could only recollect that it was cold on the night of the December meeting, and late, and that it was agreed that the matter of the lectures should be brought up at a subsequent meeting on December 25. Inspection of the record showed that this was essentially correct; the record referring matters to the later meeting read "Also what may properly be done towards the carrying on of a lecture every other week in this Place."³⁰ When subsequently the record of the December 25th meeting was demanded, Mr. Fisk produced an entry which read as follows: "Voted that the Brethren of the Church will privately speedily consider of Some proper Method to Revive a Lecture in this place, and when they are prepared a Number of them shall repair to the Pastor and pray him to Call a Church Meeting farther to prosecute the vote passed in the last church Meeting, concerning the Lecture."³¹ This puzzling vote astonished the aggrieved brethren and when in due time it too was examined, witnesses stated that the item was written "in different ink, and a great Pen, and interlined," and "in a very different ink from the other votes, and seemed to be by another Pen, and crowded between two other votes." Inspection today of the record gives one the definite impression that the item of December 25 was written in later. Because of lack of space for the entry, it appears somewhat crowded, but no more so than other entries which also had been apparently written in after the other entries. If Mr. Fisk followed the practice of other scribes, it is quite possible that he wrote the various votes of church meetings on slips of paper and copied them later in making up the formal record. He himself implied that this was what he had done. It was this interpolation — called forgery — of a vote, which the aggrieved brethren could not recall, to which they objected, especially since it was on the basis of this "vote" that they had been denounced. To settle the matter, they insisted that a church meeting be called. Fisk refused to meet the brethren or to call a church meeting, or to attend a council of churches in a series of interchanges marked by a good deal of hair-splitting, and on the part of the minister, wounded dignity. Finally the aggrieved brethren, through the intervention of Boston ministers, obtained a meeting of a council of nineteen churches at Salem in 1735 which Fisk did not attend, refusing to acknowledge its authority when one of the parties, himself, had not requested its intervention. The result was a conclusion that there was a strong presumption of the interpolation of a vote never taken, that Fisk's charge of "Perjury and Sacrilege" was therefore "a very aggravated offense," and finally that Fisk had been guilty of neglect of discipline and unworthy treatment of the church in not calling a church meeting when requested, especially in the case of Bickford. The "aggrieved brethren" thereupon called their own church meeting and dismissed Fisk.³⁰ The threat of excommunication de-

³⁰The whole episode is recorded in several pamphlets, see Appendix C. The best secondary account is by Clifford K. Shipton in Sibley's *Harvard Graduates*, IV.

creased the number of Fisk's adherents, the minister was physically kept from entering the meeting house in an unseemly brawl between contending parties and, when a new meeting house was erected for him not far from the old one, the General Court intervened to order the building removed some distance away.³¹ The dismissed minister and his excommunicated supporters organized a new church which they called the First Church in Salem, and installed Fisk as minister on April 23, 1736.³² On the basis of this claim, Mr. Fisk kept the volume of church records, as has been stated elsewhere in this volume.

One result of the dismissal of Mr. Fisk — the confusion over the title of First Church in Salem — was resolved in 1755, when the members of the First Church, reinforced by those who had returned because of their opposition to Dudley Leavitt, now claiming a majority of the membership that had existed before 1735, voted to "take on them in all public transactions the title of the First Church of Salem." In 1762, the Leavitt church voted to surrender its claim to the title of First Church in exchange for a portion of the church plate and lands, and henceforth to be known as "The Third Church of Salem." Later Salem's South Church, which separated from the "Third Church" in 1775, challenged this title. Meanwhile the "Third Church" became known as the "Tabernacle Church."³³

The Record Book

The original book of records of the First Church in Salem has been lost for many years — at least before 1755 when Rev. Thomas Barnard noted that the volume was missing, and probably much earlier. This lost book was sequestered in 1660 by the vote of the Church. Under the date of September 10 of that year, the newly-installed pastor, Rev. John Higginson, recorded: "After a sufficient time spent by the forenamed brethren [Major Hawthorn, Mr. Batter, Mr. Price, two deacons, and the pastor] in reviewing the Church booke, they gave this account unto the Church, that they conceived the booke itselpe and paper of it being old not well-bound and in some places having been wett and torne, and not legible and not like to continue long to be of use for Posterity therefore they thought

³¹*Journals of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, 1715-* . Reprint edition, Boston, 1919- . XIII, 170-173 (Dec. 19, 1735); 202-203 (Jan. 1, 1735/6).

³²In the dispute over the Great Awakening, Mr. Fisk's church was captured by the "New-Lights" who on July 30, 1749 dismissed him as minister. His supporters went back to the old church and their excommunication was removed. The remainder installed Dudley Leavitt.

³³Harold F. Worthley, *An Inventory of the Records of the Particular (Congregational) Churches of Massachusetts Gathered 1620-1805*. (Harvard Theological Studies, XXV). Cambridge, 1970. The South Church and the Tabernacle Church united in 1925.

that it best that it were kept in safety by the Elders by that means it may be of good use so long as it will last. Only some few passages in it which doe reflect upon particular persons or upon the wholl Church without any Church vote and without due proof, they did mark in the book as thinking these should be struck out."³⁴ A month's time was given wherein the passages mentioned might be seen by church members. The book was referred to on November 6, 1662 in the following words: "Concerning the Baptizing of Elder children such as Pasca Footes in other Church Book Nov. 28. 1652."³⁵ Again, in 1675, Rev. John Higginson referred to the old record when he told the General Court that Rev. Edward Norris was accused of having had Presbyterian ideas in the last days of his ministry."³⁶ But nothing more is now known of this book.

At that time, 1660, a new book was provided. Into it were copied such earlier records as had been directed by the church vote. They begin with the Church covenant of 1629, but before it was placed the preamble which prefaced the renewal of the covenant in 1636 when Rev. Hugh Peter became minister. Then followed a catalog of the members admitted until near the end of 1636, then a list of admitted members to 1659, and also a list of children baptized from 1636 to 1659. The contemporary record of church meetings, church members and baptisms therefore begins in 1660. Of earlier church affairs including some of the type blotted out by vote of the church in 1660, a glimpse may be had from the entries in the note-book of Rev. John Fisk, assistant, 1637-1640.³⁷ It seems extraordinary that in this substitution of a new for the old book, there is no mention of ministers previous to John Higginson, save only Edward Norris.³⁸ Considering that two of them were Roger Williams and Hugh Peter, this seems all the more remarkable.

After 1660, the records continue according to what seems to be a new plan, until 1735 when Rev. Samuel Fisk was dismissed. He kept the book in his own possession and, until and including 1743, he entered the various Feast and Thanksgiving days kept in Salem. His record of baptisms ends with 1743 and therefore includes the baptisms performed by Rev. Mr. Fisk as pastor of the church organized by his supporters who withdrew from the old church.³⁹

³⁴Below, pp. 87-88.

³⁵Below, p. 112.

³⁶See above, note 19.

³⁷It covers Salem, 1637-1640, Wenham, 1644-1655, and Chelmsford, 1655-1675. It is owned by the Essex Institute, Salem, in whose *Collections*, I (1859), pp. 37-44, extracts have been printed. See also Daniel A. White, *New England Congregationalism*. Salem, 1861. Pp. 25-36.

³⁸Below, p. 85.

³⁹Below, pp. 335-337.

The Return of the Record Book to the First Church

When Samuel Fisk died in 1770, the record book passed into the possession of his son, John Fiske,⁴⁰ the Revolutionary general, with the father's admonition not to give up the book while he lived. When the General died in 1797, the volume was in the possession of Rev. William Bentley, pastor of the East Church, whose interest in old books and manuscripts was well known in Salem. It was said by some that General Fiske had expressed the wish that after his death the book be returned to the First Church. Dr. Bentley made no move to comply, explaining in his diary⁴¹ on October 12, 1806, "As the Old Church Book has been required, tho' a deposit from Gen. Fiske, a vindication of the detention is to be formed from the history. It is itself a computation from an older book destroyed by vote. It is the Book against which the charge was brought of false entry. It was lent by the Pastor to the church to be copied at discretion. That copy has been transferred to another church⁴² by the Son⁴³ of the transcriber.⁴⁴ This book was held during the controversy which was the first Church & for entries in a Church⁴⁵ different from that which claims to be the first church, and as many a division took place, as many old families remained in the second church⁴⁶ as in any portion of what was the first church."

Both Rev. John Prince and a committee from the First Church applied to Bentley without success. Finally in May 1811, Dr. Bentley returned the volume to Ebenezer Putnam, General Fiske's son-in-law, who gave it into the custody of the First Church where it has since remained. Dr. Bentley's part in the transaction is best told in his own words. "Elder Beckford & John Pickering from the first Church waited upon me for the first Church Book, which Mr. Fiske gave in charge never to return, & to save from destruction I received from his Son General Fiske in trust. Mr. Putnam appeared in behalf of the heirs & declared that at his death the Gen[eral] wished the Book to be given to the Church. The cause of the detention was from an action of fraud in the Book. My Elder Ward knew the whole matter as he received the Book to bring it to Pastor Fiske after it had been copied for the use of the old Church & as heard the Gen.'s

⁴⁰I have followed the Church Records in the spelling of Samuel Fisk. His son spelled the name with an "e".

⁴¹*The Diary of William Bentley, D.D., Pastor of the East Church, Salem, Massachusetts.* 4 vols. Salem, 1905-1914. III, 253-254.

⁴²The North Church.

⁴³Rev. Thomas Barnard, Jr. of the North Church.

⁴⁴Rev. Thomas Barnard, Sr. of the First Church.

⁴⁵The Fisk Church. Fisk entered, as has been said, records of his new church in the First Church record book.

⁴⁶The Leavitt or "Third" Church.

Charges to me which he never recalled.⁴⁷ As this matter moved just at the time of our public elections to make trouble, without advice I sent the Book to Mr. Putnam thus directed on the paper in which it was wrapped. 'To Ebenezer Putnam Esqr. one of the heirs of General Fiske at his request.' I afterwards told Elder Ward what I had done & he in all circumstances approved it."⁴⁸

Editorial Procedures

In preparing these records for the printer, all names have been transcribed exactly, except that all abbreviations, where the name is known, have been expanded; otherwise they have been kept, allowing the reader to determine for himself whether, for example, "Jon:" is "John" or "Jonathan." All abbreviations of words except the names of months have been expanded. "And" has replaced the ampersand (&). For convenience of reference, dates have been uniformly placed on the left side of the page or column. Where months have been given as numbers, they have been kept; the reader should remember that March is the first month of the year in the calendar of the period. But even though the new year did not begin until March 25, the scribe did not always wait until that date to indicate another year.

The works given abbreviated titles in the notes may readily be identified in the Short Title List in the appendix. Further data regarding the clergy who were graduates of Harvard College may be found in the series known as *Sibley's Harvard Graduates* in which all of the biographies except those of the first three volumes were written by Clifford K. Shipton. It has been thought unnecessary to encumber the footnotes with references to these volumes whenever a minister graduate's name appears.

On May 25, 1811, the Church voted: "The Book being very much out of binding, and in an unsafe state," that the pastor be "requested to have it bound in a strong manner, in order to preserve it, and that a copy of this ancient record be made for the Church."⁴⁹ A new book was purchased, bound in Russia leather costing \$10. and the old records copied in. The old book, newly bound in Russia leather at a cost of \$5., interleaved with blank paper, with the new book and other papers was placed in a specially made box costing \$3.25. The transcription of the records cost \$25, the repairs twenty-five cents.

ROBERT E. MOODY

November 7, 1973.

⁴⁷Bentley evidently means that Elder Ward never said anything different.

⁴⁸Bentley, *Diary*, IV, 24-25 (May 23, 1811). Bentley saw, not without reason in the highly charged atmosphere of Salem, political motives in this as in other acts. He himself was heavily involved in politics.

⁴⁹Church Records, First Church in Salem, II, 56. This volume would be III if the lost volume were found.

The Records
of the
First Church in Salem
Massachusetts
1629-1736

The Records of the First Church in Salem

1629-1736

[1] Gather my Saints together unto me that have made a Covenant with me by sacrifice. psa: 50:5

*6 [day] of 6th Month
1629 this Covenant
was publickly Signed
and Declared — as
may appear from page
85 in this book*

Wee whose names are here under written, members of the present Church of Christ in Salem, haveing found by sad experience how dangerous it is to sitt loose to the Covenant wee make with our God: and how apt wee are to wander into by pathes, even to the looseing of our first aimes in entring into Church fellowship: Doe therefore, solemnly in the presence of the Eternall God both for our owne comforts and those which shall or maye be joyned unto us renewe that Church covenant we find this Church bound unto at their first begining. vizt: That we Covenant with the Lord and one with an other, and doe bynd our selves in the presence of God, to walke together in all his waies, according as he is pleased to reveale him selfe unto us in his Blessed word of truth. And doe more explicitly in the name and feare of God, profess and protest to walke as followeth through the power and grace of our Lord Jesus.¹

1. first wee avowe the Lord to be our God, and our selves his people in the truth and simplicitie of our Spirits
2. Wee give our selves to the Lord Jesus Christ, and the word of his grace, fore the teaching, ruleing and sanctifyeing of us in matters of worship, and conversation resolveing to cleave to him alone for life and glorie; and oppose all contrarie wayes, cannons and constitutions of men in his worship.
3. Wee promise to walk with our brethren and sisters in the Congregation with all watchfullness, and

¹*helpe and power of the Lord Jesus* in Fiske Ms.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

tendernis avoyding all jelousies, suspitions, backbyte-ings, conjurings, provoakings, secrete riseings of spirit against them, but in all offences to follow the rule of the Lord Jesus, and to beare and forbear, give and forgive as he hath taught us.

4. In publick or private, we will willingly doe nothing to the ofence of the Church but will be willing to take advise for ourselves and ours as ocasion shall be presented.
5. Wee will not in the Congregation be forward eyther to show our owne gifts or parts in speaking or scrupuling [2] or there discover the fayling of our brethren or sisters butt attend an orderly cale there unto; knowing how much the Lord may be dishonoured, and his Gospell in the profession of it, sleighted by our distempers, and weaknesses in publyck.
6. Wee bynd ourselves to studdy the advancement of the Gospell in all truth and peace, both in regard of those that are within, or without, noe waye sleighting our sister Churches, but usinge their Counsell as need shalbe; nor laying a stumbling block, before any, noe not the Indians, whose good we desire to promote, and soe to converse, as wee may avoyd the verrye appearance of evill,
7. Wee hearby promise to carrye ourselves in all lawfull obedience, to those that are over us in Church or Common weale, knowing how well pleasing it wilbe to the Lord, that they should have encouragement in their places, by our not greiveing theyre spirites through our iregularities.
8. Wee resolve to prove our selves to the Lord in our particular calings, shunning ydlenes as the bane of any state, nor will wee deale hardly, or opressingly with Any, wherein wee are the Lords stewards: alsoe
9. promyseing to our best abilitie to teach our children and servants, the knowledge of God and his will, that they may serve him alsoe and all this, not by any strength of our owne, but by the Lord Christ, whose

bloud we desire may sprinkle this our Covenant made in his name.

This Covenant was renewed by the church on a sollemne day of Humiliation 6 of 1 month 1660. When also considering the hower of Temptation among us by reason of the Quakers doctrine to the leavening of some in the place where we are, *and Endangering of others*,¹ doe see cause to remember the Admonition of our Saviour Christ to his disciples Math 16. Take heed and beware of, the Leaven of the doctrine of the Pharisees and doe judge so farre as we understand it that the Quaker doctrine is as bad or worse than that of the Pharisees. Therefore we doe covenant by the help of Jesus Christ to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers.²

¹Brought in from margin.

²This entire paragraph in the hand of Rev. John Higginson.

[3-4] [Blanks]

A Catalogue of the names of those persons that are joyned in full Comunion.*

Samuell Sharp	<i>dead</i> ²	John Sibly	<i>dead</i>
John Endecott	<i>removed</i>	John Baulch	<i>dead</i>
Phillip Veren	<i>dead</i>	Samuell Moore	<i>dead</i>
Hugh Laskin	<i>dead</i>	John Holgrove	<i>removed</i>
Roger Connant		Ralph Fogge	<i>excommunicat.</i>
Laurance Leach		John Horne	
William Auger	<i>dead</i>	John Woodberye	<i>dead</i>
Francis Johnson		William Traske	
Thomas Eborne	<i>dead</i>	Townsend Bishop	<i>dead</i>
George Williams	<i>dead</i>	Thomas Read	<i>removed</i>
George Norton	<i>dead</i>	Richard Rayment ³	
Henry Hericke		Jeffry Massy	
Peeter Palfrye	<i>removed</i>	Edmond Batter	
Roger Maurye	<i>removed</i>	Elias Stileman	
Thomas Gardener		Edmond Giles	<i>dead</i>

¹Added in later hand.

²The words, *dead*, *removed*, *excommunicated*, etc., were added at various times in different hands.

³*Raymond*. Fiske Ms.

6 The Records of the First Church in Salem

Richard Davenport	<i>removed</i>		Mary Alford	<i>dead</i>
John Blackleech	<i>recomended</i>		Sarah Connant	
Thomas Scrugges	<i>dead</i>		Jane Alderman	<i>dead</i>
William Allen			Agnes Woodbery	
William Kinge	<i>dead</i>		Judith Raymond	
Richard Rootes	<i>dead</i>		Johane Cotta	
John Moore	<i>dead</i>		Dorcas Veren	<i>dead</i>
William Dixy			Sarah Batter	
John Sanders	<i>dead</i>	[6]	Eedith Palfery	<i>dead</i>
Jacob Barney			Eedith Herrick	
Richard Brackenbury			Hanna Moore	<i>dead</i>
John Blacke			Susana Fogge	<i>removed</i>
Joseph Pope			Johane Watson	
Peeter Woolfe			Alice Ager	<i>removed</i>
William Bownd ¹	<i>excommunicat.</i>		Anne Ingersoll	<i>removed</i>
Samuell Archer			Ellen Felton	
Thomas Lothrop			Elizabeth Allen	
<hr style="border-top: 3px double #000;"/>			Martha Woolfe	
Elizabeth Endecott			Ellyn Backenbury	
Alice Hutcheson			Ann Dixy	
Elizabeth Leech			Anne Bound	<i>excommunicat.</i>
Alice Sharpe			Ann Horne	<i>dead</i>
Johane Johnson	<i>dead</i>		Margery Balch	<i>dead</i>
Elizabeth Holgrove	<i>dead</i>		Presea Kendall	<i>dead</i>
Margerett Bright			Anne Skarlett	<i>dead</i>
Elizabeth Davenport	<i>removed</i>		Gartrud Ellerd	

1636

8:11mo.	Hugh Peeters	<i>dead</i>	
	² Edmond Marshall	<i>removed</i>	
11mo.	Anne Moore widdow		
	John Humphy	<i>dead</i>	
11mo.	Lyddea Bankes	<i>removed</i>	
	Mary Jeggles		
	Frances Skerry		
	Abigaile Lord		
	Ann Garford	<i>removed</i>	
	John Alderman	<i>dead</i>	
	Henry Bartholomew		

1637

1mo.	Thomas Browning		
2mo.	Susanna Goodwyne		
	Agnes Brayne: wid.	<i>dead</i>	
3mo.	Arabella Norman		
	Mary Harte	<i>dead</i>	
4mo.	Thomas Golthwaite		
12:4	William Hathorne		
	his wife		
	Moses Maverick		
	his wife	<i>dead</i>	

¹Or *Bound*. Cf. Savage I, 217 and Perley I, 373.

²*I.e.* November 8, 1636 (Old Style).

3:5	Joane Amyes	<i>dead</i>
	John Browne	
	<i>Ales Browne</i> ¹	
	Eleazer Williams	
6:6	William Goose	<i>dead</i>
4:7	Mary Norton	
1:8	Bethiah Raye	
12:9	Joshua Holgrove	<i>dead</i>
	Isabell Robbinson	<i>dead</i>
19	John Gedney	
28:10	Anne Robbinson Wid:	<i>dead</i>
	Elizabeth Turner	<i>dead</i>
31:10	Millisent Marshall	
	Mary Gedney	
	Deborah Holme	<i>removed</i>
	James Moulton	<i>removed</i>
25:12	Thomas Venner	<i>dead</i>
	Henry Burdsall	<i>dead</i>
	<i>Joseph</i> ¹ Bacheldor	<i>dead</i>
	Henry Skerry	
	James Hindes	<i>dead</i>
	Thomas Spooner	
	John Symonds	
	Mary Moulton	
	Sara Standish	
	Arabella Norman	
	Amy Spooner	
1638		
	Anna Barney	
17:3	Mary Symonds	
	Ruth Amyes	<i>dead</i>
	John Jackson	<i>dead</i>
	Margeret Jackson	<i>dead</i>
[7]	Elizabeth Blackleech	<i>removed</i>
16:7	William Robinson	
30	Michael Shafin	<i>excommunicat.</i>
	Thomas Avery	<i>removed</i>
	Anne Pickworth	
4:9	John Hartt	<i>dead</i>
	Triphene Marritt	<i>removed</i>
	Emanuell Downing	<i>dead removed</i>
	Lucy Downing	<i>removed</i>

¹Added in later hand.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

1639		
24:1	Obadiah Holme	<i>excommunicat.</i>
	Katherine Holme	<i>removed</i>
	Laurance Sothwick	<i>excommunicat.</i>
		<i>dead</i>
	& Cassandra his wife	<i>excommunicat.</i>
	Dorithy Kenestone	
	Elizabeth Shafin	
	Garvice Garford	<i>dead</i>
	Margarett Gardner	
	Mary Lemon	
	Thomas Antrum	
	Widdow Greene	
	Mary Porter	
	William Osborne	<i>removed</i>
14:2	Frances Higgeson	<i>removed</i>
5:3	Joseph Kitcherell	<i>dead</i>
	Alce Weekes	<i>dead</i>
	Elizabeth Pickering	
12	Jobe Swinerton	
	John Marsh	
	Sarah Gascoyne	
19	Henry Swan	<i>dead</i>
	Elizabeth Dunton	
2:4	Edwards	<i>removed</i>
23	Elizabeth Swinerton	<i>dead</i>
	James Standish	
23:4	John Bachelder	
	his wife	
18:6	Elias Stileman Junior	
	William Lord	
25	Lucy Page	
	William ¹ Golt	<i>dead</i>
	John Fairefeild	<i>dead</i>
	Richard Bishop	
22:7	John Robbinson	<i>dead</i>
	Markes Fermayes	<i>removed</i>
	Thomas Moore	<i>dismist</i>
13:8	Martha his wife	<i>dismist</i>
	Mary Bacheldor	
1:10	Scillea Harnett	<i>removed</i>
	Katherne Dixy	

¹Struck over *Thomas*.

	Mary Skarlett	
	Ann Williams	
	Thomas Watson	
	Prescis Walker	<i>removed</i>
	Mary Harbert	<i>removed</i>
15:10	Thomas Trusler	<i>dead</i>
	Thomas Gardener Junior	
29:10	Mr. Edward Norrice ¹	<i>dead</i>
	Lydea Holgrove	<i>removed</i>
	Kathern Barnardistone	
	Miles Ward	<i>dead</i>
	Annaias Concklyne	<i>dead</i>
	Edmond Tompson	<i>dismist</i>
	William Woodbery	
	Widdow Pease	<i>dead</i>
	William Steevens	<i>removed</i>
	Ellinor Trusler	<i>dead</i>
	Edward Beachum	
12:11	Deliverance Peeter	<i>excommunicat.</i>
23	Thomas Vennor	<i>removed dead</i>
[8]		
1640		
5:2	Samuell Corning	
	his wife	
	Jane wife of Phillip Veren	<i>removed</i>
	Jonathan Porter	<i>dead</i>
	Lady [<i>Deborah</i>] Moody	<i>excommunicat. dead</i>
	Thomas Ruck	<i>recommended to Boston²</i>
	his wife	
10:3	Charles Glover	<i>removed</i>
	Rose Howard	
	William Rennolls	
	Robert Moulton Junior	
	Esdras Read	
	Elizabeth Sanders <i>i.e. Kitchen</i> ³	<i>excommunicat.</i>
	Sarah Bowdish	<i>excommunicat.</i>
1:7	Widdow Eastwick	<i>removed</i>
	Elizabeth Corwin	
	Alice Barnett	

¹Rev. Edward Norris was ordained Teacher of the Salem Church on March 18, 1640 and, after the departure of Mr. Peters, continued as sole minister until his death in 1659.

²His name does not appear in the records of the First Church in Boston.

³Later hand; John Kitchen married c. 1643 Elizabeth (Grafton) Saunders, widow of John Saunders. Cf. Perley II, 135.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

	Elizabeth Woodbery	
	Elizabeth Scudder	<i>dead</i>
	Richard Bartholomew	<i>dead</i>
	Jane wife of Joshua Verin	<i>removed</i>
6	John Marstone	
	the Wife of Richard Graves	<i>recommended</i>
	Jane Reeves	<i>dead</i>
7	the wife of John Cooke	<i>removed</i>
	Abigaile Good	
	Sarah Hopcott	<i>removed</i>
	Thomas Marstone	<i>recommended</i>
7	Frances Lawes	
	his wife	<i>dead</i>
	Mary Beachum	
	Abygaile Fermayes	<i>recommended</i>
	George Byam	
9	William Geere	
	Goodman Bulfinch	<i>dismist</i>
1640		
	Margerett Warde	<i>dead</i>
29:10	Goodman Barber	<i>dead</i>
	Alice Read	
	Goodwife Estrick	
3:11	George Gardener	
	Rebecka Bacon	<i>dead</i>
	Phillip Veren Junior	<i>dead</i>
31	Ruth Munsall	<i>letter and testimonial</i>
	Goodwife Harwood	
7:12:	Alice Warde	
	Abell Kelly	<i>removed</i>
	Susan Concklyne	<i>dismist</i>
	Phillemon Dickerson	<i>dismist</i>
	Joseph Boyer	
	Sarah Read	
14	William Blancherd	<i>dead</i>
21	Robert Lemon	
1641		
21:1	Phineas Fiske, <i>Wenham</i> ¹	<i>removed</i>
	Elizabeth Wright	<i>removed</i>
	Frzwith Osborne	<i>removed</i>
	Priscilla Putnam	
	Mary Hunt	
	Richard Pettingall	<i>recomended</i>
	John Cooke	<i>removed</i>

¹Later hand.

		Robert Gutch	<i>removed</i>
		Thomas Devinish	<i>dead</i>
		Mary Devinish	<i>recommended</i>
4:2		Ann Bulfinge	<i>dismist</i>
23:3		Nathanyell Norcross	<i>dismist</i>
		Georte Wathen	<i>dead</i>
		Katheren Pacy	<i>dead removed</i>
		Joyce Waters	
		Elizabeth Glover	<i>removed</i>
1642			
[9]	13:4	Jane Perry	<i>dead</i>
		Deborah Fenn	<i>dead</i>
		the wife of Mr. Farefeild	<i>dead</i>
2:5		Widdow Shattock	
		William Fiske	<i>dead</i>
		James Fiske	<i>removed</i>
		Katherne Rabbe	
17:8		Elizabeth Maury	<i>removed</i>
		Arther Clearke	
16:11		Richard Prince	
		Mr. Kenniston	<i>dead</i>
27:12		William Brown, <i>Gloucester</i> ¹	<i>dismist</i>
		Richard Moore	
		Robert Button	<i>dead</i>
1642			
6:1		Walter Price	
		Elizabeth his wife	
		Benjamin Fermaies	<i>recommended</i>
		Margaret Scarlett	<i>excommunicat.</i>
3:2		Katherne Tomkins	
		Thomas Putnam	
		John Barber	<i>dead</i>
15:3		Robert Allen	<i>recomended</i>
		Samuell Shattock	<i>excommunicat.</i>
		Mary Roapes	
19:12		Robert Elwell	<i>dismist</i>
26		Joane White	<i>dismist</i>
		Thomas Edwards	<i>removed</i>
		Henry Harwood	
		John Kitchin	
		his wife	<i>dead</i>

¹Abbreviation *glou.* William Brown was a selectman in Gloucester in 1644. Cf. Savage I, 277.

1643		
18:4	Grace Corwithie	
	Mary Goyte	<i>recomended</i>
	Mr. Bacon	<i>dead</i>
	Jane Bennett	
18:4	Elizabeth Putnam	
30:5	Ann Blancherd	
17:7	the wife to Thomas Dixy	
1:8	Edward Harnet	<i>excommunicat.</i>
	John Hathorne	<i>dismist</i>
	Robert Pease	<i>dead</i>
1644		
5:3	Richard Dodge	<i>recommended</i>
	Mary Porter	
	John Bourne	<i>removed</i>
	Sarah Hathorne	
1645		
6:2	Katherne Vaile	<i>dead</i>
	Edward Bishop	
20:2	Elizabeth Dodg	
4:3	Bridgett Skerry	
1646		
3:3	Robert Hebbert	
	& Joane his wife	
	Edward Gaskoyne	
	Edward Harnett Junior	<i>removed</i>
	Margerett Grover	<i>dead</i>
1647		
21:1	Mr. Alderton	<i>dead</i>
	Mary Neale	
	Widdow Neave	<i>dead</i>
	Mary Veren	
	Ralph Ellenwood	
4:2	John Putnam	
	Richard Hucheson	
	John Scudder	<i>removed</i>
	his wife	
	Ludy Downing the younger	
2:3	Jane Mason	
16:3	Bridgett Loofe	
6:4	Sarah Charles	
31:3	Abigaile Montague	<i>removed</i>
[10] 14:9	Ralph Smith	<i>dismist</i>

1648	William Haines ¹	<i>dead</i>
30:2	Mary Dickerson	<i>dismist</i>
	Susana Marsh	
	Sarah Waller	
	Eunice Porter	<i>removed</i>
	Susana Stackhouse	
23:5	Joseph Hardy	
	Humphry Woodbery	
	Kathern Ebborne	
13:6	Sara Leech	
	Goodwife Ellenwood	<i>dead</i>
	Goodwife Towne	<i>removed</i>
	Nathanyell Felton	
	John Weston	
	Josiah Rootes	
?-9	Elizabeth Putnam	
	Mary Prince	
	Hillyard Veren	
	John Pickett	
	Alexander Feild	<i>recomended</i>
	his wife	<i>dead</i>
	Mr. Emorye	
	Sarah Leech	
	Mary Wheeler	
26:9	Mr. William Browne	
	& Sarah his wife	
	Ellen Massy	
	Nathanyell Putnam	
	William Jegles	<i>dead</i>
	Bridgett Giles	
1649		
4:1	Gartrud Pope	
	Hanna Gardener	<i>dead</i>
	Elizabeth Concklin	<i>removed</i>
	Rachell Scudder	<i>dead</i>
4:1	Sarah Haynes	
	Mary Read	
29:2	John Porter	
	David Corwithen	
1650		
	Nicholas Patch	

¹From the records it is not clear whether he was admitted in 1647 or 1648 but Felt (I, 75) suggests latter date.

14:2	Mary Chichester Sarah Curtis Hugh Woodbery Mary Smith Goodwife Hardy William Payne Thomas Rix	<i>dead</i> <i>dead</i>
16-4	Robert Morgan Elizabeth Payne Elizabeth Graye Ellen Maskall Mrs. Felmingame Rebeca Cooper	<i>dead</i> <i>removed</i> <i>removed</i>
1:7	Mary Lovett Christian Moore Elizabeth Bridgman Ann Cole Mary Sothwick	<i>dead</i>
23:11 1651	William Vinson et uxor	<i>removed</i>
27:2	Richard Waye James Chichester Hannah Stileman	<i>dismist</i> <i>removed</i>
20:5	Katherne Rootes Susanna Hollinwood	
8:12 1652	Grace Venus	<i>dead</i>
14:9 1653	Pasca Foot	
6:1	Ellen Stone Henry Renolds	
27:9 1654	Ann Woodbery	
13:6 24:6	John Stone Judith Ingersoll Bray Wilkins his wife	
1655	Ann Kennig	
18:1	Frances Woodbery Hana Ruck	<i>dead</i>
15:5 1656	Dorithy Novice	<i>dead</i>
30:2	Frances Horne	

1657	Susana Archer	
31:3	Georg Norton, 2d: <i>receiving:</i> ¹	<i>dead</i>
28:12	Elizabeth Dodge	
	Mary Corwithy	
	Alis Potter	
1659		
	the wife of Thomas Cromwell	
20:1	the wife of William Marstons	
	Hugh Stacy et uxor	<i>removed</i>

¹The Nortons had removed from Salem in 1642 but returned before 1643.

The Revd. Mr. John Higginson (son of The Revd. Mr. Francis Higginson who was the first Colleague Pastor with The Revd. Mr. Samuel Skelton (both Founders of the Church in Salem) did on his settlement in this Church, begin a Record of Admissions of Members — att. Page 75 in this Book where, and in the following pages The Reader must look till the settlement of this Church, in Samuel Fisk Pastor on Oct. 8, 1718 who continued the Record of Baptisms beginning page 17 and the Record of Church Settlements & Meetings, Acts, etc. and beginning distinctly page 140 — and the Record of Such, as entered into or renewed their Covenant beginning page 240, and the Record of Such as came to the Holy Communion of the Lord's Supper, beginning page 280.

SAMUEL FISK, *Pastor*

*Salem First Parish
October 9, 1718.*

[12-16 blank]

A Catalogue of the names of the Children
of the Church that are Baptized

[17]

- 1636
25:10 Recompense, son of John Horne
Jonathan, son }
Jehodan, daughter } of Peeter Palfrey
Zachariah, son of Henry Herick
Hannah daughter of Jon¹ Woodbery
Jonathan, son of George Williams
James son of William Bound
Abigaile, daughter of William Dixy
Lydea, daughter of Jon Black
Jerusha, daughter of John Moore
Samuel, son of Samuel Moore
John, son of William Dody
Difficulty, daughter of Jon Talby
Mahitabell, daughter of William
Kinge
Seeth, daughter of Thomas Gardener
Abigaile, daughter of Richard
Hucheson
1:11 Elias, son of Samll Sharp
Mary, daughter of William Trask
24:11 Theophilus, son of Jon Humphrey
Exersise, daughter of Jonathan
Blackleech
Naomy, daughter of Edmund Mar-
shall
Joseph, son of Joseph Grafton
12:12 Deborah, daughter of Charles Gott
Benjamin, son of William Ager
17:12 Benjamin, son of Thomas Smith
1637
21:1 Nathaniel, son of William Alford
2:2 Jonathan, son of Roger Maury
Mehitabell, daughter of Edm: Giles²
Deborah, daughter of William Allen
30 Zachariah, son of John Marsh
19:4 Leah, daughter of Townsend Bishopp
11:5 Barsheba, daughter of Richard Ray-
ment
6:6 Eleazer, son of William Hathorne
20:6 Nathaniel, son of Richard Waterman
Samuel, son of Thomas Golthwaite
27:6 Experience, daughter of Richard
Davenport
Nadabiah, son of Thomas Olnly
2:8 John, son of George Norton
12:9 Abigaile, daughter of John Wood-
berye
3:10 Anna, daughter of William Robbin-
son
24:10 Exersise, son of Roger Connant
7:11 Mary, daughter of Thomas Brown-
ing
James, son of James Moulton
28:11 ————— son of Rober Cotta
11:12 ————— son of Henry Herrick
1638
4:1 John, son of John Norman
Eliza, daughter of Henry Skerry
1:2 Ezekiell, son of Ralph Fogge
Naomy, daughter of Francis Johnson
15:2 Ann, daughter of Edmond Marshall
3:4 Lyddea, daughter of John Black
10 Abigaile, daughter of John Moore
Susana, daughter of Wiliam Trask
17 Appia, daughter of Roger Maury
Anna, daughter of William Dixy
8:5 2 children of Richard Waterman
and 1 of Thomas Anthropp
12:6 Andrew, son of William Bound
Samuel, son of George Williams
19 Abra[ham], son of [Rice] Edwards³
of Watertowne
26 Thomas, son of John Humphry
Bethiah, daughter of William Clark

¹John, Jonathan and Jon: appear throughout this list. Jon: appears to have been used as an abbreviation for John or Jonathan. It has been transcribed here as Jon.

²Edm: in record but probably for Edward. Cf. Perley I, 281 and Savage II, 253.

³Cf. Perley II, 140.

- 2:7 John, son of Brother Fisk
 16 John, son of Brother Brown
 Remember, daughter of Peter Palfrey
 14:8 Ruth and Anna and John, 3 children of [John] Pickworth¹
 [18]
 [?] :9 Samuel,² son of John Symonds
 [?] 4:9 John,² son of William King
 2:10 Sarah, daughter of Christopher Youngs
 9 Remember, of Samuel Moore
 20:11 Hanna, daughter of Richard Hucherson
 31:11 John, son of Brother Bachelder
 Remember, daughter of Edmo:³ Giles
 3:12 Joshua, son of Jon Blackleech
 10 Hanna, daughter of John Tomkins
 17 Samuel, son of William Alford
 1639
 3-1 Joshua, son of Richard Rayment
 24 Nathaniel, son of Thomas Smith
 Bethshua, daughter of Robert Cotta
 1:2 Grace and Mary, daughters of Robert Lemon
 7 John, son of Samuel Archard
 14 Edward, son of Samuel Sharp
 28 John, son of Joseph Grafton
 29:3 John, son of Jon Marsh
 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Tomkins
 Nathaniel, son of George Norton
 [?] ⁴:4 Charles, son of Charles Gott
 6 Jon, son of Sister Edwards
 [?] :0⁴ Samuel, son of Mr. Walton
 7:6 Samuel and Preferred, children of Edward Gaskoyne
 daughter of Moses Maverick
 28 2 children of Robt Elwell
 John, son of Brother Haines
 Nathaniel, son of William Hathorn
 1:7 Rebeca and Thomas, children of our Sister Lucy Page
 21:8 Thomas and Martha, children of Thomas Moore
 10:9 Jonathan, son of Brother Ager
 6:10 Abraham and Sarah, children of Percis Walker
 Provided, daughter of Larance Sothwick
 15 John, son of Jacob Barney
 Mary, daughter of Peeter Palferye
 11 Nathaniel, son of William Woodbery
 19 John, son of William Dixy
 26 John, son of Benjamin Felton
 Samll, son of William Robinson
 2:11 Isaack and Mary, children of Mr. Steevens
 16:11 Mary, daughter of Roger Maury
 Bathiah, daughter of William Allen
 Henry, son of Henry Herrick
 23 John, son of Robert Elwell
 Lyddia, daughter of John Norman
 1640
 1:1 John, son of Emanuell Downing
 8 Eliza, daughter of Mr. Peeters
 15 David, son of Ralph Fogg
 Elias, son of Elias Stileman Junior
 22 Martha, daughter of Robert Lemon
 29 Ruth, daughter of Frances Johnson
 Mary, daughter of Jon Harbert
 5:2 Joseph, son of John Humphry
 27 Mehitabell, daughter of Thomas Golthwaite
 3:3 Rember, daughter of Samuel Cornish
 Martha, daughter of Obadiah Holme
 Ruth, daughter of Edmund Marshall
 10 Joseph, son of George Williams
 13 Eliza, daughter of Charles Glover
 31 2 children of Esdras Read
 1 of our Sister Goodell

¹Cf. Perley I, 402.

²Manuscript torn. Both Samuel Symonds and John King were baptized in the 9th month but in the first entry the day is lost and in the second, one digit may be lost.

³Cf. p. 16.

⁴Torn.

- 7:4 James, son of John Browne
Obadiah, son of Thomas Antrum
Peeter, son of William Bownd
- 14 Bartholomew, son of Jon Gedney
- 29 Mary, daughter of Samll Sharp
- 26:5 Sarah, daughter, Brother Fisk
- 2:6 Benjamin, son of Thomas Moore
- 8:7 Mary, daughter, Henry Skerry
- 19 William, son of William Trask
- [19]
- 19:7 Peeter, son of John Woodbery
Mary, daughter of Robert Cotta
William, son of Brother Dodg
Sarah, daughter of Sister Cooke
Mary, daughter, of John Bachelдор
- 10:8 Danyell, son of Edward Gaskoyne
- 1:9 John, son of John Sanders
Eliza, daughter of Joshua Holgrove
- 27 Eleazer, son of Edmo: Giles
daughter of John Black
child of Richard Waters
the children of John Barbor
- 3:11 Lemuell, son of Richard Raymond
- 17 Jonathan, son of Mr. Corwin
- 7:12 Dorcas, daughter of Emall [*Emanuel*] Downing
- 14 Mary, daughter of Moses Maverick
- 21 Hester, daughter of Joseph Boyce
Hanna, daughter of John Tomkins
- 1641
- 7:1 Ruth, daughter of William Steevens
- 14 3 children of Richard Graves
Samuel, son of Samuel Cornish
Samuel, son of William Geere
Ruth, daughter of Sister Younges
- 28:1 George, son of Georg Norton
- 25:2 a child of Miles Ward
Lydia, daughter of Mr. Humphry
- 5:3 Ruth, daughter of John Marsh
- 16 Thomas, son of Thomas Venor
Elizabeth, daughter of John Cooke
- 27:4 John, son of Brother Ferefeild
4:5 daughter of Sister Fen
- 18:5 Benjamin, son of Jon Moore
- Sara and Benjamin, children of Jane Perrye
- Mary, daughter of Sister Devenish
- 2:6 John, son of William Hathorn
James, son of Brother Haines
David, son of Jane Perry
- 12:7 Isaack, son of Mr. Bacon
Jon, son of Jon Marstone
- 19:7 Experience, daughter of Mr. Sharpe
John, son of Richard Davenport
- 3:8 John, son of Robert Gutch
Eliza, daughter of Henry Bartholomew
- 17 Eliza, daughter of William Dixy
- 24 Jon, son of Sister Woodbery the younger
- 31 Samuel, son of Edward Beachum
Deliverance, daughter of William Kinge
- 14:9 Benjamin, son, Sister Codnam
Bethiah, daughter of Phillip Veren Junior
- 12:10 Eliza, daughter of John Blackleech
- 26 John, son of Sister Ward
- 2:11 Josiah, son of Mr. Walton
- 9 Jacob, son of Robert Goodell
- 20:12 John, son of Richard Prince
- 27 Isaack, son of Robert Elwell
Bethiah, daughter of Thomas Weeks
- 1642
- 6:1 Samuell and Thomas, sons of Richard Moore
Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Boyce
- 13 Jacob and Samuell, sons of Brother Browne
Theophilus, son of Sister Downing
Elizabeth, daughter, Walter Price
- 20 Samuel, son of Obadiah Holme
Mary, daughter of Philemon Dickerson
- 27 Elizabeth, daughter, Roger Maury
Samuel, son of Robert Button
John, son of Robert Lemon
- 10:2 Samuel, son, Frances Perry
- 17 Steephens, son of Thomas Ruck
Love, daughter of Joshua Holgrove

The Records of the First Church in Salem

19

- 24:2 Elizabeth, daughter of Frances John-
son
Mary, daughter of Charles Glover
- 1:3 Nathaniel, son of Joseph Grafton
John, son of Brother Browne
Peeter, son of Robert Cotta
Ann, daughter Sister Norman
- [20]
1642
- 15:3 Eleazer, son of Jon Gedney
- 22 Jon, son of John Neale
John and Sarah, children of Robert
Allen
Joseph, son of Sister Edwards
Abigaile, daughter of Robert Moul-
ton
- 29 Sarah, daughter of Edmund Marshall
Hanna, daughter of Sister Pacy
- 5:4 Jonathan, son of Georg Roapes
- 26 Bethiah, daughter of Mr. Alford
- 3:5 Onesipherus, son of William Allen
Nathaniel, son of Thomas Moore
Bethia, daughter of Samuel Archard
- 17 James, son of Jon Browne
Isaack, son of Richd Hide
- 24 Hanna, daughter of Brother Dodge
- 31 Jon, son of Townsend Bishop
- 18:7 Jon, son of William Trask
Sarah, daughter of John Sibly
- 9:8 John, son of Brother Stacye
- 16 Joseph, son of Richard Graves
- 13:9 Nathaniel, son of Sister Howard
Bethiah, daughter of George Wil-
liams
- 20 Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas
Golthwaite
- 25:10 Samuel, son of James Moulton
- 1:11 Sarah, daughter, John Tomkins
Judith, daughter of Sister Younge
- 12:12 Thomas, son of Mr. Tomson
Joseph, son of Jonathan Pickworth
Nathaniel, son of Sister Bowdish
Hanna, daughter of Henry Barthol-
omew
Hanna, daughter of Richard Ray-
mond
- Abigaile, daughter of John Bachelder
- 26:12 Thomas, son of Henry Swan
Elizabeth, daughter, Richard Waters
- 1643 Elizabeth and Hanna, children of
Jon: Kitchin
Mary, daughter of William Robinson
Susana, daughter of William Clark
- 26:1 Ephram, son of Henry Skerry
- 2:2 Mary, daughter of Thomas Gardner
- 9 Joana, daughter of Sister Browne
Sara, daughter of Sister White
- 16 Dorcas, daughter of Philip Veren
Junior
- 23 Damaris, daughter of Joseph Pope
- 30 Lewis, son of Annanias Concklin
- 14:3 Mary, daughter of William Geere
Benony, son of John Blackleech
Sara daughter of Edward Gaskoyne
- 28:3 Patience, daughter of Robt Gutch
Remember, daughter of Benjamin
Felton
- 4:4 William, son of William Fisk
Josiah, son of Sister White
Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Corn-
ing
- 18 Joshua, son of Brother Edwards
Thomas, Son of Sister Dixy
- 2:5 Moses, Aron and Deliverance, chil-
dren of Jane Bennett
Sarah, daughter of William Dixy
John, son of Richard Hucheson
- 16:5 Mary, daughter of Thomas Antrum
- 30 Joseph and Mary, children of Sister
Goyte
- 27:6 Benjamin, son of Brother Haines
- 10:7 Joseph, son of Richard Prince
Obadiah, son of Robert Cotta
Mary, daughter of Edward Beachum
- 15:8 John, son of Jon Harbert
Nathaniel, Sarah & Mary, children of
Robert Pease
- 22 Mary, daughter of Jon Cooke
Deborah, daughter of Brother Stacy
- 30:9 Theodore, son of Walter Price
Bethiah, daughter of Sister Devenish
Abigaile, daughter of Mr. Corwin

- 10:10 Ephraim, son of John Marstone
Ephraim, son of Jon Moore
- 17:10 Ann, daughter of William Hathorne
Elizabeth, daughter of Robert
Lemon
- [21]
1643
- 24:10 Elizabeth, daughter of Brother
Browne
- 7:11 Abigaile, daughter of Robert Batten
- 4:12 Isaack, son of [*Humphrey*¹] Wood-
bery
- 18 Christopher, son of Sister Younge
- 1644
- 3:1 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Pickering
- 10 Thomas, son of Phillemon Dickesson
- 17 Mary, daughter of Sister Goyte
- 24 John, son of Jon Neale
- 31 Joseph, son of Joseph Boyce
Caleb, son of Richard Moore
Rebeca, daughter of Richard Hide
- 14:2 John, son of William Goose
Abraham, son of Brother Byam
Elizabeth, daughter of Brother
Browne
Arabella, daughter of Jon Norman
- 28 Timothy, son of William Robisson
- 26:3 Josiah, son of Ralph Elenwood
Mary, daughter of Mr. Walton
- 2:4 Sara, daughter of Jon Hathorne
- 9 Obadiah, son of Obadiah Holme
- 16 Frances, son of Frances Johnson
Edmond, son of Edmond Marshall
- 23 John, son of William Geere
Robert, son of Robert Moulton
Hanna, daughter of Brother
Bacheldor
Sara, daughter of John Gedney
- 3:5 John, son of Brother Hathorne
Richard and Sarah, children of Rich-
ard Dodge
- 28:5 Nathaniel, son of Jon Browne
- 4:6 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Black-
leech
- 11 Elisha, son of Jane Perry
- 1:7 George, son of George Williams
- 8 Hanna, daughter of Sister Downing
Mary, daughter of Jon Sibly
Ruth, daughter of Sister White
- 10:9 Mary, daughter of George Roapes
Nathaniel, son of Mr. Sharp
- 3:9 Jon, son of Henry Bartholmew
- 15:10 Hanna, daughter of George Gardner
- 29 Hanna, daughter of Thomas Moore
- 5:11 Hanna, daughter of Thomas Weekes
- 12 Abigail, daughter of Moses Maverike
Mary, daughter of Thomas Dixy
- 9:12 Samuel, son of Richard Pettingaile
- 16 John, son of Jon Tomkins
- 1645
- 23:1 Phillip, son of Phillip Veren
- 6:2 Lydea, daughter of Robert Gutch
- 20 Joseph, son of Jon Kitchin
- 11:3 John, son of Edmond Giles
John, son of Robert Cotta
- 18 John, son of Jon Bowrne
Abigaile, daughter of Jeremiah Vaile
Abigaile, daughter of Richard Waters
- 25 Thomas, son of Thomas Gardner
Hanna, daughter of Jon Bacheldor
- 13:5 Samuel, son of Richard Raymond
John, son of Henry Trew
- 20 Hanna, daughter of Joseph Pope
- 6:6 Joseph, son of Henry Herrick
Deborah, daughter of William Cleark
Benjamin and Elizabeth, children of
Richard Graves
Hanna, daughter of Robert Goodell
- 31 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Pickering
- 7:7 Mannasses, son of Jon Marstone
- 21 Elizabeth, daughter William Trask
- 12:8 Jon, son of Robert Lemon
Mary, daughter Jon Porter
- 7:10 Thomas, son of Thomas Brackett
- 4:11 Hanna, daughter Mr. Corwin

¹Struck over, *William* in a later hand.

- 18:11 John, son of Mr. Price
 Jeremiah, son of John Neale
 Benjamin, son of Benjamin Felton
- 8:12 Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Swan
- [22]
 1646
- 1:1 Hanna, daughter of Edward Gaskoyne
- 8 Humphry, son of Humphry Woodbery
- 29 Jon, son of Thomas Antrum
 John, son of brother Stacy
- 5:2 William, son of Mr. Hathorne
- 12 Ephraim, son of Richard Hide
 Hanna, daughter of Edward Bishop
- 19:2 Mary, daughter of Brother Haynes
- 3:3 Joshua, son of Richard Moore
 Rachell, daughter of Jon Sibly
 Rachell, daughter of Jon Pickworth
- 17:3 John, Mary and Sarah, children of Robert Hibbert
 Naomie, Mary and Liddea, children of Edmond Grover
 Martha, daughter of John Norman
- 21:3 William, son of William Allen
- 28:4 Danyell, son of Charles Gott
 Hanna, daughter of William Browne
 Jon, son of Jon Kitchin
 Elizabeth, daughter of Phillemon Dickerson
- 13:7 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Marsh
- 27 Benjamin, son of Brother Marshall
- 18:8 Jon, son of Jon Hathorne
- 18:9 Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Reddington
 Abraham, son of Henry Bartholomew
- 13:10 Elizabeth, daughter of Moses Maverick
 Mary, daughter of Mr. Parker
 Jon, son of Sister Dixy
- 17:11 Benjamin, son of Ellen Downing
 Magdalen, daughter of Robert Gutch
- 17:11 Elizabeth, daughter Jon Tomkins
- 21:11 Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Moore
 Deborah, daughter of Thomas Browning
- Lyddea, daughter of Miles Ward
 Hanna, daughter of Mr. Sharp
- 14:1 Henry, son of Henry True
- 21 Sara, daughter of Jeremiah Vaile
- 28:1 Mary and Deliverance, children of Hillyard Veren
- 4:2 Ezekiel, son of Richard Waters
- 16:3 Benjamin, son of Joseph Boyce
- 23 Sary and Mary, children of James Mason
- 27:4 Mary, daughter of Edward Beachum
 Deborah, daughter of John Bourne
- 4:5 Jon, son of George Roapes
 Anna, daughter of brother Tompson
 Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Herrick
- 19:10 Samuel, son of Moses Maverick
- 2:11 Richard, son of Richard Rayment
 Richard, son of Richard Moore
 Mary, daughter of Richard Hide
- 30 Hanna, daughter of Walter Price
- 27:12 James, son of Brother Haynes
- 1648
- 12:1 Jonathan, son of Jon Porter
- 19 Sara, daughter of Jon Marstone
- 26 Hanna, daughter of Joseph Pope
 Deborah, daughter of Edmond Grover
- 16:2 Mary, daughter of Richard Prince
 Mary, daughter of Richard Graves
- 23 Edward, son of Edward Bishop
 Mary, daughter of Jon Kitchin
- 30 Edward, son of Edward Gaskoyne
- 7:3 Joseph and Robert, sons of Robert Hibbert
- 14 Jon, son of Jon Sibly
 Samll, son of George Gardner
 Jonathan, Hana, and Abygaile, children of Richard Stackhouse
- 11:4 Jonathan and Sarah, children of Brother Haynes
 Mary, daughter of Jon Scudder
- 1648
- [23]
- 2:5 Elizabeth, daughter, Mr. Corwin
 Benjamin, son of Jon Pickworth

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- 9 Peeter, son of Phillemon Dickeson
- 23 Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Beachum
- 39 Sarah, daughter of Thomas Putnam
Hanna, daughter of Joseph Hardy
- 6:6 Samuel, Moses and Mary, children of Samuell Eborne
- 3:7 John, son of Nathaniel Felton
John, son of Sister Leach
Joseph and Sarah, children of Sister Towne
- 10 Deborah and Sarah, children of William Golt
Josiah, Bethiah, John & Susana, children of Joseph Rootes
- 1:8 Abigaile, daughter of Sister Dixy
- 29 Ezekeiell, son of Jon Marsh
Ruth, daughter of Nathaniel Felton
- 19:9 Mary, daughter of Robert Allen
Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Gutch
John, James, Thomas and Sarah, children of Jon Pickett
Jon and Sarah, children of Sister Leach
Isaack, Zippora, children of our Sister Wheeler
- 10:10 All the children of Mr. William Brown viz. [blank]
- 14:11 Hanna, daughter of Sister Mason
- 4:12 Susanna, daughter of Humphry Woodbery
Lydeea, daughter of Henry Trew
- 1649
- 11:1 Mary, daughter of Thomas Brackett
Martha, daughter of Miles Ward
Aron, son of Sister Read
Jacob and Elizabeth of our Sister Conklyn
Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Scudder
Susanna, daughter of Richard Waters
- 1:2 Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Gardener
- 22:2 Mary, daughter of John Tomkins
- 20:3 Benjamin, son of Roger Maury
Samuel, son of Frances Johnson
- 27:3 Hilliard, son of Hilliard Veren
- 3:4 Jonathan, son of Thomas Moore
Jon, son of Henry Skerry
Sarah, daughter of John Porter
- 3:5 Ruth, daughter of Richard Stackhouse
George, son of Joseph Pope
- 22 Priscilla, daughter of Jon Hathorne
- 29 Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Hathorne
Eleazer, son of Henry Bartholmew
Jonathan, son of William Allen
- 6:6 Abraham, son of Sister Patch
- 19 Hanna, daughter of Jon Scudder
- 26 Dorcas, daughter of Jon Bourne
- 23:7 Susana, daughter of Sister Read
- 30 Eliza, daughter of Moses Maverike
- 28:8 Symond, son of Brother Horne
- 30:10 Jeremiah, son of Jeremiah Vaile
1650
- 24:1 William, son of Walter Price
Mary, daughter of Sister Foster
- 7:2 Hanna, daughter of Richard Hide
Lydeea, daughter of Jon Neale
- 21:2 Jon, James, Mary and Martha, children of Sister Chichester
Caleb, and Sarah, children of Richard Curtis
- 28 Eliza, daughter of Richard Raymond
Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Hardy
- 12:3 Susana, daughter of Richard Moore
- 19 Mary, daughter, Thomas Putnam
- 26 Jon, son of Henry Herrick
- 23:4 Jon, son of Jon Bachelder
Samll, Luke, Joseph, Benjamin, sons of Robert Morgan
- 30 Rebeca, daughter of Jon Pickett
- 7:5 Hanna, daughter of Robert Lemon
Mary, Frances, Rebeca and Jon, children of Mr. Filmingan
- [24]
1650
- 1:7 Bethiah, daughter of John Marsh
- 8 Symond, Joseph and Mary, children of Sister Lovett
Mary, daughter of Jon Bridgman

- 6:8 Abigaile, daughter of Henry Bartholomew
Sarah, daughter of Jon Pickworth
Richard, son of Richard Graves
- 13 Remember, daughter of Thomas Rix
- 27 Joseph, son of Joseph Pope
- 17:9 Jonathan, son of Edward Harnett
- 15:10 Robert, son of Robert Morgan
Mary, daughter of Thomas Moore
- 16:12 Thomas, son of Joseph Rootes
- 23 Jon, son of Jon Mascall
- 1651
Joana, daughter of Robert Hibbert
Benjamin, son of Jon Marston
Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Graye
- 23:1 Rebeca, daughter of Samuel Eborne
- 6:2 Mary, daughter of Nathaniel Felton
Rachell, daughter of Sister Leech
- 20:2 Abigaile, daughter of Thomas Gardner
William, son of Humphry Woodbery
Thomas, son of James Haynes
Sarah, daughter of Sister Chichester
- 18:3 Samuel, son of Richard Prince
Samuel, son of Richard Curtis
Martha, daughter of Elyas Mason
- 1:4 Hanna, daughter of Richard Brackenbury
- 8 Deborah, daughter of Jon Tomkins
- 15 John, son of Thomas Read
Joseph, son of Thomas Brackett
- 22 Hanna, daughter of John Sibly
- 29 Sarah, daughter of Thomas Rix
- 20:5 Peeter, son of Mr. Thomas Thacher
Samuel, son of Richard Stileman
- 14:7 Jon, son of Mr. Norton
- 5:8 Joan, daughter of Mr. Johnson
Richard, son of Jon Norman
- 12:8 Mary, daughter of Edward Bishop
- 26 William, son of George Roapes
Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Venus
- 28:10 Henry, son of Richard Waye
- 4:11 Mary, daughter of Mr. Browne
- 25 Danyell, son of Jon Pickett
Samuel, son of Hugh Woodbery
- 8:12 Joseph, son of Henry Trew
- 1652
- 7:1 Dorcas, daughter of Hillyard Veren
Samuel, son of John Foster
- 21 Jon, son of Jon Kitchin
- 9:3 James, son of James Chichester
Joseph, son of Robert Graye
- 16 Thomas, son of Thomas Putnam
Deborah, daughter of Robert Gutch
- 6:4 Sara, daughter of Jon Leach
Richard, son of Richard Hide
- 13 Bethiah, daughter of Jon Lovett
- 15:6 Jonathan, son of Jon Neale
Hanna, daughter of Richard Graves
- 5:7 Christian, daughter of Richard Moore
Martha, daughter of Joseph Hardy
- 12:7 Remember, daughter Moses Maverrick
- 2:8 William, son of Mr. Bartholmew
Samuel, son of Jon Marsh
Abigaile, daughter of John Pickworth
Mary, daughter of Sister Trask
- 30:11 Hanna, daughter of Richard Waters
- 6:12 Jon, Malaky, Samuell, Elizabeth, Mary, Isaack, Pasca, Abigaile, all the children of Pasca Foote
- 13:12 Samuel, son of Richard Stackhouse
- 20 Richard, son of Richard Curtis
- 13:1 Stephen, son of Jon Mascall
- 27 William, son of Mr. Venus
- 10:2 Mary, daughter of Thomas Read
- 1653
- [25]
- 17:2 Danyell, son of Richard Raymond
Samuel, son of Nathaniel Putnam
Peeter, son of Humphrey Woodbery
Hanna, daughter of John Marston
Benjamin, son of Joseph Pope
Mary, daughter of Mr. Hathorne
Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Hibbert
Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel Felton
- 8:3 Joseph, son of Jon Bacheldor

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- 15 William, son of Sister Chichester
 22 Joseph, son of Joseph Houlton
 29 Elias, son of Elias Mason
 Bethiah, daughter of Robert Morgan
 5:4 Hester, daughter of Thomas Rix
 3:5 James, son of Mr. Browne
 10 Mary, daughter of George Gardner
 7:6 Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Norton
 8:7 William, son of John Sibly
 Joseph, son of Sister Norman
 Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Waye
 27:9 Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Leech
 4:10 Abigaile and Joane daughters of
 Anne Woodberye
 29:1 Thomas, son of Thomas Dixy
 19:12 Sara, daughter of Mr. Johnson
 Benjamin, son of Henry Trew
 1654
 12:1 Samuel, son of Walter Price
 26 Bethiah, daughter of Thomas Gard-
 ner
 Elizabeth, daughter of James Chi-
 chester
 22:2 Sarah, daughter of Hilliard Veren
 7:3 Nicholas, son of Ann Woodbery
 Susanna, daughter of Jon Marsh
 28 Hester, daughter of William Robin-
 son
 4:4 Sara, daughter of Robert Gutch
 11:4 Bethiah, daughter of Robert Graye
 Sarah, daughter of Hugh Woodbery
 18 Anna, daughter of Mary Trask
 12:5 Mary, daughter of Richard Stack-
 house
 2:5 Elizabeth, daughter, Henry Barthol-
 mew
 9 Edmond, son of Thomas Putnam
 16 Deliverance, daughter of Richard
 Graves
 30 Ambross, son of Rebeca Britt
 20 Christian, daughter, Richard Hide
 3:7 Jacob, son of Jon Pickett
 Mary, daughter of James Bennett
 Eunice, daughter of Edward Harnett
 Mary, daughter of Sister Leech
 10 Jon, Nathaniel, Ruth and Richard,
 children of John Ingersoll
 Hanna and Elizabeth, daughters of
 Sister Dove
 John, son of Henry Kenning
 24:7 George, son of George Gardner
 29:8 Abigaile, daughter of George Roapes
 11:12 Thomas, son of John Marstone
 25:12 Benjamin, son of Jon Horne
 1655
 18:1 Richard, son of Richard Prince
 Elizabeth and Hanna, daughters of
 John Ruck
 Abigaile, daughter of Sister Lovett
 1:2 Richard, son of Humphry Wood-
 bery
 15 Robert, son Jon Kitchin
 Sara, daughter of Richard Curtis
 22 Thomas, son of Robert Elwell
 29 Mary, daughter of Jon Neale
 6:3 Abigaile, daughter of Robert Hibbert
 13 Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Read
 29 Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel Putnam
 3:4 John, son of Sister Foster
 Mehitabell, daughter of Jon Mascall
 26:6 Thomas, son of Thomas Rix
 1655
 [26]
 3:1 Sara, daughter of Jon Ingersoll
 21:8 Abigaile, daughter of Hillyard Veren
 28 Joseph, son of Joseph Hardy
 Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel Felton
 Abigail, daughter of Sister Ann
 Woodbery
 24:12 Mary, daughter of Elizabeth Houl-
 ton
 1656
 9:1 Hugh, son of Hugh Woodbery
 16 Steephen, son of Ralph Ellenwood
 Margeret, daughter of Thomas Dixy
 Walter, son of Walter Price
 11:8 Thomas, son of Robert Graye
 18 Samuel, son of Joseph Pope
 15:4 Richard, son of Sister Leach
 Sarah, daughter of Samuel Eborne

- 7:7 Joseph, son of Sister Norman
 14 Mary, daughter of Jon Marsh
 Sara, daughter of Sister Trask
 5:8 Dorcas, daughter of Mathew Dove
 7:10 Sarah, daughter of Jon Ruck
 25:11 Mary, daughter of Mr. William
 Browne
 Hanna, daughter of Richard Curtis
 1657
 8:1 Hanna, daughter of John Kenning
 15 Jonathan, son of Richard Prince
 Samuel, son of George Roapes
 22 Ann, daughter of Jon Horne
 12:2 Samuel, son of Jon Sibly
 26:2 Jon, son of Sister Dixy
 Ralph, son of Brother Ellenwood
 Jemminah, daughter of Henry True
 Remember, daughter of Thomas
 Read
 10:3 Henry, son of Henry Bartholomew
 Deliverance, daughter of Thomas
 Putnam
 Sarah, daughter of Jon Westone
 Susanna, daughter, Sister Chichester
 Thomas, son of Jon Mascal
 1657
 30:6 Elizabeth, daughter of Jon Marston
 6:7 Mary, daughter of Moses Maverick
 Jon, son of Jon Ruck
 Jon, son of Nathaniel Putnam
 18:8 Edward, son of Edward Norrice
 James, son of Thomas Rix
 22:9 Nicolas, son of Nicholas Woodbery
 24:11 John, son of John Neale
 Hanna, daughter of Thomas
 Gardener
 1658
 14:1 John, son of Joseph Hardy
 11:2 Jacob, son of William Vincent
 Richard, son of Robert Elwell
 23:3 Robert, son of Robert Graye
 30 Mary, daughter of Nathaniel Felton
 Elizabeth, daughter of Humphry
 Woodbery
 Bethiah, daughter of Mathew Dove
 20:4 Benjamin, son, Joseph Holton
 Samuel, son of Robert Hibbert
 18:5 Isaack, son of Sister Reddington
 1:6 Jonathan, son of John Horne
 2:11 James, son of Mr. William Browne
 16:11 Thomas, son of John Ruck
 30:11 Samuel, son of John Ingersoll
 6:12 Sarah, daughter, Henry Bartholmew
 1659
 7:1 John, son of Hugh Woodbery
 10:2 Jon, son of Jon Browne Junior
 Jacob, son of John Marsh
 Abigaile, daughter of John Marstone
 Hanna, Sarah and Elizabeth, chil-
 dren of William Marstone
 5:4 Jacob, son of Thomas Read
 26:4 Hanna, daughter of Robert Gray
 3:5 Mary, daughter of Henry Kenny
 Abigaile, daughter of Jon Sibly
 1660
 [27]
 4:8 Francis the son of John Higginson¹
 10:8 James, son of Joseph Hardy
 1:15 Sara, daughter of Thomas Read
 5:4 John the son of Richard Curtis
 1661
 1:25 Hanna, daughter of Nicholas Potter
 6:1 Christian, the daughter of H[um-
 phrey] Woodbery
 6:29 John, son of John Weston
 John, son of Mary Lay
 9:3 Remember and Hanna, daughters of
 John Leach
 9:3 Daniel, sonne of Mathew Dove
 10:8 Anna, Elizabeth and John, children
 of R[ichard] Harvey
 10:22 Henry, son of John Higginson
 1662
 2:13 Dan, son of Josua Ray
 Rebeca, Sara, Elizabeth, daughters of
 Jos[hua] Ray
 Mary, William, Abigail, Arthur
 children of Abigail Kippins
 2:27 Elizabeth, daughter of John Croad
 Johanna, Elizabeth, John, children
 of Zebulon Hill

¹Records begin here in the hand of Rev. John Higginson.

- 3:26 James, son of John Mascall
1662
- 3:26 John, son of Roger Conant
Nathaniel, John, Lot, Elizabeth,
children of Lot Conant
- 4:2 Hanna, daughter of Richard Leach
- 4:22 Joseph, son of R[alph] Elwood
- 4:29 Prudence, daughter of T[homas]
Putnam
Sara, daughter of H[enry] Keny
- 5:13 Jehodan, daughter of R[ichard]
Harvy
- 10:28 Philip, son of Zebulon Hill
1663
- Aaron, son of Moses Maverick
Samuel, son of [Thomas]¹ Dixy
- 1:20 Samuel, son of John Broun Junior
- 2:5 John, son, Deliverance, daughter of
John Dodge
Elizabeth, daughter of Elizabeth
Williams
- 2:11 Bethiah, daughter of Joseph Ray
Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel
Putman
- 2:20 Timothy, John, Damaris, Ruth, chil-
dren of Damaris Mansfield
John and Thomas, children of Mary
Westgate
Hanna, daughter of James Rising
- 3:17 Benjamin and Elizabeth, children of
Ambrose Gale
Hanna, daughter of Joseph Hardy
Daughter of Abigail Kippins
- 3:24 Henry, son of Sister Holton
Aaron, son of Brother Morgan
Elizabeth and Abigail, children of
John Woodbery
- 4:20 John the son of John Croad
Hanna, daughter of Nathaniel Felton
Hanna, daughter of Mary Lay
- 6 Deliverance, daughter of William
Maston

[28]

- 28 Elizabeth Weston, daughter of
Brother [Weston]
- 9:7 Jacob, son of Sister Read
- 15 Mary, daughter of Brother Potter
- 11:17 Charity, daughter of Brother Gates
1664
- 3:1 Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Keny
- 3:8 Ruth, daughter of Christopher Bab-
bidg
- 4:5 Hanna, Mary, Sarah, Robert, chil-
dren of Sister Sallo's²
Nicholas, son of Sister Maskall
Sarah, Debora, Elizabeth, Isack, chil-
dren of Sister Isack Williams
Mary, d. of Brother Ralfe Ellen-
wood
- 4:12 [Sarah], daughter of John Marsh³
Jonathan of T[homas] Gardner
- 8:12 Martha, daughter of Lot Conant
- 9:6 Abigail, daughter of Brother Harvey
Paul, son of Daniel Mansfield
- 1665
- 2:2 Ebenezer, son and Ruth, daughter
of Brother G[eorge] Gardner
Benjamin, son of Isaac Williams
- 2:26 Peter, son of Hanna Brown
- 1:10 Susanna, daughter, Sister Woodcok
Samuel, son of Brother Potter
- 1:27 Elizabeth, daughter of Sister Hill
—— of Brother Daunton
—— of Sister Baker
—— of Sister Leech
Susanna, daughter of Nathaniel
Felton
- 5:23 Hanna, daughter of Mr. Croad
{ Jeffry, son of Jo: Massy
John, son of Jo: Gedny
- 5:30 { Johnathan, son of Bart [holomew]
Gidney
Samuel, son of Samuel Williams
- 6:6 Mary, daughter of Sister Ruck

¹Cf. Perley I, 444.²I.e., *Sallowes*.³Sarah, daughter of John and Sarah (Younge) Marsh, born December 1, 1663. *Salem Town Records*.

- 20:6 Theophilus, son of George Rix
Ambrose, son of Ambrose Gale
John, William, Samuel and Abigail,
children of Elizabeth Stone
- 10:7 Susan the daughter of John Gidney
William the son of Sister William
Maston
Samuel the son of Brother Weston
- 28:8 Nicolas, son of Sister Mannig
Samuel, son of Sister Sherman
Samuel, son, and Sarah, daughter of
Lydia Pitman
John, son of John Massy
Jonathan, son of Brother Roots
Samuel the son of Samuel Allen
- 20:9 Joseph, Isack, Andrew, children of
Nicholas Woodbery
- 18:12 James, son of James Brown
Sara, daughter of Mrs. (Hingam)¹
Croad
- 25:1 Samuel, Joseph, Benjamin, children
of Thomas West
Elizabeth, daughter of Henry West
- 1666
8:2 Marget, daughter of John Brown
Junior
Hanna, daughter of Brother Potter
- 29:2 Priscilla, daughter of Hugh Wood-
bery
Sarah, daughter of John Gidney
- 20:3 Rebecca, daughter of Mr. Hale
Joseph, son of Sister Kippins
James son of [*Joseph*] Houlton
Debora, daughter of Sister Dove
- 12:3 ——— of Sister Keny
Samuel, son, and Sara daughter of
Ed[*mund*] Gale
- 24:4 Eliezer, son of Eliezer Gidney
1:5 Henry, son of Jo: Williams
Sara, daughter of Mr. Helwis
——— daughter of Sister Dove
- 14:5 John, son of Brother Ray
John, son of Sister Sallo's
- 21:5 Josua, son of Sister Stevens
7:6 Bart., son of Brother Gidney
William, son of Brother Bishop
Sara, daughter of
Brother Ellenwood } who were
Mary, daughter of } baptized the
Sister Lee } Sabbath before
Mary, daughter of } and
Sister Dodge } Sarah Henly
- 19:6 John, Samuel, Zerubbabl, sons of
Mrs. Mary Endecott
Martha, daughter of Sister Proctor of
Ipswich Church
Sara, daughter of Sister Read
- [29]
- 26:6 Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel
Howard
- 19:2 Joseph, Elizabeth, Mary, Abigail,
Samuel, John, children of Mary
Swasy
- 26:7 Abigail, Bethia, Joseph, John, chil-
dren of Joseph Huchinson
Joseph, Samuel, sons of Samuel
Morgan
Lidia and Joseph, children of
[*Henry*] Herick
Mary, Elias, Joanna, children of
Sarah Henly
- 29:7 Nathaniel, Samuel, Elizabeth, chil-
dren of Nathaniel Stone
- 17:9 Benjamin, John, sons of Richard
Hollinwood
Elizabeth, daughter of Remember
Samon
Samuel of H[*enry*] West
- 10:12 Lydia of Brother Potter
Mary of Samuel Williams
- 1667
George, son of John Corwin
Abigail daught of El[*eazer*] Haw-
thorne
- 14:2 Edmond of Edmond Gale

¹She was apparently baptized in Hingham. Cf. Perley II, 388.

- 3:5 William and Sarah of Lot Conant
Ebenezer of Elizabeth Woodbery
Joseph of Joseph Porter
Thomas of ——— Woodbery
Abigail of [*Nathaniel*]¹ Howard
John, Robart, Mary, Abraham of
John Peas
- 14:5 Jonathan of Sister Williams
Rebecca, Hanna, John, Sara, Priscilla, Jonathan of Sister [*wife of*]
John Putman
- 21:5 Francis of H[*enry*] Skery Junior
Peter of Peter Woodbery
Samuel and Cornelius of H.² Baker
Benjamin, Jonathan, David of H. Fuller³
Benjamin of Mr. Zerubbabel Endecott
Hanna of Bartholmew Gidny
Nicolas, Elizabeth, Hanna of Sister Merit
- 14:11 Jonathan of Mr. Croad
Mary of Sister Miles
- 12 Abigail of Sister [*wife of*] Richard Hollinwood
- 1668
- 20:1 John, son of T[*homas*] West
Elizabeth of Sister Foster
- 5:2 Bethia of Sister Ruck
- 7:3 Georg of Eleazer Hauthorn
Rachell of Sister Leech
Joseph of Sister Herick
Elizabeth of Jo[*hn*] Corwin
- 10:3 Hanna of W[*illiam*] Browne
Matthew of Sister Dove
Abigail, John, Benjamin of Sister [*wife of*] John Archer
- 21:4 William of John Gidney Junior
John of Sister [*wife of*] Nicholas Manning
George of John Williams
- 28:4 Elizabeth of Sister [*wife of*] Thomas Dean
- 12:5 Benjamin of Sister Stevens
Bethia of Brother Potter
- 9:6 John of John Norman
- 9:6 William of Samuel Eburn
- 17:6 Samuel of Sister Lee
- 23:6 Mary of Zerubbabel Endecott
Hanna of Sister Kippin
John of Sister Houghton
Abigail of Sister Mansfield
- 20:7 William of W[*illiam*] Allen
Sarah of Jos[*hua*] Ray
William of Sister [*wife of*] William Maston
- 23:8 John, son of Samuel Ward
——— daughter of Samuel Ward
Bethia, daughter of Sister [*wife of*] John Archer
- [30]
- Nov. 1 Sarah and Elizabeth of Brother Giles
- Nov. 22 Abigail, Thomas, Samuel, Elizabeth, William, Daniel, Nathaniel, Mary of Brother Thomas Giggles
- Nov. 29 Priscilla of Brother Joseph Grafton
——— of Brother Samuel Archer
- Dec. Mary of Brother John Norman
Hillyard of Samuel Williams
- 1669
- of Nathaniel Putnam
Jonathan of John Brown Junior
- Mar. 3 Bartholmew of James Browne
- Apr. 5 Samuel the son of Brother Potter
- Apr. 25 Azor of Edmond Gale
Sarah of Sister Pickworth
- May 13 John of Brother Giggles
Samuel of Samuel Goldthwaite
- June 6 Elizabeth of El[*eazer*] Gidny
Jonathan of Isack Williams
Mary of Sister English
Anne of Henry Skery
Elizabeth of John Leech

¹Nathaniel Hayward. Cf. Perley II, 135.

²Probably *Hannah* wife of Cornelius Baker.

³Probably *Hannah* wife of Thomas Fuller.

July 17	John of William Downton William, John, Robart, Thomas, Samuel, Mary, Alice of William Bartol and his wife of Marblehead	Aug.	———— ¹ of Sister Beal Joseph of ——— Henly John and Mary of John Maston
Aug. 6	Abigail, Mary, Remember of Abigail Ward of Marblehead Sarah of John Massy Abigail, Elizabeth, Sarah, Rebecca, William of Sister Clarke of Marblehead ———— of ——— Marsh	Aug. 28	Sarah of Sister Kippin John of Sister Lee Abraham, John, Mary, Sarah, Eliza- beth of Sister Smith
Sept. 7	Mary of J[ohn] Williams	Sept. 4	Sara Dod and Mary Fortune at age Joseph of Thomas Putman Susanna of John Putman William of Samuel Allen
12	Joseph of Sister Pitman Nathaniel of Samuel Bedel Elizabeth of Theodore Price	Oct. 2	Penelope of Mr. Corwin
Oct.	Samuel of Willliam Brown	Nov.	Sarah, Thomas, Elizabeth, John of Sara Dod Elias and Thomas of Mary Fortune ² James of John Peas
1670		18	Henry of Harry West
Mar. 3	William of Joseph Grafton Stephen of Joseph Swasy	Jan. 29	Children of James Browne George of Samuel Williams Timothy of John Norman John of Sister Henly
Apr. 19	Joseph of Mr. Wells Joseph of Richard Hollinswoods Nathaniel of Hanna Beal	[31]	
17	Peter of Sister Pickman Lyddia of Bartholmew Gidney	1671	
May 8	Elizabeth of Abigail Ward Samuel of Sister Clark Robart of Samuel Morgan Hanna of Sister Pickworth	Mar.	———— daughter of Mr. Wells
26	Lucy of Jo[hn] Corwin Elizabeth of El[eazer] Hawthorn	Apr.	Elizabeth of Sister English 7 Abigaile of Sister Punchard
June 5	Nathaniel of John Gidney	May 21	Mary of Sister Nowell Elizabeth of Sister Fortune
12	Jonathan of [John] Forster Susanna of Remember Samon Gershom and Abigail of Mrs. Ashby	July 2	Benjamin of Sister Koker Thomas of Sister [wife of] John Archer Jonathan of Sister Walcot
July 10	Elizabeth of Zachariah Marsh Elizabeth of ——— Lyddia of Brother Potter Sarah of the daughter of Sister Stack- house	Sept. 7	Benjamin, Thomas of Sister Agar Jane, Elizabeth, Mary of Sister Pick- ering
		Oct. 29	Edward of Sister Winter
		Nov. 12	Benjamin of Brother Potter Robart of Sister Nowell
		Dec.	———— of Sister Winter

¹Probably two or more children of Sister Beal were baptized at this time since considerable space is left in the text to be filled in. Cf. Perley III, 32.

²Wheatland has *of Mary Fortune* but *Marget Ellis* is struck through. Wheatland VII, 16. An Elias Fortune was living in Marblehead in 1674. Savage II, 185.

Dec. 31	Miriam of Edm[<i>und</i>] Gale Abigail of John Massy Elizabeth of John Horne		
1672		June	Abiel of Mr. John Brown Junior Mary of Joseph Porter Samuel of Isack Foot John of Samuel Morgan
Apr. 28	Hanna of John Corwin Joseph of Samuel Archer Ebenezer of Brother Giggles	July	John of Sister Fortune Joseph of John King
May	Micheson of Mr. Weld William of Eleazer Hawthorn Bethia of Bart [<i>holmew</i>] Gidney Ruth of Eleazer Gidney James, Richard of Sister Flendor	Aug.	Abigail of John Horne Ruth of J[<i>ohn</i>] Putman John of Sister Owen
July 14	Joseph of Mr. Endicot Hanna of Sister Beal Hanna of Sister Flendor	Sept.	Joseph of Sister Archer
21	Sara of Samuel Williams John of Is[<i>aac</i>] Williams James of Sister Clarke Ebenezer of ——— Mary of ——— Abigail of ——— Hannah of Ephraim Skerry ——— of Sister Foster	Oct.	Barbara of Mr. Wells Ruth of Sister Ruck
Aug.	Samuel of Sister Pickworth Ruth daughter of Mr. Cheevers	Nov.	Abigail of Sister Fortune Elizabeth of Sister Miles
Aug. 8	Elizabeth of Sister Smith Deliverance of Ambros Gale Sara of Sister Trask Thomas of Stackhouse Daughter Benjamin of Sister Henly ¹	Dec.	Sarah of Z[<i>erubbabel</i>] Endicott Caleb of R[<i>ichard</i>] Hollinwood
Sept. 16	William of Sister Harris Ruth of Sister Haskins Mary of Sister Starre Martha of Sister Ward Isack son of J[<i>ohn</i>] Peas Sarah of Abraham Cole	Jan.	Mary of Sister Chadwell Edmund of Brother Batter
Oct.	Joseph of Sister Allen Susanna of Mr. Corwin Rebecca of Mr. Nicholets Elizabeth of H[<i>enry</i>] West	Feb.	Deborah of Brother Gidny Samuel of Sister Ward Susanna of Sister Pitman Henry Elizabeth John Remember Edward Eliezer
1673	Hanna of James Broun John of Remember Salmons		} of Sister Moses
Mar. 30	John of Mr. William Broune Junior	1674	
		Mar. 1	Richard of J[<i>ohn</i>] Norman John of Mr. R[<i>ichard</i>] Croad Thomas of J[<i>ohn</i>] Massy Elizabeth of Mr. Sharps daughter of Boston
		Apr.	Thomas of Sister Bedle
		May 10	Abigail of Brother Gale Ruth of Sister Clark Samuel Mary Hannah
			} of Brother Water's daughter's children
		[3 2]	
		June	Lyddia of Sister Nowell ——— of —— ——— of —— Jonathan of ——

¹Wheatland suggests *Hardy* but record is quite clearly *Henly*. VII, 85.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

31

July Abraham }
 Jacob } of Sister Gale
 Bartholmew }

Aug. 2 Ruth of Sister Williams
 William of Brother Eli Gidny

Aug. Ruth of Sister Nowell

Sept. Samuel of Eli [*ezar*] Hawthorne
 Martha of Sister Foster

Oct. Samuel of J [*ohn*] Corwin
 Martha of Ephraim Skery
 John of Sister Flendor

Dec. ——— of R [] More
 ——— of Sister Williams
 ——— of W [*illiam*] Brown

Jan. John of Sister Flendor

1675

Mar. Georg of Sister Gardiner

Apr. ——— of Is [*rael*] Porter
 Elizabeth of Is [*aac*] Foot

May Ezekiel of Mr. Chevers
 William of Joseph Porter
 James of Mr. Ruck

June Ezekiel of Sister Golthait
 Jonathan of J. King

July

Aug. John of John Higginson Junior
 Thomas of Sister Phipeny
 Josua of Sister Pickman
 Joseph of Sister Joseph Archer
 Sara of Sister Hill
 John of John Maskall Junior
 Robert of Sister Hoskins

Sept. Abraham of A. Cote
 Alice of W. Allen
 William of Colebrook

Oct. Mary of Sister Winter
 Sarah of Sister Pickworth

Nov. Joanna of Sister Dod
 Elizabeth of Mr. Nicholet
 Samuel of Bartholomew Gidney

Dec. Ebenezer of Is. Williams
 William of W. Trask
 John of John Horne

1676

Jan. John of Br. Jo. Hawthorn

¹Perley I, 88.

Feb. Ruth of Richard and Ruth Rose
 Joseph of Mr. Wells
 Mary of Mr. Batter

27 Mary of H. West

Mar. 12 Samuel of E. Skery
 Mary of T. West
 Sarah of Sister Daniel

19 Elizabeth of E. Skery

Apr. 2 Richard { of Brother Waters's
 Dorcas { daughters

16 Elizabeth of ———

May 21 John of Sister Nowell

June Walter of J. Price
 Samuel of Sister Ruck

July 1 Sarah of Israel Porter
 Anna of Sister Chadwick
 Sarah of Sister Henly
 Mary of Sister Clark

Aug. Mary { of M [*ary*] Gale
 Daniel {

Sept. Benjamin of M. Masury
 Mary of Mr. John Corwin
 Thomas of John Massy

1677

Mar. Anne of G. Babbidge
 Susanna of Sister Bedle
 Elizabeth of W. Brown Senior
 Elizabeth of Ephraim Skery
 ——— of Samuel Archer

Apr. Abigail of Samuel Williams
 Rachell of Sister Allen

May Samuel of Mr. Cheevers
 Sarah of Sister Miles
 Eleazar of Eleazer Hawthorn

May 13 Elezar and Abigail of Joseph Porter

May 27 Benjamin of Benjamin Maston
 William of Brother Waters's daughter
 Stephen of Jo. Maskal Junior

June 3 John the son of John Keny

July Richard of Sister Stackhouse d [*ough-*
ter]
 Martha of Benjamin Pitman
 Abigail of [*John*]¹ Norman
 ——— of Sister Goldthwait
 Elizabeth of T. West

Aug.	James and Mary, of Mr. Lindall Samuel of Jo. Leech Peter Hanna } of Peter Clois of Yorke Abigail Mary	Sarah John } of Sister Petherick Miriam Benjamin } Abigail } of Agnes Stacy John } Elizabeth }
13	Debora of Sister Waters daughter Mercy of Manasseh Maston	May 19 Elizabeth of Henry Skery
Sept. 2	Daniel of Sister Andrews Eliezer of El. Giles	Mary } of Sister Merrit's Elizabeth } daughters
Oct. 7	Rachel of Sister Fortune Sarah of W. Allen Jun. John of Dr. Wells Joseph of Sister Nowell	Ann of Sister Phipeny John of Jonathan Pickering John } of Roger Hill Samuel } Joseph } Mary }
[33]		Ebenezer of Sister Foster
Nov. 4	Timothy of Timothy Lindall Benjamin of Benjamin Geerish William of Sister Stevens Mehitabell of Mr. Endicot	Zachariah } of Sister Booth Elizabeth } Bridget } Rebecca }
18	William of Sister Punchard	June 2 John } of Richard Reith Abigail } Sarah }
25	Deborah } twins of Bartholmew Martha } Mary of Eliezar Gidny	Mary of Benjamin Gale
Dec. 2	Nathaniel ¹ of Mr. John Hawthorn Barbara of Susanna Dutch	16 Nathaniel } of S. Felton Junior Mary } Anna }
16	Deliverance of Sister Parkman	July 7 John and Anna of Jo. Sibly Ebenzer of Jo: Williams
1678		14 Christopher of Jo. Maskall
Jan. 6	Mrs. Leg of Marblehead Elizabeth } of Mrs. Latimore Susanna } Elizabeth } of Mrs. Legg Mary } Joseph } of Bethia Allen John }	John } of Sister John Waters Sarah } Richard } Nathaniel } Samuel } Elizabeth }
Feb.	Samuel of Sister Gardiner Mary of Mr. Eps Thomas of John Higginson Jun.	George } of Francis Girdler Francis } Hanna } Benjamin } Mary }
Mar.	Hezekiah of Sister Harris Susanna of Sister Haskal	Aug. 4 Sarah of Sister Parkman
Apr. 27	Mary of Mr. Barton	11 Elizabeth of Ezekiel Waters

¹Perley and published vital records of Salem give 1678 as date of birth but 1679 is probably correct.

- 18 John of Captain John Price
- Sept. 16 John of Jo. Ingerson's son
Mary of Mr. Cheevers
George of Sister Henly
Thomas of Jo. King
Samuel of G. Skinner
- Oct. 1 Rebecca of Sister Ward
Joseph of Sister Fortune
Daniel } of Sister Broun
Joseph }
- Oct. 13 Priscilla of W. Stacy
Mary of Jo. Horne
- Nov. Christopher of Brother Babbridge
Obedience of Sister Merit's daughter
- Dec. 16 Mary of Sister Winter
Mary of Sister Booth
- Jan. 2 Hannah of Benjamin Gerrish
1679
- Mar. 10 Richard of Sister Williams
James of Peter Cloye
Mary of Sister Bedle
- Apr. 7 Abigail of Sister Willowby
Sarah of Brother Batter
Margaret of Jon[athan] Corwin
- [34]
- May 4 Prisca of Sister Chadwell
Elizabeth of Sister Allen
John of Sister Clark
Samuel } of Sister Russell
Thomas }
Elizabeth }
Mary }
- 11 Rachel of Mary Gale
- June 1 William of J. Hawthorn
Ebenezer of Eli Gidny
Hephziba of Joseph Porter
Thomas of Richard More
- 22 Hanna of J. Archer
John of Mr. Baily
- Aug. 3 Elizabeth of Richard Reith
George } of Merit's daughter
Samuel } Marblehead
- 24 Mary of W. Brown Junior
Mary of Samuel Archer
- Sept. 7 Elizabeth of William Allen
28 George of Sister Gardiner
Susanna of Sister Dutch
- Oct. 5 Cromwell of Sister Phipeny
Sara of Sister Dod
Mary of Zach. Marsh
- Nov. 2 Jonathan of Sister Ruck
Daniel of Mr. Eps
John of Sister Pitman
- 16 Daniel } of Jos. Phipeny
Dorcas }
Sarah }
John }
- James of Eli Giles
- Dec. John of D. Wells¹
- Jan. Elizabeth of Sister Priest
- Feb. Ebenezer of Jo. Hill
- 1680
- Apr. 4 Nathaniel of Jo. Higginson Junior
Joanna of Sister Pethrick
Mary of Sister Haskall
- 11 Jonathan of Eli Hawthorne
Malachi of Is. Foot
- June Margaret of J. Corwin
Mary of J. Hardy
- July William of William Stacy
Lemmon of Sister Bedel
—— of Ez. Waters
- Aug. An of Francis Girdler
Dorcas of Sister Stricker
Joseph of Jo. Maskall
Elizabeth of El. Priest
- Sept. Alice of Sister Bridges
Hanna } baptized before²
Caleb }
- Oct. 3 Sarah of Mr. Jon Corwin
Elizabeth of Sister Tawly
Richard of George Babbidge
- Nov. Ruth of John Hawthorn
- Dec. Edmund of Eli Gidny
Elizabeth of Mr. Batter
- Feb. Verin of Sister Parkman

¹Record is clearly *Wells* but probably should be *Weld*. Cf. *Perley III*, 55.

²Hannah Bridges born June 9, 1669; Caleb Bridges born June 3, 1677. Cf. *Perley II*, 405.

1681		1681	
Mar. 1	Mary of Sister Woodruff	Oct. 6	William } of Mr. W. Brown Junior
Apr.	Mary of Sister Woodruff		Hanna }
	—— of Joseph Porter	Oct. 9	Jonathan of Jonathan Corwin
	John of Samuel Gardner Jun.		Mary }
May 1	Mary of Mr. Samuel Cheevers		Hanna }
	Priscilla of Mr. Bartholmew Gedny		Sarah }
June	Mary Hodges and her children:		John }
12	Mary	Oct. 6	Joshua of Benjamin Pitman
	Sarah	23	Abigail of Stackhouse dauter
	Tabitha	Nov. 20	Hanna }
	Hanna		Abigail }
	Elizabeth		Martha }
	Robert		John }
	Bethia	Dec.	Samuel of Daniel Eps
	Elizabeth	Jan. 4	Elizabeth of Benjamin Geerish
	Benjamin	Feb.	William of Mr. Willowby
	Alice	1682	
	Susanna	May 7	Rebecca of Benjamin Pitman
June 12	Phoebe Booth the Weavers		Edward of Sister Stacy Marblehead
	Elizabeth of Dr. Wells		Mary of Isack Foot
	Abigail of Clement English		Mehitabel of Manasseh Maston
July 3	Joseph of Sister Waters daughter at	28	Mercy of Jo. Swinnerton
	Ip[<i>swich</i>]		Josiah of Simon Willard
	John of A. Gale at Marblehead		Joseph of Sister Striker
July 31	Ezekiel of Ezekiel Cheevers		Hannah of Jonathan Pickering
	Hanna of Captain Price		Elizabeth of Mr. Burroughs
Aug.	Christian of Richard More	June 4	John of Sister Furbison
	Joseph of [<i>David</i>] ² Phipeny		Sarah of Mr. Ward's daughter
	—— of Swasy's daughter		Rebecca of Mr. Mavricks daughter
	Joseph of Benjamin Maston		Samuell of John Horne
	Mary of Sister Chin		Sarah of John Higginson
	Thomas of T[<i>homas</i>] Putnam Jun-	11	Samuel }
	ior		John }
Sept. 11	John of Ely Giles		Steven }
	Thomas of Sister Owen Marblehed		Elizabeth of —— Mazury
	Elizabeth of Sister Allen	18	John of Sister Punchard
Oct. 2	Thomas		Elizabeth of Foster's daughter
	Mary		John of Mr. Mavricks daughter
	Elizabeth		Margaret of Sister Doliver
	Benjamin of Samuel Allen	July	Elizabeth of Christopher Babbidge
	Joseph of Samuel Morgan		Ebenezer of Mr. Jo. Hawthorn
			Joseph of Joseph Hardy Junior

[35]

¹George Booth, a joiner, came to Salem in 1675 from Lynn. Cf. Perley III, 73.²Cf. Perley II, 328.

Aug. Nicholas } of ——— Dixy
 Thomas }
 ——— of Ezekiel Waters

Sept. Samuel of Mr. Cheevers
 Joseph of Joseph Grafton
 Charity of Dod or Fortune

Sept. Ruth } of Joseph Porter
 Mehitabel }

Oct. 8 Hannah of John Archars wife
 Edward of Edward Putman
 Mary of Sister Mungy
 Ebenezer of Samuel Archer
 Benjamin } of Job Swinnerton
 Ester }

Jan. Daniel of Mr. Batter

Jan. Sara of Mr. Lindall

1683

Mar. Thomas } of Thomas Ives
 Deborah }
 Joseph }
 John }

Apr. Elizabeth } of Robert Kichin
 John }

May 6 Elizabeth of William Broun Junior
 Richard } of Richard Reif
 Mary }

Sarah of Sister Russell
 Zacheus of Sister Barton
 Moses of Mr. Maverick's daughter

May 20 Abigail of John Waters
 John }
 Nathaniel } of John Tomkins
 Margaret }
 Rebecca }
 Elizabeth }

27 Joshua of Samuel Williams
 George of Jonathan Corwin

June 17 John of John Swinnerton
 Clement of Clement English
 Hanna of Samuel Beadle
 Samuel of John Felton

Aug. 5 Ambrose of A. Gale

Alice } of ——— Darby
 John }
 Abigail of ——— Barton
 Abigail of Zach. Marsh
 Susanna Daniel } Adults¹
 Alice Darby }

Aug. 12 Samuel of Samuel Gardiner
 Rachel of Joseph Phipenny
 Edward of Elizabeth Norris

19 John of Mr. Ruck
 Sarah of Abigail Warly

[36]

1683

Sept. 2 Mary } of Samuel Sandy
 Elizabeth }
 Rebecca }
 Joan }

Ruth of Dr. Wels
 Remember of ——— Owen
 Samuel of ——— Chin
 John }
 Mary } of ——— Merit²
 Hannah }
 Nicholas }
 David }

William } of ——— Blackley
 Elizabeth }

Benoni of P [eter] Cloye
 Israel of Israel Porter

Sept. 22 Joseph } of Joseph Horn
 Timothy }
 Anna }

Susanna of Susan Dutch
 Sarah }
 Oct. 7 Mary } of Sister Sandy
 Charity }

Nicholas }
 Elizabeth } of Elizabeth Glass
 William }
 Richard }
 George }

Samuel of Thomas Dixy
 Jane of [David] Phipeny

¹Susanna Hide, widow of Isaac Hide, married Stephen Daniel on December 3, 1680.

²Nicholas Merritt of Marblehead had Martha, who married ——— Owens; Rebecca, who married ——— Chin; Mary, John, James, Samuel and Nicholas. Cf. Perley I, 307.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

	Rebecca	} of ——— Carder	Remember	} of Mrs. Woodman	
	John		Edward		
	Joseph		John		
	Peter		Moses		
	Samuel		Maverick		
	Edward	} of Edward Winter	Samuel		
	William		22 Mercy of Mr. W. Browne		
Oct.	Nicholas	} of Thomas Dixy	July 6	Abigail of Jo. Putman, Junior	
	Samuel		Abigail of ———		
	Thomas		13 John of Jonathan Corwin		
Nov. 18	Thomas of Thomas Maskall			Sarah of Nehemiah Willowby	
	James of John Maskall			William of Benjamin Pitman	
	Benjamin of ———			Aug. 3 Samuel of Sister Pickering	
	Martha of Mr. Willard			[10] Steven of [Thomas] Maskal	
Dec.	Benjamin of B. Gerrish			24 Abigail of Jo. Leech	
	Martha of William Stacy			John of Jo. Tawly	
	Sarah of Richard More			Ebenezer of Jo. Horn	
Feb.	Anne of Joseph Phipeny			31 Susanna of Abraham Cole	
	Margaret Gardener			Roger of Stackhouse daughter	
	1684				
Mar. 2	Pasca of Isack Foot		Sept.		
	Sarah of John Ropes		Oct. 6	Elizabeth of Jo. Higginson	
9	Martha of Joseph Hardy			Elizabeth of Joseph Suasy	
	Joyce of Ezekiel Waters			Jonathan of Samuel Allen	
23	Elizabeth of Mr. Eps		[37]		
Apr.	Elizabeth of ———		Nov. 9	Elizabeth Edwards	
	Nehemiah of Christopher Babbidg			Elizabeth of Thomas Daby	
	Agnes	} of ——— Coes		Jonathan of Benjamin Wilks	
	Grace		9	Jonathan	} of El[izabeth] Edwards
	Micael			Joseph	
	Elizabeth of ———			Abigail of Debora Winter	
27	Thomas of Sister Day		23	Steven of Steven Sewell	
May	Mary	} 3 Marblehead women	Jan. 4	Rebecca	
	Mary		Daniel	} of Henry Williams	
	Deliverance		Elizabeth		
	Elizabeth of Thomas Putman	Henry			
	Mercy of Joseph Porter	Aquila			
	Mary of R. Kitchin		Feb. 1	Hanna the wife	
	John of Francis Girdler			Samuel, the son	
	Abigail of ——— Punchard			of John Putman	
	Richard of Susanne Hide			Junior	
June 15	Benjamin	} of Sister Jon Ashby ¹	8	Caleb of Mr. Lindall	
	Elizabeth		1685		
			Mar.	Esther of ——— Horne	
				Ebenezer of Mr. Hawthorn	

¹Perley gives their parents as Anthony and Abigail (Hutchinson) Ashby. II, 318.

Apr. James of [*James*]¹ Rixe
 Ephraim of [*Henry*]² Skery

May Lyddia of Jon Putman
 Lyddia of Sister Woodwell
 Ebenezer Foster

June 7 Mary } Homan Sisters at age
 Abigail }

May 24 Saray Pickering at age
 ——— Pickering } juniors
 ——— Pickering }

June 14 James of Mr. Ruck
 Hanna of Stacy of Cambridg
 Susanna Prince at age
 Susanna, her child

21 Sarah }
 Thomas } of G.³ Elkin
 John }
 Lyddia }
 Margaret }

July Nathaniel of Samuel Archer
 Mary of Thomas Daby

26 Ebenezer of Sister Williams

Aug. 2 Daniel of ——— Baston
 Abigail of ——— Phipeny

9 Elizabeth of Mr. Andrews

Sept. 6 Nehemia } of Henry Wilkins
 Susanna }
 Elizabeth Bush, at age

27 Hanna } Estwick at age
 Ester }
 Elizabeth Edwards

Oct. 6 Ebenezer of Thomas Putman
 Elizabeth of Dr. Barton
 Nicholas of J. Marshall
 Elizabeth } of Elizabeth Bush
 Benjamin }

Nov. Abigail of Eli. Giles
 Simon of Mr. Willard

Mary
 Hanna }
 Abigail } at age
 George } of John Horton
 Elizabeth }
 Experience }
 John }

Dec. Antipas of John Swinnerton
 Margaret of Mr. Jonathan Corwin
 ——— of Sara Phipeny
 Steven of Steven Sewel
 Susanna of Ezekiel Waters

Jan. Thomas of Isack Foot
 1686

May Bethia Hacker of age
 Bethia }
 George } and hers
 Sarah } [*children*]
 Jeremy }

Hana Gill at age

28 William } and hers
 John } [*children*]
 Hanna }

June Benjamin of Israel Porter
 Thomas of Mr. Lawson
 Elisha of ——— Putman
 Mary of Jo. Leach
 Sara of James Putman
 Anna Widger at age
 Elizabeth Curtis at age
 David of ——— Pulciver
 Elizabeth Dew at age
 Mary Birch at age
 Elizabeth Colefox at age

Aug. William of Mr. Hauthorn
 Joseph of Joseph Swasy
 Ruth of Thomas Flint

Sept. Timothy } of the Same
 John }
 Susanna of Sister Daniel
 Bethia of Richard Peters
 Mary of Jo. Tomkins

¹Cf. Perley II, 205.

²Cf. Perley I, 433.

³G. in records but probably *Thomas*. Cf. Perley III, 56.

- Daniel of Daniel Andrews
 Hanna Harvy at age
 Oct. 6 Elizabeth Phelps at age formerly Jane
 [38]
 1686
 31 Abigail } Grafton both at age
 Jehodan }
 Mary of Samuel Prince
 Nov. 7 William of ——— Coman
 Anne of Deliverance Walcott
 Dec. 5 Rachel of Mr. Lindall
 Jan. 2 Hanna Collins }
 Hanna Folet } at age
 Mary Herbert }
 Susanne Sibley }
 16 Joanna Liscom at age
 Jan. 29 Margaret of Jo. Higginson
 Feb. Samuel of Jo. Ropes
 Richard of Samuel Williams
 Susanna of Philip English
 27 Nathaniel of Joseph Masury
 Mary of Jo. King
 1687
 Mar. Nathaniel of Samuel Williams
 Apr. Hanna of Samuel Golthwait
 Ibrook of ——— Hacker
 Mary of Oliver Elkins
 Sarah of Jo. Maskall
 Mary of Thomas Maskall
 Margaret of [Stephen]¹ Sewall
 John of ———
 June Samuel of Abraham Cole
 Elizabeth of Nehemiah Willoby
 John of Jo. Felton
 Mary Lord at age
 William }
 Abigail } of William Lord
 Mehitabel }
 Joseph }
 Samuel of Deliverance Parkman
 July 3 Elizabeth Jon. Putman
 10 John of [Samuel] Woodwell
 Susanna of Joseph Phipeny
 Elizabeth of John Maston
 17 Benjamin of John Foster
 Anna of Jon. Corwin
 Aug. 7 Susanna of Man. Maston
 Edward of Edward Bush²
 Nathaniel of Samuel Phipeny
 Joseph of Susanna Sibley
 14 John }
 Robert }
 William } of John [and]
 21 Ebenezer } Mary Herbert
 Joseph }
 Mary }
 Sept. 3 Ezekiel of Ezekiel Cheever
 $\frac{1}{2}$ ——— of the Widow Elsey³
 10 John }
 Abraham } of Robert Folet
 Isack }
 Rebecca }
 Benjamin }
 19 Abigail of Sister Holman
 Oct. 2 Nicholas of Benjamin Pitman
 Joseph of Thomas Flint
 ——— of Jo. Ornes, junior
 Jane of Mr. Lawson
 Nov. 6 Josiah of Benjamin Putnam
 Anna of Joseph Porter
 James of Job Swinnerton
 Sarah of ——— Wilkins
 Nathaniel of B. Putnam
 Elizabeth }
 Hanna } of Sister Henfield
 Robert }
 Mary }
 Nov. 16 John }
 Jeremy } of Rebecca Makarta
 Peter }
 Andrew }
 James }
 Ruth of Eli Giles

¹Salem Vital Records, II, 275.

²Wheatland reads *Burk.* VII, 126. Cf. Perley III, 33.

³Two children. Perhaps of John Elson, who died in 1684, leaving widow Joannah. Cf. Perley III, 175.

Nov. 20 Benjamin of Jo. Chaplin
 Miles }
 Mary } of Sister Ward alias Collins
 James }

Benjamin of Zack. Marsh

Dec. 4 Sara Putman at age
 [Elizabeth] of T[homas] Ives

25 Josiah of Joseph Horne
 Samuel of Samuel Putnam

1688

This year Mary of Sarah Elkins was
 Baptized about February

Apr. 15 Caleb of Richard More
 Jonathan of Samuel Bedle

June Enos { of Ruth Bateman
 Debora { formerly Knight

July 1 Deliverance of Thomas Putman
 Junior

Joseph of John Putman junior
 Elizabeth of Mr. Walcot

17 Robart of Mr. Kichin
 Ruth of Mr. Daniel Eps
 George of Mr. Hauthorne

29 John of Mrs. Hitty Atwater

Aug. Peter { of P. Cheevers
 Samuel }

Samuel of Mrs. Barton
 Tarton of [Benjamin] Putman
 Sara of Janet Rixe

Sept. Elizabeth Nurse at age
 Benjamin of Joseph Phipeny
 Elizabeth of Benjamin Pitman
 Margaret of Deliverance Parkman

Oct. Bartholmew of John Putman
 [Abigail] of Benjamin Wilkins
 Elizabeth { of J. and Deborah
 John { Masters
 2 children of Charles Steward

[39]

Nov. Elizabeth } of Mary Lambert
 Mary } Eliot¹
 Daniel }

Dec. Elizabeth }
 Samuel }
 Sarah } of Elizabeth Nurse
 Jonathan }
 Joseph }
 Benjamin }
 Hannah }

John of Nehemia Willowby

Feb. 6 Atwood of Samuel Pitman
 Gideon of Samuel Woodwell

Sarah { of Jo. Pickering
 John }

1689

Mar. Benjamin of Thomas Bedel
 Thomas of Samuel Golthalt
 Estick of Edward Bush
 Benjamin of H. Striker

Apr. Mary }
 Elizabeth } of Sister Small
 John }
 Hannah }
 Anna }
 Stephen }
 Rachel }

May Banjamine of [John] Herbert
 John of John Southrick
 Edward of Ely Giles
 Margaret of Mary (Will)² Smith
 Elizabeth of David Phipeny
 Thomas of Thomas³ Wesgate

Mary { of Eli Keisar
 Elizabeth }

Ann of Benjamin Geerish
 June Debora of John Tomkins
 Christian of Samuel Dutch
 Hanna Stone baptized at age

July Elizabeth of Mr. Hauthorn

14 David of Jo. Maskall
 Magdalen of [Thomas]⁴ Elkin

¹Wheatland reads of same, VII, 127. The Lamberts were fishermen and mariners. Cf. Perley II, 236.

²I.e., William was the husband of Mary Smith.

³Struck over *Ingersol*.

⁴Torn.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- Joshua }
 Simon } of Rebecka Horne
 Bethia }
 Ruth }
- Sept. 28 William of Isrel Porter
 Jonathan of Mr. Jon. Corwin
 Isack of Jo. Macarta
 ——— of Francis Neal
- Oct. Thomas of ———
 Mary of Edward Putman
 Elizabeth of Thomas Flint
 Mary of John Putman Junior
 Hanna of Sister Priest
 Isaack of Daniel Andrews
- Nov. 10 William }
 Welthan } of Sister Walter
 Thomas }
 Elizabeth }
- 23 Samuel of Mrs. Sewall
 Bethia of R. Kitchin
 Elizabeth of Jo. Ropes
 Verin of Mr. T. Lindall
 Hannah of Jo. Collins
- Feb. 15 Priscilla Arthur }
 Mary Bowdish } at age
 Marget Grafton at age
- 23 Samuel Phillips of Sister Phillips
 Mary Norrice }
 Ruth Southrick } at age
 Hanna Gardner }
- 1690
 Mar. Mary Pummery }
 Elizabeth Peters } at age
 Mary Webb }
 William of Phillip English
 Thomas of Abr[aham] Cole
- Apr. 13 Perez }
 Mary } of Mary Web
 David }
- 20 Mary }
 Elizabeth }
 Rachel }
 John } of Mary Pummery
 Susanna }
 Ruth }
- 27 Charls of Charls Steward
 David of David Foster
- May 1 Tabitha Alford, at age
 William of W. Henfield
 Benjamin Mayfield, at age
 Jonathan of Susan Sibley
- June 1 Eliz[abeth] }
 Eu[nice] } Turner¹
 F[reestone] }
- [40]
- June 8 Seeth of William Andrews
 Lydia of John Leech
 Rachel }
 Sarah } of [Hugh]² Jones
 Hugh }
 Richard of Richard Peters
 Benjamin of Joseph Mazury
- July 6 Mary }
 Edward } of Edward Norris
 ——— of John Stacy
 Mary of ——— French
- 13 Abigail Birch at age
- Aug. 3 Robard of W. Lord
- 10 Mary Serle, at age
 Sarey }
 Margery } Pasco at age
- 17 Robart of Hanna Stone
- Sept. ——— of Henry Wilks
- 7 Abigail of Job. Swinerton
 Dorcas Carver, at age
- 21 Abigail of ——— Lockyer
- Oct. 19 Mary }
 Abigail } of Hugh Pasco
 Elizabeth }
 John }
 Ester of Thomas Darby

¹Badly worn in original. *Salem Vital Records*, II, 366, have Elizabeth, born 1673, Eunice born 1675, and Freestone born 1677, children of John and Elizabeth (Roberts) Turner.

²Cf. Perley II, 284.

26 Ebenezer of Ez [*ekiel*] Waters
 Mary of ——— Flendor
 Mary } of Hanna Homes
 George }

Nov. 9 Preserved of [*Thomas*]¹ Maskal
 Samuel of Mr. Hawthorn

Dec. Herbert of Mr. Jon. Corwin

Jan. Samuel of Benjamin Mayfield
 Jonathan of John Maskall

1691

Mar. Mary Catin² at age
 and her three children
 Susanna, Mary, Daniel Kaiton

Apr. Margaret of Mr. Eps
 Isack of Bethia Hacker
 Preserved of Daniel Lambert
 Priscilla of William Stacy
 George of Mrs. Burrowes

May Sara of [*David*]³ Phipeny
 Mary of Peter Osgood

June 1 John }
 William } of [*Thomas Haines*]⁴
 Sarah }
 Joseph }
 Benjamin }

James of Eliezer Giles
 Jonathan of David Foster
 William of William Bowdish

July Samuel of Sister Small
 Susanna of William Gidny

Aug. Jehodan of Abigail Walk

Sept. Seeth of Joseph Hardy
 Grafton of Edward February⁵
 Samuel of Joseph Horne
 Judith Pudny at age
 Hanna of Jo. Herbert

Oct. 6 Joseph of Jo. Sutherick
 Hanna of Hugh Pasco
 Susanna of Captain Steven Sewell
 [*Jehodan*]⁶ of Jehodan Ward
 Abigail Day at age

Nov. Susanna of Susanna Maston

Dec. Elizabeth of ——— Stevens
 Mary Chevarty, at age

Jan. Benjamin of Samuel Woodwell
 Mary } of Mr. Chevarty
 Richard }

Mary of Isak Foot

Mar. [*Abigail*]⁷ of [*Judith*]⁷ Pudny
 ——— of Bethia Peters

1692

Apr. Mary of Joseph Putman
 Joseph of Daniel Lambert
 John of Thomas Bedel
 Mary } of Samuel and Mary Elson
 Samuel }
 Sarah }

Thomas of Thomas Mascall
 Elizabeth of Edward Norris
 Robart } of Samuel Prince
 William }

May Ebenezer of [*William*]⁸ Gill
 William of Jonathan Egar
 Joseph of Mr. Hawthorn

June Elizabeth of Daniel Web
 Thomas of Thomas Hayns

July Henry of Sister Elkins

Aug. Elizabeth of Mr. Collins

Sept. Abigail of Thomas Flint
 Ruth of John Leech
 William of William Smith

Oct. Martha of Ezekiel Waters
 Joseph of G. Taply

¹Cf. Perley II, 178.

²Or *Caton*. Cf. Perley III, 166.

³Cf. Perley II, 328.

⁴Manuscript torn. Wheatland, VII, 128 added *Hanna* to children and read of *Harris* (*partly obliterated in original*). Emmerton reads *Hains*. XV, 83. Cf. Perley I, 433; III, 74.

⁵I.e., *Feveryear*. Cf. Perley III, 155.

⁶Cf. Perley III, 235.

⁷Later hand.

⁸*Salem Vital Records*, I, 355.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

	Hanna of Job Swinnerton	Nov.	Skelton	} of Nathan Felton Junior
	Philip of ——— Cheverly		John	
	Hanna of Mr. Willowby		Ebenezer	
	Jonathan of Steven Sewall		Jonathan	
			Daniel	
[41]			Margaret	
1693				
Mar.	Peter of Peter Osgood	Dec.	John Macmallon at age	
Apr.	Elizabeth Cook at age		Elizabeth Cash at age	
	Jonathan of Samuel Woodall	Jan.	Elizabeth Taply at age	
	Jonathan of [George] ¹ Felt	Feb.	Elizabeth Dickinson at age	
May	Hanna Ashby at age		Priscilla of Ezekiel Waters	
	Elizabeth Peas at age		Thomas of James Rixe	
	Bethiah Peas at age		Mary of Joseph Horn	
	John of Jehodan Ward			
	Ruth of Samuel Beach	1694		
June	Susanna	Apr. 1	Benjamin of Benjamin Horne	
	John		Abigail of Abigail Walke	
	Hanna		Selah of Mary Keiton	
	Margret		Abigail of Abigail French	
	Elizabeth		Jane of Captain Sewall	
	John of Hannah Ashby		Mary of [William] ⁴ Bowdish	
June	Charles		Mary	} of [John] ⁵ Tapley
	Jeremiah		Samuel	
	Josiah		Benjamin	
	Sarah of John Southerick ²	May	Abel Gardner at age	
	Estwick of Edward Bush		Ebenezer of George Hacker	
	Bartholmew of Georg Corwin		Samuel of Benjamin Mayfield	
July	James of John Foster		Ruth of John Felton	
	Samuel of David Foster		Margaret of W[illiam] Gidny	
Aug.	Samuel of William Andrews	June	Samuel of Samuel Prince	
	Elizabeth of John Crode		Mary	} of Jo. Loder
Sept.	John		John	
	Hanna		William	
	Rachel of Samuel Phipeny		Nicholas	
	William of William Maston		Martha Dutch, Junior at age	
	Elizabeth of Samuel West	Sept.	Mary of Samuel Phillips	
	Benjamin of Israel Porter ³		Sarah of Sara Michel	
	Jonathan of John Horne			

¹Illegible in manuscript but *Salem Vital Records*, I, 294, have Jonathan son of George and Hanna, born March 21, 1693.

²Wheatland erroneously has *Conkline?* VII, 168.

³Wheatland erroneously read *Foster*. VII, 169.

⁴*Salem Vital Records*, I, 104.

⁵Cf. Perley III, 25.

Bridget }
 Samuel } of Abigail Smith
 Benjamin }
 Sara }
 Samuel } of Daniel Lambert
 Rachel }
 Joshua of Joshua Grafton
 Samuel of Eli Giles
 _____ of _____ Wilson
 Ruth of Mr. Jo. Hawthorne
 Abigail of Benjamin Ashby
 Benjamin of Edward February
 Mary of Thomas Flint
 Elizabeth of John Ward
 Dec. Elizabeth of John Herbert
 Hanna wife of W. Becket at age
 Thomas of Abigail Smith
 Benjamin of William Maston
 Jan. Mehitabel of John Maskal
 Martha Robinson at age
 Feb. James of Edward Norrice

1695

Mar. John of Deacon Gerrish
 Simon of William Stacy
 Ruth of Thomas Maskal
 John }
 Hanna } of William Becket
 Margrit }
 William }
 Mary }
 John of George and Sara Mitchel
 Apr. Ebenezer of Richard Peters
 Elizabeth of Samuel Woodwell
 May John of Samuel West
 Mehitabel of Captain Sewal
 Hanna of David Foster¹
 Sarah of Stephen Small
 Hanna of Joseph Sibly
 June Marget of Hugh Pasco
 Sara of Sarah Hadlock

1695

June 23 James }
 Sarah } of Mehitabel Fountain
 Mehitabel }
 Peter }
 John }
 30 Mary } of Mary Gale
 Samuel }
 July 21 Grove Hirst at age
 Esther of Debora Mechum
 Aug. 11 Rebecka Gillingham at age
 18 Rebeca } of James Gillingham
 Hanna }
 Mary } of Francis Ellis
 Sarah }
 Thomas }
 Francis }
 25 John of John Croad
 Sarah of Philip Hill
 John of Thomas Beadle
 John of John Southwick
 Oct. Samuel of Peter Osgood
 Nov. 24 Anna Stevens at age
 Dec. 8 Joseph of John Pickering
 15 Mary wife of Benjamin Pickerman
 Junior at age
 Feb. 9 Daniel of Ezeckiel Waters
 Benjamin of John Masters

1696

Mar. 8 Lydia of James Rix
 Freke² of Mr. Josiah Woolcot
 James of James Gillingham
 John of Mathew Barton
 Mary of John Collins
 May 3 Daniel } of Daniel Bacon Junior
 Sarah }
 Benjamin }
 Robart of Oliver Elkins
 24 George of Elizabeth Booth
 William of widow Candish³
 Elizabeth of Joseph Putnam
 Margaret of Daniel Web

[42]

¹Wheatland erroneously reads *Felton*. VII, 170.

²Wheatland reads *Treet* but the wife of Josiah was Mary Freke. VII, 170. Cf. Perley III, 192.

³I.e., *Candidge*. Cf. Perley III, 224.

- June 7 Sarah Ross at age
Elizabeth of Samuel Felt
Ruth of John Foster
- 14 Elizabeth }
Ezeckiel }
Samuel } of Hanna Ganet
Philip }
John }
Hanna }
- 21 Susannah of Daniel Bacon Junior
- 28 Elizabeth of Mr. John Higginson
Tertius
- Aug. 1 Elizabeth of Elizabeth Nicols
Judah Mackintire } both at age
Joanna Shaw }
- Sept. 6 Ruth of Samuel Phillips
Daniel of Daniel Mackentire
Elizabeth of William Shaw Junior
- 27 Samuel of Abel Gardner
Margery of Sarah Haddock
Sarah of Mr. Bowditch
William } of Mr. William Gidny
Jonathan }
- John of John Follet
Margaret wife of John Harris
- Nov. 21 Elizabeth of _____¹
Thomas of _____
Jonathan of William Andrew
- Jan. Recompence of John Orn
William of William Murrey
Joseph of Samuel Phipen
Elizabeth of Mary Keiton
- Feb. 28 Benjamin of Benjamin Marston
1697
Jemina of George Felt
- Mar. 14 Ruth of Deacon Marston
Abigail of Samuel Williams
Ruth of John Follet
Hanna of Henry Holton of the
village
Benjamin of William Becket
Elizabeth of Jeremiah Meachum
- Apr. 25 Thomas of John Croad
- May 9 Dorothee Lord } at age
Mary Parsons }
Jonathan of Hugh Pasco
- 16 Samuel of Susanna Sibly
Sarah of Mr. Nathaniel Gidny
Susana of John Felton
Judah of Daniel Mackentire
William of William Shaw Junior
- 30 Mary wife of Mr. Lindol at age
Mary of John Maston Junior
- June 6 Peter of Peter Ausgood
Patience of John Foster
Elizabeth of David Foster
- 13 Elizabeth Hurst at age
- 20 Sarah of Joshua Grafton
- 27 Thomas of Mr. Josiah Wolcot
Eunice of Daniel Collins
Aaron of Aaron Misservy
- July 4 Archelaus of James Putnam
John of Joseph Whipple
Mary of John Hutchison
- 11 James of Thomas Maskal
- 25 Mary of John and Mary Smith
- Aug. Lidia of Gilbert Taply Junior
Patience of Mathew Barton
- 8 Abigail } of Nathaniel
Joseph }
Jonathan } Beedle Senior
Daniel }
- Sept. Jonathan of Samuel Webb
Elizabeth of Lewis Hunt
Elizabeth of John Loader
Mary of Richard Peters
- 19 Benjamin of James Gillingham
- Oct. 10 Hanna } of Benjamin
Benjamin }
Bethia } Hutchinson
- 17 Hanna of Captain Sewal
- Nov. 14 Daniel of Benjamin Putnam of the
village
Mary wife of Samuel Foot at age
Isaack son of Samuel and Mary Foot
Hanna Harvy at age

¹Manuscript badly worn. Wheatland reads *Eliz. of, Thomas of (illegible in the original)*
Captain Swett. VII, 171. Emmerton reads "*Elizabeth of Captain Sewal.*" XV, 83.

	Francis of John Masters		
21	David of Samuel Woodwell		1699
	Gerard of John Loader	Mar. 5	Elizabeth of Samuel Phillips
Dec. 12	Mary Broadway at age		Joseph of Philip Gavet
Jan. 16	John of John Higginson Tertius	26	Increase of Jeremia Gatchel
	Debora Bly at age	Apr.	Sarah wife of John Carter at age
	Hanna of Mr. William Pickering		Sarah of John Carter at age
1698			Mary } of John Carter
Mar.	Samuel of Samuel Flint		Martha } of John Carter
	Sarah wife of John Williams		Mathew } of Daniel Grant
[43]			Daniel } of Daniel Grant
20	David of John Horn		James } of Daniel Grant
	Lydia of John Pickering		Benjamin of John Ward
27	Batholomew of Mr. William Gid-		Mary of James Rix
	ney		Daniel of Samuel West
	Elizabeth of Daniel Bacon Junior		———— of Jeremia Mechum
Aug. 10	John of Edward Norrice		James Smith at age
	Hanna Negro woman of Mr. Gard-		Hannah of Benjamin Ropes
	ner	14	Ruth of Mr. John Croad
17	Isaack of Isaack Fitz		John of George Felt
June 5	Samuel of Samuel Felt	21	Benjamin of Joseph Allin
12	Mary Robinson, wife of Samuel		Mary of Samuel Golthwait Junior
	Robinson Junior		Hanna of William Pickerin
26	John of Deacon Gerrish		Joseph of John Follet
	Sarah of Joseph Putnam	June 11	Robert of Mr. Kitchen
	Jonathan of Abel Gardiner		John of Lewis Hunt
	Eleazer of Eleazer Giles	25	Thomas { of Widow Thomas
	Elizabeth of Mr. William Andrew		William { Jiggles, Junior
Aug. 7	Mehitabel of Mr. Wolcot		William of Samuel Robinson Junior
	Thomas of Captain Bowdish	Aug. 20	Benjamin of John Maskal
14	Sarah of Sarah Hinksman	Sept. 17	John of Mr. Benjamin Marston
Sept. 10	Preserved of John Collins		Joseph of Daniel Foster
	Elizabeth of Philip Hill	24	Abigail of Nathaniel Felton Junior
17	Mary of Captain Sewal		Elizabeth of Francis Ellis
Nov. 6	Hannah of John Southwick		Nathaniel of John Masters at age
27	Elizabeth of Abigail French	Oct. 29	Mitchell of Major St [<i>ephen</i>] Sewal
Jan. 15	Martha of James Gillingham		Mary wife of Robert Moulton at age
27	Rebeckah of Thomas Flint		Richard of Mr. John Emerson, cl. ¹
Feb. 12	William of Captain John Brown		Nathaniel of John Ropes being about
	John of Benjamin Pitman Junior		5 years old when baptized
10	John of Samuel Prince	19	Eunice of Deacon Gerrish
26	Freestone of Colonel Hathorn		Joshua of Miles Ward
			Gilbert of Gilbert Taply, Junior

¹I.e., *Clericus*. Rev. John Emerson (1654-1712), Harvard College, 1689; was schoolmaster in Salem from 1699 to 1712.

- 25 Martha wife of Richard Waters at age
Hannah of Richard Waters
- Dec. 31 Hannah of James Brown
- Jan. 14 Mary of Mr. Benjamin Brown
- Feb. 11 Samuel of Mr. John Higginson Ter-
tius
Henry of Remember Cocks
- 18 John of Daniel Keiton
- 1700
- Mar. 9 Mary wife of Samuel Golthwait at
age
- 31 John of Mr. Walter Price
Samuel of Samuel Williams
William of Joseph Sibly
- Apr. 14 Daniel of Edward Wells
James of Hugh Pasco
- 28 Sarah of John Maston, Junior
Daniel of John Loader
- May 19 Mary of Samuel Howard
Elizabeth of Thomas Darlin
- 26 Rebecka of Isaac Fitz
Joseph of Samuel Felt
- June 2 Elizabeth of William Becket
- 16 Ruth of Mr. Habakkuk Gardiner
Mary } of Mr. Lewis Hunt
Lewis }
- 23 John of Mr. Peter Osgood
- July 7 John of Daniel Bacon, Junior
- 14 Josiah of Mr. Josiah Woolcot
Benjamin of Benjamin English
——— of James Gillingham
William of Mr. William Pickering
- Aug. 11 Priscilla of John Smith
- 18 Edward of Mr. Robert Kitchen
- Sept. 1 Elizabeth of William Maston
Priscilla of Mrs. Hanna Grafton
Mary of Mr. Edmund Batter
Susanna of John Herbert
- 22 Mary of Mr. Habbukuk Gardner
John of John Allin of Beverly
- 29 Theophilus of Mr. John Pickering
- Oct. 6 Benjamin of Mr. Benjamin Lynde
Hanna of Elizabeth Moses
- 13 Joseph of Captain Bowdish
- 20 Joseph of Thomas Maskal
- Nov. 10 Mercy Eliot at age
Sarah of Samuel Gale
Mathew of Walter Shaw of Beverly
John of John Tuck of Beverly
Samuel of Samuel Horn
- Feb. 2 Sarah of Thomas Flint
- 1701 Abiel of Edward Norrice deceased
- Mar. 9 Benjamin of Benjamin Ropes
Mary of John Croad
John of John Smith
- Apr. 13 Ruth of Samuel Golthwait
- 27 Benjamin of Colonel Hawthorn
Sarah of Moses Eburn at age
Abigail of Henry Harvey at age
Margart of Jeremiah Mechum
William of Aaron Misservy
- May 25 Abigail of John Ward
Sarah of John Collins
- June 1 John of Joseph Allin
- 8 Elizabeth of Mr. Abel Gardner
Elizabeth of John Smith
- 15 Elizabeth of Mr. Benjamin Marston
Hanna of Mr. William Gidny
- [44]
- 1701
- June 22 John of Mr. Samuel Philips
Joseph, John of John Best Junior
Mary of Samuel Waters
- June 29 Lydia of Deacon Gerrish
- July 20 Richard of Richard Waters
Joseph of Samuel Felt
Anna of John Andrews at age
Elizabeth of Mr. Samuel Ruck
- Aug. 10 William of Mr. Lewis Hunt
- 17 Nathaniel of Samuel Williams
- 24 Margaret } of Ebenezer Lambert
Mary }
Ebenezer }
- 31 Elizabeth of James Rix
- Sept. 7 Lydia of Widow Boston
Elizabeth of William Taply
- 14 Lydia of Robert Hill
- 21 Samuel of Sarah Peach
- 28 Samuel of Nathaniel Felton Junior
- Oct. 5 Elizabeth of Mr. Batter

- | | | | | |
|--------|---|---------|--------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 12 | Lydia of David Foster | June 7 | Hanna | } of Peter Hinderson |
| 26 | Henry of Major Sewall | | Mary | |
| Nov. 2 | Elizabeth Trask at age | | Peter | |
| | Sarah of Captain John Brown | | John | |
| | Deborah of John Masters | | Sara | |
| 9 | Deliverance of [<i>Humphrey</i>] ¹ | | Daniel | |
| | French | | | |
| | Benjamin of John Southwick | 14 | Elizabeth of Daniel Grant | |
| Jan. 4 | William of Mr. Ellis | | Thomas of Robert Willis | |
| | Joseph of Mr. Habbukuk Gardner | 21 | Sarah Flint at age | |
| | Mary of James ² Brown | 28 | Ebenezer of Samuel Gale | |
| Feb. 2 | Bonfield of George Felt | July 5 | Hanna of Nathaniel Beadle Junior | |
| | 22 Spencer of Daniel Bacon Junior | | Samuel of Mr. Samuel Gidney | |
| 1702 | | | Samuel of Sarah Osburn | |
| Mar. 1 | James of Mr. William Pickering | July 12 | Captain John Turner at age | |
| 8 | John of Thomas Darling | | Elizabeth wife of Joseph Dean at age | |
| 15 | Samuel Ingersol at age | | Sarah Hunlock at age | |
| | Elizabeth of Samuel Ingersol | 19 | John | } of John Waters Junior |
| 29 | William of Mr. Walter Price | | Mary | |
| | Susanna of Mathew Barton | | Sary | |
| Apr. 5 | Richard Prince Junior at age | Aug. 2 | Ruth of David Flint | |
| | Hanna Hinderson wife of P[eter] | | Esther of John Maskal, Tertius de- | |
| | H[inderson] at age | | ceased | |
| | Mary Eger daughter of Jonathan | | Deborah wife of Thomas Lee at age | |
| | Eyer at age | | Martha of Thomas Lee | |
| | Mary of Philip Hill | | John of Captain Turner | |
| 19 | Mehitabel of Mr. Parkman at age | | Benjamin of Thomas Ives deceased | |
| | Mary wife of John Waters Junior at | | John of Elizabeth White | |
| | age | | Abigail of Elizabeth White | |
| | Abigail of L. ³ Neal at age | 30 | ——— of Jonathan Archer | |
| 26 | Abigail of John Allin at age | Sept. 6 | Nathaniel of Samuel Webb | |
| | Mary of Samuel Foot | 13 | John of Mr. Josiah Wolcot | |
| | ——— of Joseph English | 27 | Mary | } of John Legro |
| | | | Joseph | |
| May 17 | William of James Gillingham | Oct. 4 | Sarah of Samuel & Elizabeth Phippan | |
| 24 | Lydea of John Carter | 11 | Bethia of Isaack Fitz | |
| 31 | Hana | | Elizabeth of Samuel Howard | |
| | Sarah | 18 | Mary of Aaron Misservy | |
| | Martha | Nov. 8 | Mehitabel of Eliazar Giles | |
| | Lydia of Lieutenant [<i>Jeremiah</i>] | | John of Mr. Samuel Leech | |
| | Neal at age | Dec. 20 | Steven of Major Sewal | |
| | | | Sarah Gusten at age | |

¹Cf. Perley III, 239.

²Wheatland reads *Samuel*. VII, 175. This is probably Mary Brown who married Samuel King on August 20, 1724. Emmerton reads *James*. XV, 83.

³*Lieutenant Jeremiah Neale*. Cf. Perley II, 122-123.

- Nov. 5 Rachel of David Foster
 12 Dorcas Maybee at age
 19 Daniel of Samuel King
 Dec. 24 Robert of Thomas Elkins
 31 Ruth of John Prat
 John of Sarah Inglesbee
 Feb. 18 Sarah of Jacob Willard
 1705
 April 1 Elizabeth of Mr. Josiah Wolcot
 20 Mary of Mr. Habbakuk Gardiner
 May 6 Hanna of Samuel Howard
 July 1 Deborah of Jeremiah Meechum
 Samuel of Richard Waters
 15 Abiel of Samuel Phippen
 Mercy of Joseph English
 Abigail of Jonathan Archer
 22 Benjamin of George Felt
 John of Philip Hill
 Aug. James of Captain Osgood
 Joseph of Doctor Wheeler
 12 Abigail of Joseph Allin
 26 Mary of Mr. Edmund Batter
 Lois of Peter Hinderson
 Sept. 2 Joseph of Richard Prince
 23 Mary } twins of Joseph Dean
 Elizabeth }
 30 Michel of Michel Bacon
 Oct. 14 Thomas of Abel Gardiner
 Samuel of Mr. Samuel Ruck
 Elizabeth of Mr. John Gardiner
 Malachi of Nathaniel Felton Junior
 Isaack of John Southerick
 Nov. Eunice of Mr. John Pickering
 Samuel } of Benjamin Verry
 Ruth }
 Joseph }
 Benjamin }
 Sarah of Jonathan Bly
 Dec. 16 Mary of Mr. Samuel Lindol born
 December 14, Baptized 16
 30 Francis of Mr. Nathaniel Higginson
 Eleazar of Eleazar Moses
 Jan. 13 John of Henry West
 27 Ruth of Mr. Lewis Hunt
 Mar. 10 Abigail of Captain Benjamin Pitman
 Junior
 1706
 Apr. 14 Samuel of Samuel Ingersol
 21 Moses of John Masters
 May 21 Eunice of Ebenezer Lambert
 Martha } of [Benjamin] Hooper
 Mary } at age
 June 9 Charles King } at age
 Susannah Packer }
 16 Adoniram of Adoniram Collins
 23 Elizabeth of Mr. Ellis
 Martha of John Loader
 July 14 Mary of Mr. Josiah Wolcot
 Hanna of Hanna Collins
 28 Benjamin of Captain John Brown
 William of Mr. Francis Willoghby
 Aug. 4 Mehittabel of Samuel Golthwait
 11 Patience of Mr. Samuel Phillips
 18 Mary of John Ward
 Thomas of Benjamin Ropes
 Eunice of John Waters
 25 Abiel of Susanna Misservee
 Sept. 1 John Jacobs at age
 Abigail of John Jacobs
 15 Mary Tarzin¹ at age
 Zebulon of Joseph Allin
 Mrs. Margret Palfery at age
 Elizabeth } of Mr. Palfrey
 Susanna }
 John of John Pain
 Oct. 7 Hanna wife of William King at age
 Hilda of David Flint
 Nov. 3 Margert } Palfrey at age
 Anstice }
 Mary of Captain Turner
 Samuel of James Brown
 Mary of John Woodwell
 10 John of Thomas Elkins
 Elizabeth of Samuel West
 17 Hanna wife of Daniel Foster² at age
 Abigail of David Foster

¹Wheatland reads *Tarrin*. VII, 179.

²Wheatland VII, 179, questions but cf. Perley II, 324.

- 24 Samuel of Samuel Howard
- Jan. 12 Abigail of Mr. Samuel Ruck
Hanna of John Prat
- Feb. 9 Martha of Mr. Edmund Batter
16 John of Mr. John Gardner
- 1707
- Mar. 10 Elizabeth of John Smith Carpenter
23 Benjamin of Samuel King
30 Martha of Martha Barton
- Apr. 13 Eunice of Captain Bowditch
Elizabeth of Samuel Foot
- [46]
- Mary of Nathaniel Felton Junior
- May 4 James Hooper at age
11 Robert of Hanna Herbert
13 James of John Loder
William of James Gillingham
- Jun. 22 Margaret of Michel Bacon
Eunice of John Proctor
29 Humphry of French at age
- July 6 Mary of Humphry French
13 John of Miles Ward
Mehitabel of Nathaniel Waters
17 William of Mr. William Gidney
24 Ezechiel of Ezechiel Goldthwait
Mercy of Richard Waters
Sarah of Elizabeth Jeoffred
George of Charles Burroughs
Hanna of Mr. Richard Sims
- Sept. 7 Samuel of Jonathan Archer
William of Peter Hinderson
14 John of John Carter
Sarah of Isaack Fits
28 Henry of Mr. John Higginson Ter-
tius
Elizabeth of Jonathan Bly
- Oct. 5 Israel of Mr. Abel Gardiner
Samuel of Samuel Waters
- May Mary of Richard Pamur
Abigail of Brother Kettle
Elizabeth of William Herbert
- Feb. 22 Elizabeth of Mr. Samuel Vial
- 1708
- Abigail of Joshua Beans
- Apr. 4 Elizabeth of Joseph Small
Susanna of Richard Star
- 11 Samuel of Major Samuel Brown
Benjamin of Major Steven Sewall
Richard of Richard Prince
James of Adoniram Collins
John of John Punchin
Mary of Richard Darby
Mary of Samuel Ingersol
Mary of Samuel Cook
Hanna of Mr. William Pickering
Mary of John Mechum
- July 19 Robert of Joshua Beans
25 John of John Jacobs
- Aug. 1 Thomas of Samuel Golthwait
15 Henry of Henry West
22 Abigail wife of Thomas Massy
Elizabeth }
Mary } of Obed Carter
Obed }
- Eunice of John Collins
- Sept. 19 Rebecka wife of Ebenezer Glover at
age
Margret of Ebenezer Glover
John of Christopher Battin
- Oct. 10 Benjamin of Mathew Barton
17 Mehitabel of Mr. Nathaniel Morton
[John]¹ of Christopher Bavage
31 Martha of Mr. Edmund Batter
Mary of Mr. Nathaniel Higginson
- Nov. 7 Elizabeth of John Kellum at age
Ebenezer of Captain John Gardiner
21 Elizabeth of Elizabeth Frost
Abigail of Mr. William Furnex
Mary of Mr. Thomas Phippen
- Jan. 2 Margrit of Steven Chapman
Samuel of Cockeril Reeves
- Feb. 20 Robert of Samuel Howard
27 Samuel of Mr. Samuel Vial
Sarah of Mr. Joseph Hardy
Michael of Michael Bacon

¹Probably John, son of Christopher and Lydia (Marston) Babbidge, born September 7, 1707. Perley II, 313.

- 1709
- Mar. 27 Bethia of Mr. Francis Willoughby
- Apr. 17 Jonathan of Mr. Joseph Andrews
- May 1 Susanna of Mr. John Prat
- 8 William of Major Samuel Brown
- 22 Joseph of Joseph Dean
Jonathan of Jonathan Bly
- 29 Nathaniel of Nathaniel Waters
- June 5 Prudence Witheridge at age
- 12 John of Major Turner
Abigail of John Waters
- 19 George of Benjamin Ropes
Mary of William Tapley
- July 3 Benjamin of Ebenezer Lambert
- 10 Ebenezer of Richard Waters
- Aug. 7 Daniel of Captain Bowditch
Elizabeth of Nathaniel Felton Junior
- 21 Benjamin of William Herbert
- 28 Sara }
John } of Thomas Massey
Abigail }
Elizabeth }
- Sept. 4 Malachi of Samuel Foot
- 18 John of John Rogers Junior
- Oct. 30 John of Capt. John Browne
- Nov. 13 Joanna }
George } of William Shaw
Jonathan }
Mehitabel }
- Dec. Sarah of William Ropes at age
Elizabeth of John Webb
Abigail of Humphry French
- 25 Daniel of Captain John Gardiner
- Jan. 1 Jonathan of James Gillingham
Henry of Eleazar Moses
- 22 Lydia of Christopher Bavage Junior
- Feb. 5 Sarah of Captain Price
- 12 William of William Furnex
- 26 Thomas Field at age
Mary of Thomas Field
- 1710
- Mar. 5 Eunice of Captain Habakuk Gardiner
- Apr. 2 Hanna of Ebenezer Glover
- 9 Ebenezer of Miles Ward
John of John Gyles
- 16 Samuel of John Smith Carpenter
Mary wido of William Brown at age
- Mary }
Jane } of Mary Brown
Margrit }
Katherine }
- Elizabeth of John Collier deceased
at age
John of Elizabeth Collier
- 23 Nathaniel of Jonathan Archer
- 30 John of John Battin
- May 7 Mary of Samuel Prince
- 14 Daniel Abbot at age
Elizabeth Hunlock at age
Lydia of Samuel Goldthwait
Mary of James and Mary Collin
Sarah of Thomas and Sarah Foot
- Mary }
Henry } of John Pain
- 21 Sarah of Mr. Abel Gardiner
- 28 James of Mr. James Lindol
- June 4 Nathaniel of Samuel King
- Jeremia }
Lydia } of Jeremiah Neal Junior
- 5 Elizabeth of Mr. John Gerrish
Jemima of Benjamin Verry
- July 2 Edward of John Masters
Sarah of Richard Pamer
- [47]
- 1710
- July 9 John of Adoniram Collins
- 16 Jonathan of Samuel Webb
Hannah of Samuel Foot
- Aug. 6 Mary of Christopher Battin
John of Obed Carter deceased
- 13 Peter }
Lydia } of Peter Chevers deceased
Samuel }
- 20 Mary of Thomas Elkins
- Sept. 3 Mary }
John } of Elizabeth Carill
- Oct. 1 Hanna of Mr. Hunt
- 29 Samuel of Jacob Willard
Josiah of Josiah Willard

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- Nov. 12 Abigail } of Abigail Allin at age
Anna }
Benjamin of Mr. Vial
- 19 Samuel of Timothy Orne
Elizabeth of Henry West
- 26 Susanna }
John } of Mr. John Cabot
Hester }
Mary }
- Dec. 3 Jonathan of John Ropes
Mary Pinson at age
- 10 Samuel of Samuel Cook
- 24 William of Cockeril Reeves
- Jan. 7 Samuel of Samuel Phippin Junior
- 29 Thomas of Mr. Thomas Phippen
- Feb. 11 Mercy of Jonathan Pickerin } all 3
Margert } of Nathaniel } at age
Elizabeth } Silsby }
- 25 Daniel of Jeremia Rogers at age
- 1711
- Mar. 4 Martha of Joseph Hardy
Benjamin of Jonathan Bly
- 11 Anna of Mr. Cabot
- 15 Thomas of Mr. Palphry at age
Samuel of Doctor Gutman
Charles of Charles Burrows
Hanna of Nathaniel Ausgood
- Apr. 15 Elizabeth of John Phippen
Samuel of Michael Bacon
- 22 Anne of Benjamin Ropes
- May 13 Martha wife of Samuel Pope at age
Joseph Winslow her son at age
William } of William Beans,
Caleb } deceased
- 20 Veren of Mr. James Lindol
Sarah of Mr. Batter
Martha of Samuel Pope
Nathaniel of Joshua Beans
Lydia of John Pratt
- June 10 Sarah of Captain William Pickerin
John of Jeremiah Neal Junior
- 24 Nathaneel of Mr. Nathaneel Marston
- July 8 Sarah of Ebenezer Lambert
Nathaneel of Nathaneel Phippen
- 15 William of Captain John Brown
Mary of John Punchard
- 29 Preserved of Daniel Lambert
- Aug. 12 Hanna of Capt. John Gardner
Nathaneel of Nathaneel Felton
- 19 Abigail of Jonathan Archer
- 26 Mary of John Gyles
- Sept. 16 Hepsibah of Mr. Samuel Leech
- 23 Samuel of Lemon Beadle
Malachi of Malachi Foot
- 30 Mary of Richard Waters
- Oct. 7 Lydia wife of Samuel Ropes at age
Ebenezer of William Herbert
Benjamin of William Frost
- Nov. 4 Daniel of John Jacobs
William of William Taply
- 11 Daniel of William Furnex
- Dec. 9 John of Doctor Barton
Thomas } Driver both at age
Michael }
- 23 Mrs. Abigail Holloway at age
- 30 Dorothy of John Ropes
Lydia of Samuel Ropes
- Jan. 20 Samuel of Mr. Benjamin Pitman
- Feb. 10 Hanna of Thomas Ruck, deceased, at age
Jacob of Jacob Willard
- 24 Hanna wife of John Bacon¹ at age
Margret King
John of Richard Prince
- 1712
- 54 were Baptised
- Mar. 9 Susanna wife of Thomas Laskin at age
Mary } Lander at age
Hanna }
- 23 Isabel wife of Peter Laurence at age
- Mar. 30 Lois of Timothy Orn
David of James Gillingham
- Apr. 6 Elizabeth of Jonathan Felt
Elizabeth of Richard King
Sarah Archer wife of Stephen Archer
Sarah their daughter both at age
Ebenezer of Ebenezer Glover

¹Wheatland reads *Brown*. VII, 183, but cf. *Perley* III, 28.

- May 2 Sarah Searle at age
 Mary } of Sara Searle
 Joseph }
 Abigail wife of John Gray at age
 Robart of John Gray
 Hanna of Jeremiah Neal at age
- June Abigail of George Darlin
 22 Sarah Farr at age
 Sarah of Mr. James Lindol
 Charles of Ensign Samuel King
- July 20 Hanna }
 John } of John Bacon
 Tabitha }
 Hanna of Nathaneel Ausgood
 Sara of Nathanael Waters
- Aug. 3 Elizabeth Neal at age
 John of John and Elizabeth Neal
 10 John of John Webb
 17 Anna of Mr. John Gerrish
 Henry of Ephraim Skerry
 Caleb of Joshua Beans
- Sept. 21 Hanna of William Frost
 Hanna of Thomas Field
 28 Martha of Mr. [*Edmund*]¹ Batter
 Mercy of Samuel Waters
- Oct. 5 Bethia of Mr. Willoughbee
 Thomas of Thomas Elkins
 19 Freek² of Mr. Wolcot
 Nathan of Mr. Thomas Phippen
 26 Mary of Henry West
 Benjamin of John Punchard
- Nov. 9 Hanna of Mr. Nathaniel Higginson
 Hanna of Samuel Stacy at age
- Dec. 7 William }
 John } of David Flint
 Joseph of Joseph Small
- Jan. 4 Samuel of Captain John Gardiner
 Bethia of George Deland
- [48]
- Jan. 11 *Elizabeth*³ of Captain William Pick-
 rin
- Anne of William Furnex
 William of Captain William Bow-
 ditch
 Elizabeth Ingols at age
 Seeth of Joseph Hardy
- 1713
 Mar. 8 Samuel of Mr. Josiah Willard
 22 Sarah of Michael Bacon
 Susanna of Cockriel Reves
 Apr. 20 Eunice of Major Turner
 May 10 Jonathan of the Rev. Mr. George
 Corwin
 Abel of Mr. Abel Gardiner
 Benjamin of Nathaniel Felton Junior
 17 Mercy of Mr. John Swinerton
 June 14 Abel Robinson at age
 Abel of Abel Robinson
 Lydia Cook at age
 Joseph of Samuel Phippen
 John of John Battin
 Mehitabel of Christopher Bavadge
 Margret of John Cabot
 June 21 Abigail of Mr. James Lindal
 Richard of Christopher Battin
 28 Margert of Nathaniel Phippen
 July 7 Samuel of Samuel Leech
 12 Charles, Mr. Maston's Negro at age
 19 Lydia of Doctor Gatman
 26 Elizabeth Pinson at age
 Maverick of Mr. John Prat
 Aug. 16 Kezia wife of Francis Proctor at age
 Lydia of Samuel Howard
 23 Susanna of Jonathan Bly
 30 Mary of Samuel Pope
 Ruth of Sarah Inglesby deceased
 Sept. 6 Seeth of Ebenezer Lambert
 13 Richard of Richard Darbee
 30 Thomas of Richard Downing
 Oct. 11 Rachel of John Phippen
 18 Thomas of Thomas Driver
 25 John of Bartholmew Brown at age
 Samuel of Eleazar Moses

¹Cf. *Salem Vital Records*, I, 78.²*Freke* in *Ibid.*, II, 439.³Later hand.

- Nov. 8 ——— of Adoniram Collins
- Dec. Lydia of Benjamin Ropes
- 27 John of Colonel Samuel Brown
- Jan. 24 Elizabeth of Captain Benjamin Pitman
- Feb. 14 Rebecka of Lemmon Beadle
- 21 Mehitabel, wife of Ebenezer Felton at age
- David of Ebenezer Felton
- Margret of Captain Hunt
- George of John Ropes Junior
- 28 Joseph of Captain John Brown
- 1714
- Mar. Nathaneel Pike at age
- 21 John of Ebenezer Glover
- 28 Hanna of Ephraim Skeery
- Apr. 11 Susanna of James Mackmillion
- 25 Robert of Robert Stone
- May 9 Elizabeth of Captain Price
- June 6 John of Ensign Samuel King
- Jonathan of Jeremiah Neal
- 13 Pasco of Samuel Foot
- 19 Elizabeth of Joshua Beans
- Abigail } of John Pain
- Jonathan } of John Pain
- July 11 Elizabeth } Simons both at age
- Sarah } Simons both at age
- Benjamin of Mr. Benjamin Gerrish
- Aug. 1 Mary of Samuel Leech
- 8 Sarah of Mr. John Gerrish
- 15 Joseph of Bartholmew Putnam
- Susanna of Clement English
- 29 Samuel of John Bacon
- Hanna of William Pike Junior
- Sept. 5 Nathaniel of Nathaniel Ausgood
- Samuel of Samuel Ropes
- Oct. 3 Elizabeth of Mr. Nathaniell Higginson
- Elizabeth of Joseph Allin
- 30 William of Mr. Benjamin Lynde
- Nov. 7 Elizabeth of Jacob Willard
- Jan. 2 Hannah of Hannah Bethel
- 9 Mary of George Dealand
- 23 Esther of Timothy Orne
- 30 Susanna wife of John Beckett Junior with two children Mary and Susanna
- Mary wife of James Hooper
- Judith of Henry West
- Feb. 6 Mary of James Hooper
- 20 Mr. Joseph Douglas and his Wife
- 1715
- Mar. 6 Priscilla widow of David Hilliard
- John of John Beckett, Junior
- 13 Elizabeth of James Hooper
- 20 Elizabeth of Thomas Marston, deceased — at age
- Daniel of Mr. Edmund Batter
- 21 Sarah the wife of Michael Driver
- David of David Flint
- Apr. 10 Samuel of Abel Robinson
- 17 William Bartol at age
- Richard Ropes at age
- Hannah of William Bartol
- John of John Stevens
- 24 Mary of Josiah Willard
- May 15 Sarah of Thomas Field
- 22 William Buttolph at age
- Benjamin of Benjamin Smith
- June 5 Mercy Douglas at age
- Amos Douglas at age
- Hannah
- Thomas
- Mary
- Elizabeth
- all children of Mr. Joseph Douglas
- 12 John of Nathaniel Marston
- Ann of William Furneax
- 19 Caleb of Capt. Benjamin Pickman
- 26 Elizabeth of Mr. John Cabot
- Ebenezer of Ebenezer Glover
- July 10 Mary the wife of John Meacham
- Benjamin of William Taply deceased
- 17 Susanna of Mikil Bacon
- Clement of Clement English
- 29 Christopher of Christopher Battin
- Aug. 4 Mary of Samuel Phippen Junior
- John of Malachi Foot
- William of Nathaniel Silsbee Junior

[49]

- 28 Ann of Samuel Derby
 Susanna
 Martha
 Christian
 John
 Hezekiah
- } children of
 John Legroe
- Sept. 4 Susanna of Robert Wood
 18 Mary of Samuel West Junior
 25 David of Nathaniel Phippen
 Margaret the wife of Thomas Beadle
 at age
 Margaret of Thomas Beadle
- Oct. 9 Mary of Dr. Barton
 Elizabeth Relict of Joseph Beadle at
 age with her children, viz:
 Jonathan
 Joseph
 Thomas
 Sarah
 David
- } Abigail of Edward Caryl
- 16 William of John Punchard
 23 Warwick Palfry at age
 Elizabeth of Cockeril Reeves
 30 Warwick of Warwick Palfry
 6-9 Abigail of John Grey
 13 Lydia Cook at age
 20 Robert of Major Jno. Turner
 Mary of Captain Benjamin Wood-
 bridge
 27 Jonathan of Richard Ropes
 4-10 John of Captain John Brown
 18 James of Samuel King
 Samuel of George Corwin
 25 Mary of Captain William Pickering
- Jan. Hannah of Jonathan Bly
 22 Mary Dean, Daughter of Thomas
 Dean at age
- Feb. 5 Benjamin of Christopher Babbidge
 Nathaniel of Nathaniel Pike
 12 Francis of Thomas Ellis
 Sarah of Samuel Hayward

- 19 Benjamin of Colonel Brown
 26 Jonathan Webb and Priscilla his wife
 at age

1716

- Mar. 4 Lydia Karkett junior at age
 Ammi of Samuel Swasye
 Priscilla of Jona Webb
- 11 Isaac Williams Junior at age
 Sarah Archer of Benjamin Archer
 deceased at age
- 18 Elizabeth Westgate at age
 25 Hannah of Richard Willard
 Steven fo Thomas Driver
- Apr. 1 John Mazury Junior at age
 John of John Mazury
 Ephraim of Ephraim Skerry
 8 George of Benjamin Ropes
 15 Timothy of Mr. James Lindal
 29 Isaac of Isaac Knap
- May 6 William of Mr. Joseph Hathorne
 20 Mary
 Lydia } of Joseph Henfield
- 27 Margaret of Steven Chapman
 Elizabeth of John Dolbear
- June 3 Sarah of John Pain
 17 Richard of Hanna the widow of
 Richard Symms
 24 William of Joshua Wytherill¹
 Mary of Robert Neal
- July 1 Temperance of Hannah the wife of
 Samuel Derby
 Samuel of John Neal
 8 William of Joshua Beans
 15 Joseph
 Mary } of Joseph Flint
 Philemon of Philemon Saunders
- 22 Mary of James Symonds Junior at
 age
 29 Mary of John Ropes Junior
- Aug. 5 Steven of Mr. John Higginson Jun-
 ior
 William of Mary the widow of Wil-
 liam Stacy Junior

¹Wheatland (VII, 225) reads *Coytherill*, but William, son of Joshua and Dinah (Ingalls) Witherell, was born June 12, 1716. Cf. Perley III, 410.

- 26 Martha of Martha the widow of
Richard Derby
Benjamin of Hannah the widow of
Jno. Bacon
Mary of Mary the widow of William
Becket Junior
- Sept. 9 Bethia of Mr. Timothy Lindall
Sarah of James Hooper
- Nov. 4 William of Samuel Luscum
11 Henry of Thomas Elkins
18 Barbara of Mr. Edmund Baker
Sarah of Mr. Joseph Douglas
Mercy of Benjamin Smith
- [50]
- Dec. 2 Elizabeth of Richard Prince
William of William Bartol
16 John of Nathaniel Osgood
30 Hannah of John Phippen
Jonathan of Jonathan Webb
- Jan. 6 Mary of John Legro
13 Martha Muzury alias Dutch at age
Edward of Edward Norrice
Sarah of Richard Ropes
27 Joseph of Joseph Henfield
- Feb. 10 John of Colonel Samuel Brown
Samuel of Mr. Richard Elvins
Hannah of Robert Neal
24 John of Mr. Samuel Ruck
1717
- Mar. 3 Mary of James Mac-mallon
10 Christian of John Becket Junior
17 John of John Bullock, *almost 6 years
old*¹
24 Mary Foxcroft at age
- Apr. 14 Hannah the wife of Isaac Hacker
Rebeckah of Ebenezer Glover
Hephzibah of Joseph Small
Lydia of Goerge Dealand
- 28 Benjamin of Benjamin Phippen
- May 26 Francis of Mr. John Cabot
- June 2 Jonathan of Malachy Foot
9 Ebenezer } of Ebenezer Lambert
Ezekiel }
Elizabeth of Steven Chapman
- 23 Thomas of Richard Downing
- 30 Timothy of Timothy Orne
Susanna of Samuel Pope
Margaret of Ephraim Skerry
- July 7 Martha of Richard Willard
William of John Webb
Samuel of Isaac Knap
14 Elizabeth of Joseph Flint
21 Eunice Pope at age
Hannah of Thomas Field
Jonathan of Jonathan Ashby
- 28 Elizabeth of Mr. Richard Pike
- Aug. 4 Rachel of Mr. Benjamin Pickman
William of Mr. Bartholmew Putnam
11 Rebecca Frost at age
Mascol of Isaac William, Junior
Elizabeth of Joseph Grafton
Elizabeth of John Bullock
- Sept. 1 Sarah of Samuel Ropes
8 Samuel of Samuel Elson
29 Abigail } of Nathaniel Phippen
Sarah }
Abigail of Jacob Willard
Shattock of Mikil² Bacon
- Oct. 6 Margaret of Josiah Willard
13 Mary of Mr. James Ruck
20 William Cash Junior at age
Mary of Nicholas Lyddiard
27 Mehitabel of Samuel West Junior
- Nov. 23 Marcy, wife of Thomas Cole Adult³
- Dec. 8 George, of the Revd. Mr. George
Curwin, Dec.

¹Added in hand of Rev. Samuel Fisk.

²*Michael* not Mehitabel as transcribed by Wheatland. VII, 227. Cf. Perley, III, 28.

³Records begin here in the hand of Rev. Samuel Fisk and continue through page 83.

- | | | |
|--|---------|---|
| John Bickford and Rebecca Bickford
his wife both at age and their chil-
dren | May 4 | Joseph of Captain Joseph Hathorne |
| George } at age | June 2 | Nathaniel of John Higginson, de-
ceased |
| John } Rebecca | | Walter of Warwick Palfrey |
| | | Joshua of Joshua Witherell |
| | July 13 | Eunice of Mr. Nathaniel Marston |
| | | Baptized by the Revd Mr. Aaron
Porter ³ |
| | Aug. 3 | Thomas & Richard, twins of Capt.
Thomas Ellice |
| | | Francis of John Pain |
| | | Abigail of James Hooper |
| | | Baptized by the Revd Mr. Joseph
Gerrish ⁴ |
| | Sept. 7 | John of Mr. Joseph Hardy |
| | | Elizabeth of Benjamin Phippen |
| | | Robert of Robert Neal |
| | | Priscilla of John Bickford |
| | | Elizabeth of Samuel Liscomb |
- 1718
- Mar. 2 Baptized by Mr. Blowers¹ Bethiah,
of Colonel John Turner
Thomas of Thomas Beadle
Abigail of John Punchard
Christopher of Christopher Battin
Baptized by the Revd Mr. Benjamin
Prescott²
- Apr. 7 Benjamin of Captain Benjamin
Woodbridge

¹Rev. Thomas Blowers (1677-1729), Harvard College, 1695; minister, Beverly, 1701-1729.

²Rev. Benjamin Prescott (1687-1777), Harvard College, 1709; minister, Middle Precinct Parish, Salem (now Peabody), 1713-1756.

³Rev. Aaron Porter (1689-1722), Harvard College, 1708; minister, Medford, 1713-1722.

⁴Rev. Joseph Gerrish (1650-1719/20), Harvard College, 1669; minister, Wenham, 1673-1719/20.

- May 3 f Lydia of Francis Gathman
Lydia
- 10 m Thomas }
f Mercy } of Thomas Cole
f Mary } *Mercy*
f Abigail of Clement English
Susanna
- 17 f Susanna of Richard Pike
Elizabeth
m Robert of Isaac Cook
Martha
- June 14 m Ebenezer
m Benjamin } of George Peal
f Hannah } *Abigail*
- July 5 f Mary Sluman Adult
26 f Elizabeth Tailor — Adult
and her children viz.
m John }
m William } Tailor
f Mary }
- Aug. 16 m Benjamin of Nathaniel Osgood
Hannah
f Hannah of Thomas Field
Hannah
- 23 f Mary of Paul Langden
Mary
f Mary of John Bullock
Mary
f Mary of Jonathan Verry
Mary
- 30 f Abigail of Samuel Brown
Abigail
- Sept. 6 m Ebenezer of Ebenezer Cook
Margarett
f Naomi of James Mackmallon
Mary
- 20 f Mary of Bartholemew Putnam
Mary
- 27 f Hannah of John Green
Ann
- Oct. 4 f Abigail Elkins — Adult and
m Henry Elkins — her son
m Abraham }
f Ruth } of Samuel Cole
f Abigail } *Elizabeth*
- [52]
Oct. 11
- 1719 f Elizabeth* of Thomas Palfrey
Elizabeth
f Mary of Tobias Davis
Mary
- 18 m Jonathan }
f Abigail } of Alexander
f Kezia } *Elizabeth*
f Hannah } Mackmallan
- 25 f Jehoadan of Ebenezer Lambert
Mary
- Nov. 1 m Joseph of Samuel Ropes
Lydia
- 22 m John of Jonathan Woodwell
Priscilla
f Elizabeth a Negro — Woman
servant of Mr. Lindall
- Dec. 13 f Elizabeth of Samuel West Junior
Mary
- Jan. 17 m Samuel of Timothy Orne
Lois
f Joanna of James Norrice
Joanna
- Feb. 7 m Benjamin of James Hooper
Mary
- 14 m Samuel of Samuel Derby
Hannah
- 21 f Mary of Thomas Sluman
Mary
- 1720
- Mar. 6 f Katherine of George Dealand
Bethiah
- 27 f Martha of Benjamin Woodbridge
Mary
- Apr. 17 m Retire of Mighil Bacon
Margarett
- May 22 m John of Joseph Hathorne
Sarah
f Elizabeth of John Gerrish
Elizabeth
f Anna of George Trask
Elizabeth

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- June 12 *m* John Archer — Adult
m Edmund of Joseph Henfield
Lydia
f Abigail of John Twist
Abigail
- June 19 *f* Eunice of Isaac Hacker
Hannah
 26 *f* Susannah of *Samuel* Giles
 Susannah
- July 3 *f* Mary Atkinson — Adult
 and her 3 children viz.
m Timothy }
m Norman } Atkinson
m Theodore* }
- 17 *m* Israel of *Nathaniel* Phippen
Margarett
f Margarett* of James Forster
 Margarett
- July 24 *m* John Symonds — Adult
 and his children viz.
m Samuel Symonds — Adult
m Jonathan }
m Benjamin } Symonds
m James }
f Sarah }
- m* Joseph of John Cabot
Anna
m Isaac of Isaac Cook
Martha
- Aug 7 *m* Jacob of Cockreel Reeves
Judith
 14 *m* Joshua* of *Joshua* Hicks
 Martha
f Martha of Samuel Liscomb
Elizabeth
- Sept. 11 *f* Elizabeth Chapman — Adult
 and her children, minors, viz.
m Isaac }
m Samuel } Chapman
f Hannah }
f Martha* of Nathl. Woodbridge
Anne
- Sept. 18 *f* Anna of *John* Symonds
Sarah
- f* Hannah of Charles Hooper
Hannah
f Mary Cook* — Adult in her own
 Dwelling house being so weak as
 not to be able to go or be carried
 into Gods house. Aged about 70
 years.
- Oct. *m* Daniel of Nathaniel Black
Elizabeth
 9 *m* Samuel of Samuel Cole
Elizabeth
 16 *m* John of John Higginson
Ruth
 30 *f* Sarah of *Nathaniel* Pike
 Margarett
- Nov. 20 *m* Thomas Symonds — Adult
 and his children on his wife
Elizabeth
 Account as well as his, viz.
m James }
m Samuel }
m Thomas } Symonds
m Benjamin }
f Elizabeth }
- m* James }
f Rebecca } of James Grinslett
f Abigail }
f Elizabeth }
f Mary of *John* Gavet
 Mary
m Thomas of *Edward* Norrice
 Remember
- [53]
- Dec. *f* Rebecca of *Samuel* Phippen
Rebecca
m Isaac of *Isaac* Williams Junior
Sarah
- Jan. 8 *f* Sarah Best — Adult
m James of John Punchard
Martha
 15 *m* Daniel of *William* Mackay
 Margarett
m William of *Richard* Ropes
 Hannah

- Feb. f Ammi of Samuel Swazey
Ammi
f Abigail of John Blowers
Abigail
- 1721
Apr. 9 m Samuel* of Richard Pike
Elizabeth
f Elizabeth of Paul Rayment
Tabitha
16 m John of Ebenezer Glover
Rebecca
m Benjamin of Jonathan Ashby
Jemimah
23 m John of Ebenezer Cook
Margarett
30 f Elizabeth Ropes — Adult
May 7 m Benjamin of Robert Neal
Hannah
14 m Samuel* of Thomas Field
Hannah
21 m Lewis of Paul Langden
Mary
June 18 f Elizabeth of John Ropes
Dorothy
m George of George Dealand
Bethiah
25 f Hannah of John Bullock
Mary
July 2 m Samuel of Joshua Withereth
Dinah
f Mary of Samuel Woodwell
Elizabeth
9 m William of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
16 m Peter of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
f Rebecca — A Negro woman ser-
vant of Sister Pickman
Aug. 13 m Joseph of Thomas Symonds
Elizabeth
m Joseph of Joseph Ropes
Elizabeth
m James of James Foster
Margarett
- 27 m Samuel of Jonathan Blyth
Sarah
Sept. 3 m Joseph Ropes
m Joseph of John Gerrish
Elizabeth
f *Susannah* of Robert Williams
Sarah
17 f Ann Cox — Adult
and her children, viz.
m Benjamin }
m William } Cox
m Francis }
f Ann }
f Mary Mackmallon — Adult
Oct. 1 f Sarah Bacon — Adult
f Sarah Bartol — Adult
f Remember Norrice — Adult
f Elizabeth { of Jonathan Williams
m Jonathan { *Elizabeth*
15 f Mary of James Norrice
Joanna
22 f Hannah Cook — Adult
f Margarett Cook — Adult
f Margarett Cox — Adult
29 m Benjamin of John Phippes
Elizabeth
Nov. 5 m Samuel of Samuel Gyles
Susannah
12 m John of Joshua Hicks
Martha
m John of Isaac Williams
Sarah
f Abigail of James Hooper
Mary
Dec. 10 m John, Grandson of Mary Caiton
She promising to train up the
child in the nurture and admoni-
tion of the Lord so long as she
should be enabled hereto.
23 f Mary of Ichabod Plaisted
Sarah
Jan. 7 f Mary of Peter Brown
Rebecca
Feb. 25 f Sarah of Aholiab Dimond
Sarah

- 1721 48 Baptised
- 1722
- Mar. 4 f Mary of *Timothy* Orne
Lois
m James of *Isaac* Turner of Marble-
head
Mary
- 25 m Benjamin of Samuel Ropes
Lydia
- [54]
- Mar. 25 f Abigail of Theodore Atkinson
Mary
- Apr. f Elizabeth of John Higginson
Ruth
- 15 f Mary Gray — Adult
Widow of Benjamin Gray and
her children viz.
f Mary
f Sarah
m Isaac — Negro manservant of
Sister Kitchen
- 29 m Benjamin }
m Samuel }
f Mary }
f Elizabeth } Children of the
f Hannah } Widow
m George } *Hannah Cook*
- m Joseph }
m James } Children of
m William } Joseph
f Margaret } *Margaret Cook*
- May 6 f Mary of *John* Bickford
Rebecca
f Christian of Richard Broadway
Mary now Gray
- 20 f Mary of Philemon Saunders
Sarah
- 27 m Nathaniel }
m John } of Nathaniel Massy
m Daniel } *Rebecca*
f Rebecca }
m Samuel }
- June 20 f Sarah } of Simon
f Priscilla } Sarah
m Simon } Stacy, Deceased¹
Baptized on account of their
Grandmother *Sarah Hill*
- m Samuel of *Samuel* West Junior
Mary
- July 1 m William of *William* Mackay
Margarett
m Jonathan of *Samuel* Phippen
Rebecca
- 8 m John of Thomas Sluman
Mary
- 15 m Samuel of Samuel Luscomb
Elizabeth
- 22 m Joseph of *Jonathan* Woodwell
Priscilla
- Aug. 12² m Susannah of John West
Mary
- 19 m John of Jonathan Williams
Elizabeth
- Sept. 2 m Joseph of Nathaniel Woodbridge
Anne
f Mary of Stephen Doick
Mary
m Jonathan of Isaac Cook
Martha
- 23 m George of George Trask
Elizabeth
- 30 f Mary of James Grinslett
Rebecca
- Oct. 7 m John* of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
- 14 f Sarah of *Richard* Elvins
Sarah
- 21 m Samuel of Tobias Davis
Mary
m Isaac of Isaac Hacker
Hannah
- 28 m Daniel of Ebenezer Cook
Margarett
- Nov. 11 f Judith* of Cockreel Reeves
Judith deceased

¹It is possible that both parents were deceased.

²14 in Wheatland. VII, 231.

- m* Benjamin of Daniel Bacon Junior
Elizabeth
- Dec. 9 *m* Samuel Mackmallon at age
f Mary of *Nathaniel* Osgood
Hannah
m Samuel of *George* Dealand
Bethiah
- 23 *f* Margaret* of *Thomas* Driver
Mary
- 30 *f* Sarah of *John* Bickford
Rebecca
f Hannah* of *Richard* Ropes
Hannah
f Katherine of *John* Conally
Sarah
- Jan. 20 *f* Mary of *James* Grant
Sarah
- 27 *f* Sarah of *Joseph* Hathorne
Sarah
- Feb. 3 *m* Zacheus* of *Samuel* King
Elizabeth
f Martha* of *James* Ruck
Martha
f Abigail of *Samuel* Osgood
Abigail
- 10 *f* Rebecca of *Peter* Brown
Rebecca
m John of *John* Holliman
Susannah
- [55]
 1723
- Mar. 3 *f* Anne of *John* Green
Anne
- 10 *f* Mary Williams Adult
f Mary Pike — Adult
f Abigail of *Richard* Pike
Elizabeth
f Mary of *Paul* Raymond
Tabitha
- 17 *m* George Willis Adult
f Abigail* of *John* Webb
Elizabeth
- 31 *f* Mary* wife of *Samuel* Symonds
 — Adult
f Hannah of *James* Grinslet
Rebecca
- Apr. 7 *m* John of *Jonathan* Ashby
Jemimah
- 14 *m* William of *William* Gale
Elizabeth
- 21 *m* Joshua of *Joshua* Hicks
Martha
- 28 *m* Joseph of *Samuel* Swazey
Ammi
f Elizabeth of *George* Bickford
Elizabeth
- May 5 *m* James of *James* Mackmallon
Mary
f Susannah of *John* Devoreux
Elizabeth
- 19 *m* Dudley* of *Benjamin* Woodbridge
Mary
- 26 *f* Sarah of *Isaac* Williams
Sarah
- June 23 *m* Samuel* of *Samuel* Symonds
Mary
m Samuel { of *Edward* Caryl
f Susannah { *Elizabeth*
- 30 *m* Benjamin of *John* Bullock
Mary
- July 7 *m* Michael* of *Michael* Driver
Sarah
- 14 *f* Elizabeth of *Joseph* Ropes
Elizabeth
m John of *Benjamin* Cox
Anne
- Aug. 4 *m* Joseph of *John* Gavet
Mary
f Mary of *John* Gerrish
Elizabeth
- 25 *m* Nathaniel of *Robert* Williams
Sarah
- Sept. 1 *m* _____¹

¹Record badly torn; Wheatland ignores this entry. VII, 232.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- f Sarah of *James* Marston
Sarah
- 29 f Ruth of *John* Higginson
Ruth
- Oct. 20 f Mary of *Clement* English
Susannah
- Dec. 8 f Hannah* of *Samuel* Mayfield
Hannah
- 29 f Mehitabel of *Thomas* Robie
Mehitabel
- Jan. 19 f Sarah of *Thomas* Ellis
Sarah
- Feb. 9 f Elizabeth of *Samuel* Giles
Susanna
- 1723 36 Baptized
1724
- Mar. 15 f Sarah* of *John* West
Mary
- Apr. 5 m William of *William* Luscomb
Jane
- m Jonathan of *Jonathan* Woodwell
Priscilla
- m Joshua of *Joshua* Ward
Sarah
- 12 f Elizabeth of *John* Pierce
Elizabeth
- May 3 f Mary of *Theodore* Atkinson
Mary
- m John of *John* Mugford
Mary
- 17 f Mary of *Ebenezer* Glover
Rebecca
- June 7 f Anstis of *Nathaneel* Phippen
Margarett
- m James of *James* Norrice
Joanna
- 28 m Atwater of *Samuel* Phippen
Rebecca
- m Samuel of *Samuel* Woodwell
Elizabeth
- f Mary of *Charles* Hooper
Hannah
- July 5 f Sarah of *Michael* Driver
Sarah
- 12 f Mary of *Cockreel* Reeves
Elizabeth
- f Sarah of *George* Dealand
Bethiah
- [56]
- July 19 m Samuel of *Ebenezer*¹ Cook
Margaret
- 26 f Lydia of *Samuel* King
Elizabeth
- Aug. 2 m Ebenezer of *John* Phippen
Elizabeth
- f Mary of *Richard* Ropes
Hannah
- f Elizabeth of *William* Gale
Elizabeth
- m David* { of *John* Brown }
m Jonathan { *Rebecca* } } Twins
- 9 m Peter of *Peter* Silver
Elizabeth
- 30 m James of *James* Hooper
Mary
- Sept. 20 f Margarett of *William* Mackay
Margarett
- 27 f Mary of *George* Trask
Elizabeth
- Oct. 25 f Mehitabel of *Samuel* West Junior
Mary
- Dec. 27 m William of *James* Grant
Hannah
- f Margarett of *Richard* Pike
Elizabeth
- Jan. 10 f Eunice* of *Timothy* Orno
Lois
- 17 f Elizabeth of *Joshua* Hicks
Martha
- m Thomas* of *John* Holliman
Susannah
- Feb. 7 m George* of *George* Bickford
Elizabeth
- f Margarett of *Thomas* Driver
Mary
- 29 m John* of *Edward* Norrice
Remember

¹Manuscript badly torn.

- 1724 36 Baptised
1725
- Mar. 24 f Elizabeth of Benjamin Wood-
bridge
Mary
f Mary of John Bullock
Mary
- 28 m William of *Thomas* Dobie
*M[ehitabel]*¹
m Thomas of Samuel Luscomb
Elizabeth
m John of Philemon Saunders
Sarah
m Benjamin of Edward Pickering
Hannah
- Apr. 15 m Benjamin of Benjamin Ward
Deborah
- Apr. 25 f Rachel of Peter Brown
Rebecca
- May 16 m Robert Gray Junior — Adult
23 m Joseph of Joseph Verry
Ruth
30 f Hannah of Jonathan Ashby
Jemimah
- June 6 f Hannah of John Twist
Abigail
20 f Ruth of *Joseph* Ropes
Elizabeth
- July 4 f Mary Dowce — Adult
12 f Mary Beans — Adult
m Andrew of Thomas Sluman
Mary
m Richard of Richard Dowce
Mary
- Aug. 1 m James of *John* Mugford
Mary
8 m John Ropes Junior — Adult
and his son
m John
f Mehitabel of *Isaac* Williams
Sarah
m Jeremiah of *Nathaniel* Osgood
Hannah
- m William of Paul Raymond
Tabitha
m John of *John* Bickford
Elizabeth
- [57]
- Aug. 15 f Elizabeth of *James* Marston
Sarah
22 f Miriam of Stephen Doick
Mary
- Sept. 5 m John of John West
Mary
12 m Joseph Cook Junior — Adult
son of Jno. Cook Deceased
19 f Margaret of Nathaniel Wood-
bridge
Anne
26 m Samuel Odel — Adult
- Oct. 10 m John of *Samuel* Symonds
Susannah
m Joseph of John Devoreux
Elizabeth
f Margaret of Bonfield Felt
Margarett
m Jerimiah of Isaac Hacker
Hannah
31 m Daniel of *Joshua* Ward
Sarah
- Nov. 7 f Abigail of *Samuel* Giles
Susannah
21 f Mary of *Thomas* Symonds
Elizabeth
m Joseph of *Joseph* Neal
Eunice
m Isaac of Ebenzer Glover
Rebecca
- Dec. 5 f Elizabeth of Daniel Bacon Junior
Elizabeth
19 m John of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
f Rachel* of *Samuel* Mayfield a twin
Hannah

¹Manuscript badly torn.

- 26 *m* Ebenezer of *Joseph* Hathorne
Sarah [58]
- m* James of James Norrice
Joanna
- m* Benjamin of Charles Hooper
Hannah
- Jan. 9 *m* Paul of *Paul* Langden
Mary
- 27 *m* Thomas of Samuel King
Elizabeth
- 30 *m* James Odel — Adult
f Sarah Odel — Adult
- Feb. 6 *m* John of Cockreel Reeves
Elizabeth
- 20 *f* Mary Darling — Adult
1725 51 Baptised
1726
- Mar. 26 *m* Benjamin of Benjamin Ropes
Hannah
- Apr. 10 *m* Samuel of Thomas Ellis
Sarah
- f* Martha of *George* Bickford
Elizabeth
- 24 *f* Mary Sibley — Adult
- May 22 *m* Nathaneel of *Nathaneel* Ropes
Abigail
- m* Edmund } of Edmund Gale
f Lydia } *Anna*
- m* John of John Luscomb
Mary
- June 5 *m* Atwater of *Samuel* Phippen
Rebecca
- f* Hannah of *James* Grant
Hannah
- 19 *f* Mary of John Dolbier
Mary
- 26 *m* Samuel of William Gale
Elizabeth
- m* Edmund of Edmund Symmes
Sarah
- July 31 *m* Michael of Michael Driver
Sarah
- m* Samuel of John Luscomb
Mary
- Aug. 7 *m* Samuel* of *Samuel* Osgood
Abigail
- m* Jonathan of *Jonathan* Wordwell
Priscilla
- 21 *f* Elizabeth* of Samuel Swazey
Ammi
- m* Jonathan of John Brown
Rebecca
- Sept. 4 *f* Sarah Wife of John Mackarter
and their daughter
- f* Sarah Mackarter
- m* John of Theodore Atkinson
Mary
- 25 *f* Sarah }
m Robert } of Robert Marshall
f Mary } *Mary*
- Oct. 2 *m* Benjamin of Tobias Davis
Mary
- 16 *m* William of *Nathaneel* Osgood
Hannah
- 23 *f* Elizabeth of *John* Bickford
Elizabeth
- 30 *m* James of Edward Norrice
Remember
- Dec. 11 *m* Robert of Robert Williams
Sarah
- 18 *f* Abigail of Benjamin Allin
Abigail
- Jan. 15 *m* Robert of Benjamin Bray
Hannah
- 29 *m* Jonathan of *Isaac* Williams
Sarah
- m* John of John Chapman Junior
Hannah
- Feb. 12 *m* William* of *Joseph* Bowditch
Elizabeth
- 19 *f* Martha of *Joshua* Hicks
Martha
- 29 *m* Nathan of Joseph Verry
Ruth
- m* Joseph of Joseph Gavett
Mary

- 726 38 Baptised
1727
- Mar. 5 f Abigail Beadle the wife of Benjamin Beadle — Adult and their children, viz.
f Abigail
f Elizabeth } on their Mother's
f Ruth } account
m Benjamin }
- 12 f Mary of John West
Mary
- 19 f Sarah of Samuel West Junior
Mary
m John of John Hill
Margaret
- 26 m John of Benjamin Houghton
Lydia
- Apr. 2 m Richard of Richard Pike
Elizabeth
m Benjamin of Benjamin Allin
Abigail
- 9 f Sarah of John Gavett
Mary
- 23 m James of John Phippen
Elizabeth
- May 14 m John of Edward Pickering
Hannah
- 21 f Elizabeth of Stephen Doick
Mary
- 25 m Jonathan of Ebenezer Cook
Margaret
f Eunice of Joseph Neal
Eunice
- June 4 m Samuel of Samuel Aborne
Martha
- [59]
- June 11 m Thomas Willis — Adult
m Andrew of John Higginson
Ruth
m John of John Brown
Lydia
- 18 m William of Revd. Robert Stanton,
Deceased¹
Katherine
- m Benjamin of Benjamin Manning
Hannah
- 25 m Samuel of Samuel Symond
Susannah
f Jemimah of Bonfield Felt
Margaret
- July 2 f Abigail of Isaac Foot
Mary
- 9 f Mehitabel of Samuel Phippen
Rebecca Deceased
m Daniel of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
- 16 f Mary of Richard Elvins
Sarah
- 25 f Elizabeth of Aaron Messarvy
Elizabeth
- 30 f Elizabeth of Samuel King
Elizabeth
- Aug. 6 m James of James Marston
Sarah
- 13 m David of Benjamin Ropes
Hannah
f Martha of Thomas Dean
Martha
- 20 f Desire, wife of John White, Adult
and their child Named
f Mary
f Martha } Daughters of
and } Benjamin Odle
f Mary } Sarah
These Adult Children
m Daniel of Daniel Cheevers
Sarah
f Susannah of Nathaneel Knight
Susannah
- 27 f Hannah of George Dealand
Bethiah
f Elizabeth of Clement English
(long absent and is feared lost)
Susannah
- Sept. 3 m Benjamin of John Anchor
Rebecca
m. William of Ebenezer Glover
Rebecca

¹Robert Stanton (1689-1727) was minister of Second (East) Church, 1719-1727.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- f Elizabeth } Kellem, Orphans on
 f Mary } account of their
 Grandmother the
 Widow
 Elizabeth Lowther
- Sept. 10 f Sarah of *John Cox*
 Sarah
 17 m Michael of *Philemon Saunders*
 Sarah
 f Lydia of *Nathaniel Phippen*
 Margaret
 24 f Hannah of *Jonathan Webb*
 Priscilla
- Oct. 1 m Edmond of *George Bickford*
 Elizabeth
 8 m John of *Richard Dowce*
 Mary
 22 m George of *Joseph Ropes*
 Elizabeth
 29 f Hannah of *Thomas Driver*
 Mary
- Nov. 5 m William of *Theodore Atkinson*
 Mary
 m William of *Benjamin Gray*
 Sarah
 f Elizabeth of *William Grafton*
 Jane
- [60]
- Nov. 19 f Elizabeth of *Thomas Robie*
 Mehitabel
 f Lydia of *David Best*
 Lydia
- Dec. 3 m Joseph Glover — Adult
 f Elizabeth Wife of *Francis Richardson*
 f Esther }
 m Ebenezer } of *Ebenezer Felton*
 m Amos } *Jehoadan*
 m Benjamin }
- 10 f Lois } of *Lois Bright*
 m Thomas } *Thomas*
 17 f Mary Wife of *Zachary Birchmore*
 with their son
 m Zachary
- Dec. 17 f Margaret Stone — Adult
 m Edward of *Paul Raymond*
 Tabitha
 f Mary of *John Mugford*
 Mary
- 24 m George of *Jonathan Webb*
 Jemima
 f Anna of *Joseph Grafton*
 Mary
 f Abigail of *Timothy Mansfield*
 Abigail
 f Mary of *John Philpott*
 Elizabeth
- 31 m John Symonds Junior — Adult
 and his children, viz.
 m John } of *John Symonds*
 f Sarah } *Priscilla*
 m Samuel Field — Adult
 f Jane Wife of *Samuel Aborne Junr.*
 f Abigail Daughter of *Samuel Pope*
 Adult
 f Anne Daughter of *Widow Willis*
 Adult
 m Eliphalett }
 f Elizabeth } of *Robert Smith*
 f Mary } *Mary*
 m Robert }
 f Lydia of *Francis Begoe Deceased*
 Lydia
- Jan. 14 Ibruck Hackor Adult
 f Ruth* Wife of *Andrew Millett*
 Adult
 f Sarah Datten Adult
 f Elizabeth of *John Devoreux*
 Elizabeth
 m John of *Peter Brown*
 Rebecca
- 21 f Mary of *Joshua Tyler*
 Margaret
- Jan. 21 f Elizabeth }
 f Preserved } of *Isaac Stileman*
 m Isaac } *Preserved*
 f Mary }
- Feb. 11 f Hannah Daughter of *Nathaniel*
 Silbsby Adult

- | | | | | |
|---------|---|---------|---|--|
| f | Mary Daughter of William Brown
Adult | m | Stephen | } of Stephen Daniel
Junior
Margarett |
| f | Elizabeth of Michael Driver
Sarah | m | William | |
| m | Benjamin of Isaac Williams
Sarah | f | Margarett | |
| | | m | John | |
| f | Ruth of Andrew Millett
Ruth | m | Gideon of Joseph Henfield
Lydia | |
| 18 | m Benjamin of Benjamin Hathorne
Hannah | Apr. 21 | f Martha of Benjamin Woodbridge
Mary | |
| 25 | m Ellis of James Mahoone
Elizabeth | f | Anne of Nathaniel Woodbridge
Anne | |
| 1727 | 105 Baptised | f | Sarah { of Samuel Gray | |
| 1728 | | f | Elizabeth { Elizabeth | |
| Mar. 3 | m Daniel Cheevers Adult | 28 | m Samuel King } Each Adult | |
| f | Sarah Daughter of Widow Purchase Adult | m | Jonathan Peal } Each Adult | |
| f | Hannah Daughter of Manasseh Marston, Deceased | m | Joseph Peal } Each Adult | |
| f | Abigail Wife of Thomas Davis Adult and her child | May 5 | f Sarah of Samuel Mayfield
Hannah | |
| f | Abigail | 12 | m William of Samuel West
Mary | |
| m | Titus Negro Servant of John Turner | f | Susannah of John Holliman
Susannah | |
| 10 | m Ichabod of Ichabod Plaister
Sarah | 26 | m Jonathan of Jonathan Gardner
Elizabeth | |
| 17 | f Hannah of Epraim Ingolds
Hannah | June 3 | m John { of John Gray | |
| f | Mary Daniel Adult | f | Susannah { Susannah | |
| f | Elizabeth Wife of Samuel Foot Junior and her children | m | Stephen of Benjamin Mazury
Sarah | |
| m | Samuel { | 16 | m John of Paul Langden
Mary | |
| f | Elizabeth { | 23 | f Ruth of Thomas Symonds
Elizabeth | |
| f | Abigail { of George Peal Junior | 23 | m Nathaniel { of Ebenezer Felton | |
| m | George { Abigail | m | John { Johoadan Twins | |
| Mar. 17 | f Hannah formerly called Phillis, a Free Negro woman | m | Samuel { of Samuel Aborne | |
| 24 | f Martha of Samuel Osgood
Abigail | m | Joseph { Jane | |
| 31 | m Joshua Mackmallon Adult | m | James Stone Adult and his Wife
Sarah and his Children viz: | |
| [61] | | f | Hannah { | |
| Mar. 31 | m Stephen Daniel Junior Adult | m | James { Stone Minors | |
| f | Sarah Wife of Elias Lowwater | m | Joseph { | |
| | | July 14 | m Benjamin Hearon Adult | |
| | | f | Sarah of James Grant
Hannah | |
| | | 21 | f Mary of John Junior Ropes
Mary | |

The Records of the First Church in Salem

	<i>f</i>	Priscilla of <i>John Symond Junior</i> <i>Priscilla</i>	[62]	
	<i>f</i>	Susannah of <i>John Dolbier, De-</i> <i>ceased</i> <i>Mary</i>		Dec. 24 <i>m</i> Manasses of <i>James Marston</i> <i>Sarah</i>
Aug. 25	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>Samuel Gyles</i> <i>Susannah</i>		Jan. 5 <i>m</i> Daniel of <i>Daniel Bacon Junior</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>
	<i>f</i>	Hannah of <i>Samuel Gray</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>		19 <i>m</i> Stacy of <i>Jonathan Woodwell</i> <i>Priscilla</i>
	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>John Luscomb</i> <i>Mary</i>		26 <i>f</i> Mary of <i>Stephen Daniel Junior</i> <i>Margarett</i>
Sept. 1	<i>m</i>	Francis of <i>Robert Marshall</i> <i>Mary</i>		Feb. 2 <i>f</i> Rebecca of <i>Edmund Russel</i> <i>Abigail</i>
15	<i>f</i>	Sarah of <i>Jonathan Peal</i> <i>Sarah</i>		9 <i>f</i> Mary of <i>Ahijah Estes</i> <i>Mary</i>
22	<i>m</i>	Robert of <i>Robert Gray</i> <i>Margarett</i>		16 <i>m</i> Joseph of <i>Benjamin Allin</i> <i>Abigail</i>
	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>Tobias Davis</i> <i>Mary</i>		23 <i>m</i> John of <i>John Nutting</i> <i>Ruth</i>
29	<i>m</i>	Benjamin of <i>Edmund Symmes</i> <i>Sarah</i>		1728 50 were Baptised
Oct. 13	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>William Gale</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>		1729
	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>John Bickford Junior</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>		Mar. 9 <i>f</i> Mary { of <i>John Shattock</i>
20	<i>f</i>	Ruth of <i>Joseph Verry</i> <i>Ruth</i>		<i>f</i> Sarah { <i>Mary Adults</i> ¹
	<i>f</i>	Ann of <i>Robert Smith</i> <i>Mary</i>		<i>f</i> Abigail of <i>Theodore Atkinson</i> <i>Mary</i>
	<i>f</i>	Sarah of <i>Miles Ward</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>		23 <i>f</i> Mary { of <i>George Peal</i>
Nov. 3	<i>f</i>	Hannah of <i>John Chapman Junior</i> <i>Hannah</i>		<i>f</i> Elizabeth { <i>Junior (twins)</i> <i>Abigail</i>
27	<i>m</i>	Charles Hooper Adult		30 <i>m</i> Robert of <i>Charles Hooper</i> <i>Hannah</i>
	<i>f</i>	Mary Wife of <i>David Griffis Adult</i> and their children, viz.		<i>m</i> William of <i>Samuel Symonds</i> <i>Susannah</i>
	<i>m</i>	David {		<i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Joseph Gavet</i> <i>Mary</i>
	<i>f</i>	Mary {		Apr. 20 <i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>Benjamin Bootman</i> <i>Elizabeth</i>
Dec. 8	<i>f</i>	Abigail of <i>Benjamin Felt</i> <i>Abigail</i>		<i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Andrew Millett</i> <i>Ruth</i>
				27 <i>m</i> George of <i>John West</i> <i>Mary</i>
				<i>m</i> Benjamin of <i>Benjamin Glover</i> <i>Susannah</i>
				May 4 <i>f</i> Lydia Palmer Adult
				<i>f</i> Rachel Britton Adult

¹John Shattuck and Mary Crawley were married in 1708; these were probably their adult children. Cf. Perley II, 268.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <i>m</i> William of <i>Samuel</i> King
<i>Elizabeth</i> | 31 <i>m</i> Nathaniel of <i>Joseph</i> Hathorne
<i>Sarah</i> |
| <i>m</i> John of John White
<i>Desire</i> | [63] |
| June 5 <i>m</i> John of Benjamin Ward
<i>Deborah</i> | Sept. 7 <i>f</i> Eunice of <i>Joseph</i> Cook Junior
<i>Eunice</i> |
| 8 <i>f</i> Esther of <i>Joseph</i> Grafton
<i>Mary</i> | 28 <i>m</i> Benjamin of <i>George</i> Dealand
<i>Bethiah</i> |
| <i>f</i> Sarah of <i>John</i> Gavet
<i>Mary</i> | Oct. 5 <i>m</i> Jonathan* of <i>Samuel</i> ¹ Cole |
| 29 <i>m</i> John of <i>Joshua</i> Ward
<i>Sarah</i> | 19 <i>f</i> Anne of <i>Thomas</i> Driver
<i>Mary</i> |
| <i>f</i> Sarah of <i>John</i> Mugford
<i>Mary</i> | <i>M. Ward</i> baptized ² |
| July 6 <i>m</i> Daniel of Peter Silver
<i>Elizabeth</i> | <i>m</i> John of <i>John</i> Stephens |
| <i>f</i> Sarah of Benjamin Bray
<i>Hannah</i> | <i>m</i> Edmund of ——— Grover |
| 13 <i>m</i> George of <i>George</i> Bickford
<i>Elizabeth</i> | <i>f</i> Lydia of <i>Abigail</i> Thorndike
These three, now of the Church
in Beverly — where I baptised
them |
| 27 <i>f</i> Ruth of <i>Joshua</i> Hicks
<i>Martha</i> | 26 <i>f</i> Elizabeth of Jonathan Gardner
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| <i>m</i> James of <i>Benjamin</i> Houlton
<i>Lydia</i> | Nov. 2 <i>f</i> Mary of Wills Morton
<i>Abigail</i> |
| <i>m</i> Benjamin of Ebenezer Cook
<i>Margarett</i> | 9 <i>f</i> Martha of <i>Jonathan</i> Peal
<i>Sarah</i> |
| <i>m</i> John of <i>Thomas</i> Cruff
<i>Hannah</i> | 23 <i>m</i> Samuel* of Jonathan Archer
Junior
<i>Abigail</i> |
| Aug. 3 <i>f</i> Rebecca of John Brown
<i>Rebecca</i> | <i>m</i> Daniel of <i>Daniel</i> Needham
<i>Isabella</i> |
| <i>f</i> Desire of <i>Daniel</i> Cheever
<i>Sarah</i> | Dec. 7 <i>m</i> William of <i>William</i> Bickford
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| <i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>Hugh</i> Mackil-leiver,
a stranger from North Brittain.
This child was born in the pas-
sage from North Brittain.
<i>Anne</i> | 14 <i>f</i> Susannah of <i>John</i> Phippen
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| 10 <i>f</i> Sarah of Bonfield Felt
<i>Margarett</i> | 21 <i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Samuel</i> Mackmallon
<i>Hannah</i> |
| <i>m</i> George of Peter Brown
<i>Rebecca</i> | <i>f</i> Hannah of Edward Pickering
<i>Hannah</i> |
| 24 <i>f</i> Margarett of John Hill
<i>Margarett</i> | 28 <i>f</i> Jemimah of Edmund Munnion
<i>Mercy</i> |
| <i>f</i> Mary of Samuel Foot Junior
<i>Elizabeth</i> | Jan. 11 <i>f</i> Sarah Wife of Clement Henley
and their children |
| | <i>f</i> Sarah { |
| | <i>m</i> William { |
| | Jan. 25 <i>f</i> Susannah of Benjamin Glover
<i>Susannah</i> |

¹Not underlined in manuscript.

²Brought in from margin.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- Feb. 1 *m* William of *John* Ropes
Mary
f Sarah of *Timothy* Pickering
Mary
- 8 *m* Manasseh of *James* Marston
Sarah
f Elizabeth of *Miles* Ward Junior
Elizabeth
- 1729 65 were Baptised
1730
- Mar. 1 *f* Tamizond Modgey Adult
f Deborah, Wife of George Hacker
Adult
f Sarah of *Joseph* Ropes
Elizabeth
- 29 *f* Mary of *Ephraim* Ingolls
Hannah
- Apr. 5 *f* Hannah of *Benjamin* Hathorne
Hannah
f Mary of *Joseph* Neal
Eunice
f Mary { of *Daniel* Twist
f Hannah { *Mary*
- 12 *f* Susannah of *John* Holliman
Susannah
- 19 *m* John of *John* Archer
Rebecca
f Anne of *Benjamin* Ropes
Hannah
- 28 *m* Thomas of *Thomas* Robie, De-
ceased
Mehitabel
- May 17 *m* Paul of *Paul* Raymond
Tabitha
- 31 *m* Nathaniel of *Ebenezer* Felton
Jehoadan
- June 7 *f* Eunice of *John* Nutting
Ruth
- 14 *m* Joseph of *Joseph* Glover
Mary
- [64]
- July 5 *f* Hannah { of *Christopher*
m William { Absent at sea
Mary Battin
- f* Sarah of *Ebenezer* Glover
Rebecca
m Gideon { Twins of *Joseph*
m Peter { *Henfield*
Lydia
- m* Henry of *Philip* Sanders
Mary
- July 12 *f* Hannah of *Benjamin* Brown
Eunice
f Elizabeth of *Samuel* Swazey
Ammi
- Aug. 2 *f* Elizabeth of *John* Chapman
Junior
Hannah
- 9 *m* Isaac of *Isaac* Goodale
Deborah
f Martha of *Nathaniel* Woodbridge
Anne
f Sarah of *James* Stone Junior
Sarah
- 16 *f* Hannah of *James* Grant
Hannah
Andrew of *Andrew* Millett
Ruth
- 23 *m* Dudley { Twins of *Benjamin*
m Samuel { *Woodbridge*
Mary
- m* Benjamin of *Richard* Pike
Elizabeth
- 30 *m* Samuel of *John* Bickford Junior
Elizabeth
f Elizabeth of *Joseph* Allison
Deliverance
f Phoebe of *Thomas* Henderson, a
stranger
Rebecca
This child was born in the pas-
sage from Ireland
- Sept. 6 *f* Elizabeth of *Daniel* Webb
Mary
- 27 *m* Benjamin of *Benjamin* Marston
[*Elizabeth*]¹
- Oct. 4 *f* Elizabeth of *Peter* Silver
Elizabeth

¹Salem Vital Records, II, 57.

- 18 f Eunice of William Hunt
Eunice
- f Elizabeth of Samuel Ruck Junior
Bethiah
- 25 f Elizabeth of Samuel Field
Elizabeth
- Nov. 29 m Joseph of *Joseph* Bowditch
Elizabeth
- f Sarah of James Norrice
Lydia
- Dec. 6 m Joseph of George Peal Junior
Abigail
- f Sarah { of George Hacker
m Joshua { *Deborah*
m Thomas Demeritt, a negro man
servant of our Sister Mary Lin-
dal
- 13 m Jonathan { Twins of Jonathan
m Samuel { Archer Junior
Abigail
- 20 m George of Bonfield Felt
Margarett
- 27 m John of Samuel Foot Junior
Elizabeth
- Jan. 3 f Bethiah Hacker Adult
- 17 m Thomas of *Nathaniel* Phippen
Margarett
- f Jane of John Luscomb
Mary
- 24 f Mary { Twins of Joseph
f Elizabeth { Chapman
Sarah
- Feb. 7 m Thomas of *Samuel* Gyles
Susannah
- m John of *John* Gavet
Mary
- 14 m Benjamin of *Samuel* West Junior
Deceased
Mary
- m William of John White
Desire
- [65]
- Feb. 21 m Samuel of Robert Marshall
Mary
- m John of *Robert* Smith
Mary
- Feb. 28 f Provided Wife of John Carryl
Adult
and
m John their son
m James of *Joseph* Verry
Ruth
- f Mary of *Richard* Ropes
Hannah
- m Benjamin of Cockreel Reeves
Elizabeth
- 1730 68 were Baptised
- 1731
- Mar. 7 f Anne of William Gale
Elizabeth
- Apr. 28 f Mary of *George* Bickford
Elizabeth
- f Abigail of *Miles* Ward Junior
Elizabeth
- May 2 f Deborah of Benjamin Ward
Deborah
- f Mary of *Daniel* Needham
Isabella
- 9 f Sarah of *Edmund* Symmes
Sarah
- June 6 f Elizabeth of Theodore Atkinson
Mary
- m Joseph of *George* Denland
Bethiah
- m Joseph of *Samuel* Symonds
Susannah
- f Esther of *James* Marston
Sarah
- 13 m Nathaniel of Nathaniel Andrew
Mary
- m Isaac of Isaac Hacker
Hannah
- 20 m John of *Timothy* Orne
Lois

The Records of the First Church in Salem

July 4	<i>m</i> Jonathan	{ of Jonathan Glover	[66]	
	<i>m</i> Samuel	{ <i>Tabitha</i>	Nov. 7	<i>f</i> Abigail Wife of Thomas Gilpin
	<i>m</i> William	of Richard Dowce		and
		<i>Mary</i>		<i>m</i> John their Infant
	<i>m</i> Jonathan	of Joseph Gavett	14	<i>m</i> John of John Wolcott
		<i>Mary</i>		Elizabeth
18	<i>m</i> Jonathan	of <i>Jonathan</i> Peal		Baptised on account of its Grand-
		<i>Sarah</i>		mother, Mary Wolcott who pub-
	<i>m</i> John	of John Punchard Junior		lickly promised to educate the
		<i>Hannah</i>		child in Christian manner as God
	<i>f</i> Hannah	of <i>Ahijah</i> Estes		should inable and give opportuni-
		<i>Mary</i>		ity. The Father who held up the
25	<i>f</i> Jane	of <i>John</i> Mugford		Child allowing (as his Wife also
		<i>Mary</i>		did) his Mother should have
Aug. 1	<i>f</i> Mary	of <i>William</i> Mickle-Roy		power and opportunity therefor.
		<i>Mary</i> a stranger recom-	Dec. 12	<i>f</i> Ruth of <i>Samuel</i> Ruck Junior
		mended		<i>Bethiah</i>
8	<i>f</i> Sarah	of John West	19	<i>f</i> Sarah of <i>Benjamin</i> Goodhue
		<i>Mary</i>		<i>Martha</i>
15	<i>m</i> James	of <i>James</i> Odel	26	<i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>John</i> Symonds
		<i>Mary</i>		<i>Priscilla</i>
22	<i>m</i> Daniel	of <i>Joseph</i> Hathorne	Jan. 2	<i>f</i> Abigail of Benjamin Glover
		<i>Sarah</i>		<i>Susannah</i>
Sept. 5	<i>f</i> Mary	of <i>John</i> Chapman Junior	23	<i>f</i> Ursula of Wills Morton
		<i>Hannah</i>		<i>Abigail</i>
12	<i>m</i> Edward	of Edward Rose	30	<i>f</i> Mary of <i>James</i> Carter
		<i>Mary</i>		<i>Mary</i>
19	<i>f</i> Eunice	of Benjamin Brown		<i>f</i> Sarah { of Jonas Adams
		<i>Eunice</i>		<i>f</i> Elizabeth { <i>Sarah</i> Twins
	<i>m</i> Jonathan	of Ebenenzer Cook	Feb. 13	<i>f</i> Hannah of Benjamin Bootman
		<i>Margarett</i>		<i>Elizabeth</i>
Oct. 3	<i>f</i> Mary	of Edward Kitchen	27	<i>f</i> Mercy of Edmond Munion
		<i>Friek</i>		<i>Mercy</i>
	<i>f</i> Priscilla	of <i>Jonathan</i> Woodwell	1731	48 were Baptised
		<i>Priscilla</i>	1732	
	<i>f</i> Abigail	of Ebenezer Henderson	Mar. 5	<i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>Benjamin</i> Marston
		<i>Mary</i>	5	<i>m</i> Abraham of <i>Joseph</i> Ropes
17	<i>f</i> Margarett	of Peter Cheever		<i>Elizabeth</i>
		<i>Margarett</i>		<i>f</i> Elizabeth } of Benjamin Gilling-
31	<i>f</i> Lydia	of Benjamin Gale		<i>f</i> Hannah } ham
		<i>Lydia</i>		<i>f</i> Mary } <i>Elizabeth</i>
	<i>m</i> Joseph	of Samuel Mazury	19	<i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>John</i> Holliman
				<i>Hannah</i>
			26	<i>m</i> Stephen of Ephraim Ingolds
				<i>Hannah</i>

- | | | | |
|---------|--|---------|--|
| | <i>f</i> Abigail of <i>Miles Ward Junior</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | <i>m</i> Andrew of Andrew Millett
<i>Ruth</i> |
| Apr. 16 | <i>m</i> Robert of <i>John Scolly</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> | [67] | |
| | <i>m</i> Thomas of David Montgomery
<i>Sarah</i> | Oct. 15 | <i>f</i> Huldah of John Holman
<i>Huldah</i> |
| 23 | <i>m</i> Benjamin of Benjamin Gillingham
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | <i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Joseph Glover</i>
<i>Mary</i> |
| 30 | <i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Samuel Field</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> | 22 | <i>f</i> Tabitha of <i>Daniel King</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| May 7 | <i>f</i> Martha of Benjamin Allin
<i>Abigail</i> | | <i>m</i> Jonathan of Jonathan Archer
Junior
<i>Abigail</i> |
| 21 | <i>m</i> John of <i>Robert Smith</i>
<i>Mary</i> | | <i>m</i> Amos of John Butler
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| | <i>m</i> John of John Seas
<i>Abigail</i> | Nov. 12 | <i>m</i> John of <i>Ebenezer Felton</i>
<i>Jehoadan</i> |
| June 11 | <i>m</i> Benjamin of <i>John Bickford Junior</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | <i>m</i> Matthew of Matthew Waugh
<i>Susannah</i> |
| | <i>m</i> Philip of Philip Saunders
<i>Mary</i> | 26 | <i>f</i> Elizabeth of William Hunt
<i>Eunice</i> |
| July 2 | <i>m</i> Richard of Richard Meek
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | <i>m</i> John of Jonathan Glover, Junior
<i>Tabitha</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Hannah of Joseph Cook Junior
<i>Eunice</i> | Dec. 3 | <i>f</i> Mary of Joseph Verry
<i>Ruth</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Sarah of Daniel Buchier
<i>Rachel</i> | | <i>f</i> Hannah of Samuel Foot Junior
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| 16 | <i>m</i> James of <i>James Grant</i>
Hannah | 17 | <i>f</i> Mary of Joseph Bowditch
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| Aug. 6 | <i>f</i> Sarah of <i>John Giles Junior</i>
<i>Mercy</i> | 24 | <i>m</i> William of <i>John Mugford</i>
Mary |
| | <i>m</i> Jonathan of John Carryl
<i>Provided</i> | Jan. 7 | <i>f</i> Mary of <i>Benjamin Lynde Junior</i>
Mary |
| 13 | <i>m</i> William of Thomas Sluman
Mary | | <i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Jonathan Gardiner</i>
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Mary of Joseph Allison
<i>Deliverance</i> | Feb. 4 | <i>m</i> Francis of John Higginson
<i>Esther</i> |
| 20 | <i>m</i> David of David Glover
<i>Sarah</i> | 11 | <i>m</i> Peter of Peter Cheever
<i>Margarett</i> |
| | <i>m</i> Edward of Edward Pickering
<i>Hannah</i> | 1732 | 47 were Baptised |
| Oct. 8 | <i>f</i> Love of <i>Benjamin Pickman</i>
Love | 1733 | |
| | <i>f</i> Hannah of Peter Silver
<i>Elizabeth</i> | Mar. 4 | <i>m</i> Dudley of <i>Benjamin Woodbridge</i>
Mary |
| | | | <i>f</i> Abigail of Bonfield Felt
<i>Margarett</i> |

The Records of the First Church in Salem

Note: This last child was one of three at one birth. The other two were sons and died one some hours [after] the other the next day after their birth.

- f Ann of Edmund Symmes
Sarah
- m Joseph of Joseph Chapman
Sarah
- 18 f Mary of Joseph Gavett
Mary
- m James of Jeremiah Meachum
Rebecca
- Apr. 1 f Mary of Timothy Pickering
Mary
- f Elizabeth } of Arthur Stokes
f Margaret } *Christian*
- 8 f Mary of Nathaniel Andrew
Mary
- 29 f Elizabeth of John Hill
Margarett
- f Mercy of Benjamin Lambert
Mercy
- May 13 f Anne of John White
Desire
- 20 f Mary of James Marston
Sarah
- June 3 f Lois of Thomas Bright
Lois
- 17 f Mary of Joshua Hicks
Martha
- July 8 m Edward of Edward Rose
Mary
- 15 m Thomas of Thomas Gilpin
Abigail
- 22 m Jonathan of Benjamin Ward
Deborah
- Aug. 5 m Joshua of Joseph Grafton
Mary
- 12 f Sarah of Theodore Atkinson
Mary
- f Mary of George Peal Junior
Abigail
- 19 m Edward of Edward Kitchin
Friek

[68]

- Aug. 6 m John of Thomas Cruff
Hannah
- f Elizabeth of Samuel Reeves
Elizabeth
- Sept. 2 m Jonathan of Samuel Symonds
Susannah
- 9 f Mary of Edmund Gale
Mary
- 16 f Eunice of Jonathan Mackmallon
Rachel
- 23 m Ahijah of Ahijah Estes
Mary
- m William of John Punchard Junior
Hannah
- Oct. 14 m Benjamin of Benjamin Felt
Abigail
- 21 f Bethiah of Samuel Ruck Junior
Bethiah
- Nov. 11 f Jane of Jonathan Tewksbury
Mary
- f Sarah of John Chapman Junior
Hannah
- 18 f Hannah of Jonathan Peal
Sarah
- 25 f Martha of Benjamin Goodhue
Martha
- Dec. 2 m Nathan of David Glover
Sarah
- 16 m Samuel of Eleazar Moses
Mary
- f Mary his Wife
- f Elizabeth of John Mugford
Mary
- 23 m William of George Needham
Rachel
- m Richard of Jeffry Lang
Hannah
- Jan. 20 m William of Richard Cash
Abigail
- Feb. 24 f Sarah of Jacob Oliver
Annis
- 1733 44 were Baptised
- 1734
- Mar. 20 m Samuel of Jonas Adams
Sarah

- 31 *f* Mary of *Joseph* Hathorne
Sarah
m John of Jonathan Archer Junior
Abigail
- Apr. 14 *f* Sarah of Benjamin Bootman
Elizabeth
- May 12 *m* Ebenezer of Isaac Goodall
Deborah
f Mary of Benjamin Gale
Lydia
- June 9 *m* Wills of Wills Morton
Abigail
16 *f* Lydia of Tobias Davis Junior
Lydia
f Elizabeth of Ebenezer Henderson
Mary
23 *m* George of Bondfield Felt
Margarett
30 *m* Henry of *Robert* Smith
Mary
m John of John Massey
Jane
- Aug. 11 *f* Mary of William Cocks
Mary
18 *m* William of Benjamin Glover
Susannah
25 *m* Nathan of *Joseph* Phelps
Elizabeth
- Sept. 1 *f* Eunice of John Legro Junior
Eunice
f Mary of Peter Silver
Elizabeth
- [69]
- Sept. 15 *m* Thomas of *Daniel* Needham
Isabella
f Elizabeth of James Norrice
Lydia
22 *f* Rebecca of *Benjamin* Gillingham
Elizabeth
- Oct. 27 *f* Eunice of Thomas Sluman
Mary
- Nov. 8 *f* Mary of Richard Dowce
Mary
10 *m* John of Philip Sanders
Mary
- 17 *f* Elizabeth of John Carrill
Provided
f Eunice of William Steward
Eunice
- Dec. 15 *m* Nathaniel of John Higginson
Esther
29 *f* Eunice of *Joseph* Verry
Ruth
m Samuel of John Chapman Junior
Hannah
- Jan. 5 *m* George of *Joseph* Glover
Mary
m Jonathan of *Jonathan* Millett
Mary
12 *m* Sergeant of *Stephen* Daniel Jun-
ior
Margarett
19 *m* Daniel of Jonathan Glover Junior
Tabitha
m Eliezer of *Eliezer* Moses
Mary
- Feb. 2 *m* Pascha of Samuel Foot Junior
Elizabeth
f Elizabeth of *Jonathan* Peal
Sarah
9 *m* Joseph { of Nathaniel Andrew
f Abigail { *Mary*
Twins
m James of *James* Cook
Rachel
m John of John Elkins
Abigail
16 *m* Timothy of John George
Elizabeth
- 1734 40 were Baptised
1735
- Mar. 2 *m* Thomas of John Seas
Abigail
f Elizabeth of Joseph Allison
Deliverance
16 *m* Nathaniel of *James* Marston
Sarah
23 *f* Margarett of Ephraim Ingolds
Hannah

- Apr. 6 *m* Samuel of Edward Pickering
Hannah
- 13 *f* Ruth of Andrew Millett
Ruth
- f* Judith of Samuel Reeves
Elizabeth
- May 4 *f* Sarah of *Ahijah* Estes
Mary
- f* Hannah of Jeffry Lang
Hannah
- 11 *m* Stephen of *Samuel* Swazey
Ammi
- June 1 *m* Jonathan of Joseph Chapman
Sarah
- 15 *f* Mary of *Edmund* Symms
Sarah
- 29 *m* Samuel of *Daniel* King
Elizabeth
- July 13 *m* Joseph of *Francis* Grant
Mary
- 20 *m* Daniel of Benjamin Bray
Hannah
- 27 *m* John of Joseph Cook
Eunice
- [70]
- July 27 *f* Mercy of Theodore Atkinson
Mary
- f* Abiel of Thomas Bright, Deceased
Lois
- Aug. 24 *f* Mercy of John White
Desire
- f* Abigail of Robert Gray Junior
Ruth
- Sept. 7 *m* Benjamin of *Samuel* Symonds
Susannah
- f* Mary Wife of Samuel Cheever
and their child
- m* Samuel
- 14 *f* Esther a Molatto Servant Child
of David Glover and Sarah his
Wife on her account. They prom-
ising to give the child a Christian
Education in the face of the
Assembly.
- 28 *m* Benjamin of John Punchard Jun-
ior
Hannah
- Oct. 5 *m* Robert of *Edward* Kitchen
Friek
- f* Abigail of William Gale
Elizabeth
- f* Mary of Thomas Ward
Rebecca
- 12 *f* Elizabeth of Jerimiah Meachum
Rebecca
- 19 *m* James of James Fabins
Mary
- m* Timothy of *Jonathan* Tewksbury
Mary
- Nov. 2 *m* Daniel of Peter Cheever
Margarett
- f* Sarah of David Glover
Sarah
- 9 *m* Willoughby of *Bezaleel* Toppan
Mary
- m* John of *John* Mugford
Mary
- Dec. 20 *f* Lydia { of Thomas Gilpin
m William { *Abigail*
Twins
- Jan. 4 *f* Mary of Benjamin Blyth
Mary
- 25 *f* Martha of Benjamin Ward
Deborah
- Feb. 15 *f* Mehitable of *Ebenezer* Felton
Jehoadan
- 1735 40 were Baptised
- 1736
- Mar. 7 *f* Lydia of *Timothy* Pickering
Mary
- 14 *f* Lydia of John Chapman Junior
Hannah
- 21 *m* Nathaneel of Nathaneel Archer
Hannah
- f* Margarett of Edward Dimond
Margarett
- m* Richard of Samuel Cheever
Mary
- f* Sarah of Jonas Adams
Sarah

- 28 *m* James of Isaac Goodale
Deborah
- Apr. 4 *m* Samuel of Samuel Smith
Susannah
- 11 *f* Esther Trask Adult
f Mary Page Adult
f Elizabeth { of Benjamin Cook
m Benjamin { *Elizabeth*
f Margarett of James Cook
Rachel
f Mary of Henry Bennett
Abigail
- 25 *m* Samuel of Robert Smith
Mary
m Jacob of Jacob Oliver
Annis
- May 9 *f* Abigail of Jonathan Archer Junior
Abigail
m John of John Battin
Hannah
- [71]
- May 30 *f* Sarah Wife of John Mackmallon
and
f Lydia their Daughter Adults
- June 6 *f* Elizabeth of Jonathan Peal
Sarah
m Joseph { of Joseph Henderson
f Elizabeth { *Elizabeth*
- 20 *f* Mary of John Gerrish
Sarah
m Benjamin of Benjamin Gale
Lydia
- July 4 *m* William of William Cocks
Mary
- 11 *m* Alexander of Alexander Hamilton
Deceased
Mary
m William of Richard Crispin
Mary
f Elizabeth of Joseph Phelps
Elizabeth
f Mary of John Knap Junior
Mary
- 25 *f* Mary of William Stewart
Eunice
- Aug. 29 *m* Jonathan of Joseph Glover
Mary
- Sept. 12 *f* Hannah of Nathaniel Archer
Hannah
- Oct. 3 *m* John of Benjamin Glover
Susannah
10 *m* John of John Flynt Deceased
Jane
17 *m* Nathaniel of Jeffry Lang
Hannah
- Nov. 14 *f* Sarah Kempton Adult
28 *f* Elizabeth of Joseph Silsby
Mary
- Dec. 26 *f* Susannah of John Holliman
Susannah
f Abiel Marston Adult
- Jan. 4 *f* Hannah of Tobias Davis Junior
Lydia
9 *m* Robert of Robert Peal
Mary
16 *m* Paul of Paul Mansfield Junior
Sarah
m Samuel of Philip Sanders
Mary
m Benjamin of Peter Silver De-
ceased
Elizabeth
- 23 *f* Margarett Wife of Clement Eng-
lish
- 30 *m* Benjamin of John Massey
Jane
f Mary of John Carrill
Provided
- Feb. 6 *m* Nathaniel of John Seas
Abigail
13 *f* Sarah of Benjamin Blyth
Mary
27 *m* Jonathan of John Webber
Sarah
- 1736 51 were Baptised
1737
Mar. 6 *f* Sarah of Henry Moses
Sarah

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- | | | | |
|----------|--|---------|--|
| | <i>m</i> Joshua of Wills Morton
<i>Abigail</i> | | <i>f</i> Susannah of Samuel Smith
<i>Susanna</i> |
| 13 | <i>m</i> John of Joseph Wakefield
<i>Mary</i> | Oct. 9 | Daniel of <i>Daniel</i> King
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| 20 | <i>f</i> Margarett of Clement English
<i>Margarett</i> | 16 | <i>m</i> William of Robert Gray Junior
<i>Ruth</i> |
| 27 | <i>m</i> John of Benjamin Cook
<i>Elizabeth</i> | 23 | <i>m</i> John of Andrew Millet
<i>Ruth</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>Ahijah</i> Estes
<i>Mary</i> | 30 | <i>m</i> Samuel of <i>Peter</i> Cheevers
<i>Margarett</i> |
| Apr. 3 | <i>m</i> John of Bonfield Felt
<i>Margarett</i> | | <i>m</i> Benjamin of Benjamin Rhodes |
| 10 | <i>f</i> Hannah of James Marston
<i>Sarah</i> | Nov. 6 | <i>m</i> Jonathan of <i>Joseph</i> Glover
<i>Mary</i> |
| May 1 | <i>m</i> Ebenezer of Zachariah Curtis
<i>Abigail</i> | 13 | <i>f</i> Elizabeth of <i>Timothy</i> Pickering
<i>Lydia</i> |
| 22 | <i>m</i> William of Benjamin Bootman
<i>Elizabeth</i> | 20 | <i>m</i> Charles of <i>Charles</i> King Junior
<i>Sarah</i> |
| June 12 | <i>f</i> Abigail of Benjamin Felt
<i>Abigail</i> | 27 | <i>m</i> Benjamin of <i>Benjamin</i> Gerrish
Junior
<i>Elizabeth</i> |
| 19 | <i>f</i> Deborah of <i>Benjamin</i> Gillingham
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | Baptised on Account of Its Grand-
Parents — Benjamin and Abigail
Gerrish who Publickly Promised
to Educate the Child in Christian
Manner as God should Inable
them and give Oppurtunity. The
Father of the Child who held it
up for Baptisim allowing as did
his Wife that their Parents should
have oppurtunity to Educate it as
above. |
| 20 | <i>m</i> Joseph of <i>Jonathan</i> Millett
<i>Mary</i> | | |
| [72] | | | |
| July 10 | <i>m</i> Richard of John Battin
<i>Hannah</i> | | |
| Aug. 14 | <i>m</i> Joseph Pickering
and his children | | |
| | <i>f</i> Jane }
<i>m</i> Joseph }
<i>m</i> William } | Dec. 11 | <i>f</i> Elizabeth Bray Adult
and her children |
| 7 | <i>m</i> Richard of Richard Crispin
<i>Mary</i> | | <i>f</i> Abigail }
<i>f</i> Mary } |
| | This should have been recorded
before Joseph Pickering etc. | 18 | <i>m</i> Joseph of Joseph Cook
<i>Eunice</i> |
| Sept. 18 | <i>f</i> Abigail Wife of Samuel Cook
and their children | Jan. 1 | <i>m</i> Abraham of <i>Robert</i> Smith
<i>Mary</i> |
| | <i>Viz.</i> | | <i>m</i> James of <i>Samuel</i> Symonds
<i>Susannah</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Abigail }
<i>m</i> Samuel }
<i>f</i> Margarett } | 22 | <i>m</i> John of <i>Jonathan</i> Tewksbury
<i>Mary</i> |
| | <i>f</i> Mary of Joseph Henderson
<i>Elizabeth</i> | | <i>f</i> Anne of <i>David</i> Glover
<i>Sarah</i> |

- 29 *m* James of James Norrice
Lydia
- Feb. 12 *f* Katherine of Joseph Ellison
Deliverance
- 19 *m* Edward Cocks Adult
- 26 *f* Lydia of Joseph Chapman
Sarah
- 1737 47 were Baptised
- 1738
- Mar. 12 *m* Samuel of Zachariah Curtis
Abigail
- 19 *m* James of John Punchard Junior
Hannah
- 26 *m* Joseph of Joseph Roberts
Hannah
- m* Jonas of Jonas Adams
Sarah
- m* Edmund of Edmund Munnion
Mercy
- Apr. 9 *f* Sarah of William Gale
Elizabeth
- 30 *m* John of Samuel Mazury
Mary
- May 7 *f* Sarah of Jonathan Archer Junior
Abigail
- m* Paul of Paul Mansfield Junior
Sarah
- f* Mary of Samuel Cook
Abigail
- [73]
- May 7 *f* Ann of John Leach Junior
Ann
- June 4 *m* Peter of Samuel Cheever
Mary
- 18 *m* Thomas of *Bezaleel* Toppan
Mary
- 25 *m* Gibson of *Ebenezer* Clough
Anne
- July 2 *f* Lydia Pease Adult
- m* Samuel of Samuel Oakman
Rebecca
- 9 *m* Jeremiah of Jeremiah Meachum
Rebecca
- f* Elizabeth { of John Short
- f* Mary { *Elizabeth*
- 16 *m* Tobias of Tobias Davis Junior
Lydia
- m* John of John Leach Junior
Ann
- 23 *m* John of John Short
Elizabeth
- m* Ambrose of Benjamin Gale
Lydia
- 30 *m* Joseph Orne Junior Adult
who was Baptised in his Uncle's
dwelling Being so weakened with
a consumption not to be able even
to sit up in his Bed.
- m* Joshua of Francis Grant
Mary
- f* Mary of Isaac Goodale
Deborah
- Aug. 13 *m* Haskitt of *Jeffry* Lang
Hannah
- m* Joseph { of Joseph Cook Junior
- m* William { *Rachel* Twins
- 27 *f* Mary of Henry Coffin
Eunice
- Sept. 17 *f* Rachel of *James* Cook
Rachel
- Oct. 1 *f* Mary of Edward Dimond
Margarett
- Dec. 17 *m* William Bartol of Robert Peal
Mary
- 31 *m* John of *John* Holliman
Susannah
- f* Jane of John Mugford
Mary
- m* Benjamin of Joseph Henderson
Elizabeth
- m* William of Thomas Gilpin
Abigail
- Jan. 12 *m* John of William Pickering
Eunice
- Feb. 4 *m* Peard of James Fabins
Mary
- 25 *m* Angel of Edmund Symmes
Sarah
- f* Susannah of James Marston
Sarah

22 *m* Samuel of John Punchard Junior
Hannah
f Abigail of Joseph Cook
Eunice
 29 *m* Joseph of Joseph Hood
Susannah
m John of John Paul, Deceased
Sarah
m Samuel of Samuel English
Susannah
 July 6 *f* Mary of William Witherel
Abigail
 on account of Its Grandmother
 Dinah Witherel who by Its Par-
 ents Baptised It, Engaging to
 Educate it.

20 *f* Sarah of *Bezaleel* Toppan
Mary
m Thomas of Andrew Millett
Ruth
 27 *f* Sarah of Samuel Mazury
Mary
 Aug. 24 *m* Ambrose of Benjamin Gale
Lydia
 Sept. 14 *f* Lydia of William Gale
Elizabeth
f Susannah of John Battin
Hannah
f Sarah of Joseph Henderson
Elizabeth
 21 *f* Mary of Joseph Cook Junior
Rachel
 Look to Page 200 of this Book¹

¹I.e., page 304 of present text.

1660

[75] John Higginson formerly a member of this Church being removed from Gilford [*Connecticut*] and come to the Bay in order to his going for England, was by importunity prevailed with to stay here for one year, desired by 2 generall votes of the Church and towne to continue with them in the work of the Ministry. After his continuance here allmost a year he gave his answer to the call of the Church and people here in these words,

"It hath been matter of serious enquiry to me what
 "should be the will of God and my duty in this
 "great turne of my life, especially in ordering my
 "Abode here amongst you for a time which hath
 "been overruled by the Providence of God wholly
 "beyond my owne intention in my removall from
 "the place where I was before. And yet truly when
 "I have considered all, I encline to look at the call
 "of the people here as the call of God for my con-
 "tinuance amongst you. I desire to be thankful to
 "God and thankfull to you all for your Love to
 "me and mine, and am willing to settle amongst
 "you as in Acts. 2.42 so when I joyn in church
 "fellowship with you

1 "So long as the church and people of God
 here continue in the stedfastnes of Faith in
 Christ and order of the gospel as now you
 doe, and

2 "So long as I finde that I can (with a good
 Conscience)

1. carry on the part of the worke of Christ
 which may belong

2. to me and discharge my duty to my
 Family.

"I doe express my selfe willing to settle amongst
 "you with a true intention, and a true affection
 "having no other thoughts or desires but to live and
 "dye amongst you as my Father did before.

"There is but one thing, I would commend unto
 "the Congregation that you would seriously think

"of a Ruling Elder, for though I should not be un-
 "willing to doe what the Lord shall enable me,
 "yet I am not free to undertake Church work
 "without the Assistance of a Ruling Elder, the
 "place being great, the people many, and the work
 "like to be much especially in such times as these.
 "And for myselfe I know my own weaknes many
 "wayes and that I shall have need of the Freedom
 "of my spirit and command of my time, that I may
 "in some measure fulfill the work of the Ministry
 "unto which I am called of God by your selves.

A motion being made for choosing a Ruling Elder:
 Mr. John Brown being nominated, after some con-
 sideration he was (in his absence) chosen by the
 Church with generall consent: On the 8th of the 5th
 moneth the call of the Church was signified unto
 himselfe being then present; he expressed his accept-
 ance of the Churches call the Lords Day after, to
 this effect

"that though he judged himselfe unfitt, and many
 "others more able for the work, yet considering
 "the call of God and his people in it, and that he
 "might be any means of the Churches settlement,
 "he did give up himselfe to the Lord and to the
 "Church in the work so farre as the Lord should
 "enable him thereunto, only his occasions at Vir-
 "ginia did require his presance there the following
 "winter and when the Lord should pleas to return
 "him safely from thence he should then continue
 "at home and apply himselfe to the work as the
 "Lord enable him.¹

¹Elder John Browne was a mariner and merchant trading
 in Maryland and Virginia. His name first appears in
 the Salem records on July 12, 1637; was shipwrecked in
 in 1660; died at Salem in 1685. He should not be con-
 fused with John Browne, gentleman, who came to Salem,
 highly commended by the Massachusetts Bay Company as
 "a man experienced in the laws of our Kingdom," but
 who was forced to return to England through the opposi-
 tion of Governor Endicott. Felt made this error but the
 autographs reproduced by Perley leave no doubt that they
 were two different persons. Cf. Perley I, 107, 166, 429.

[76] On [blank] of [blank] moneth. Letters of Recommendation and dismission from the Church of Gilford concerning J. Higginson and his wife, were read unto the Church, and they were both received members of this Church after the usuall manner. After which the Church did signify by a vote with generall consent their Election of him to the office of Pastor in this Church and he did manifest his acceptance of their call thereunto promising to attend the work of that office amongst us as the Lord should help him.

It was thought meet in regard that many of the brethren would be shortly absent upon the necessary occasions of their callings at sea, to hasten the ordinance of the Pastor and Elder, which was accordingly agreed upon to be on the [blank]¹ of the 6 month; and letters were sent unto 4 of the neighbor churches of Ipswich Linne Reading and Boston, to give them notice of the churches intencion about the ordination at that time, desiring the presence of their Elders and Messengers then.

The day above said J. Higginson was ordained Pastor with prayers and Fasting and imposition of hands, preaching out of I Corinthians 3.7. He that plants is nothing and he that watereth is nothing but God that gives the encreas.

The Church having no Elders then, our honoured brother Major Hawthorne and 2 Deacons imposed hands on the Pastor and then the Pastor and the 2 Deacons imposed hands on the Ruling Elder, the Elders of the foresaid churches being present (with many others) Mr. Norton Teacher of the Church of Boston did in the name of the rest give the right hand of fellowship to both our Elders showing from Galatians 2.9 that the right hand of fellowship was a signe of the communion and helpfullnes which both churches and Elders were engaged in one toward another as the case might require.

¹August 29, 1660. Cf. Williston Walker. *The Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism*, N. Y., 1893, p. 112.

A Church meeting
Sept. 10

At a meeting of the Church September 10
It was agreed upon and voted by the Church.

1. Concerning catechizing: that Mr. Cottons Catechisme be used in their Families in teaching of their children in order to publike catechizing in the congregation:
2. Concerning the Lords Supper:
 1. For the time of the Administration of it to be in ordinary course once a month.
 2. For the charge of it, the Lords Supper being proper to the Church, it was thought meet not to take in the help of non members contribution for it; therefore it was agreed upon: That every member of the Church (except the poor) doe bring in to the Deacons halfe a crown in merchantable pay, it being left unto their discretion to provide the bread and wine, and when the summe raised by the halfe crownes is spent, then the Deacons to propound unto the Church for another contribution in the same way for the same end.
 3. That on dayes of Humiliation and Thanksgiving the Deacons propound for a contribution for the poor of the Church.
 4. That Major Hawthorn Mr Batter Mr Price and 2 Deacons together with the Pastor be desired to review the Church booke and to report such things to the Church as they conceive worthy of consideration.

Review of the former
Church booke

After a sufficient time spent by the forenamed brethren in reviewing the Church booke, they gave this account unto the Church. that they conceived the booke itselpe and paper of it being old not well-bound and in some places having been wett and torne, and not legible and not like to continue long to be of use for Posterity therefore they thought it best that it were kept in safety by the Elders by that means it may be of good use so long as it will last. Only some few passages in it which doe reflect upon particular

persons or upon the wholl Church without any Church vote and without due prooffe, they did mark in the booke as thinking these should be struck out.

1. Also that in the New book; that in all matters tending to censure, nothing to be brought to the Church, nor left upon record, without sufficient proof.
2. That all Church Acts (or Votes) be so recorded as to be read unto the Church, if it may be at the time when the vote is passed; if not to be read the first thing at the next Church meeting.
3. That any brother have liberty to see the Church book for his satisfaction.

Any brother to have liberty

[77] These things were consented unto by the Church, onely some of the brethren propounded which was readily consented to, that there might be liberty to such as desired it to see those passages mentioned in the former book for a moneths time

It was also then agreed to have a publike Day of Humiliation.

1. To humble ouselves under the afflicting hand of God in the generall sickly time this winter, and in letting loose Seducers to prevaile so farre with so many in this place.
2. To seek the Lord for his presence with us in carrying on Church work and for his mercy in reducing those that goe astray.
3. To renew our covenant and to adde the clause of taking heed of the leven of the doctrine of the Quakers.
4. To seek the Lord for the peace and welfare of ourselves, and of our native land. Accordingly on the first week of the first moneth the Church and people here assembled in a day of Fasting and prayer and the Pastor spake something from Rev. 3.10 concerning the hower of Temptation, and also concerning our duty of Commandment keeping from Psalm 50.5. In the close of the day the

Church covenant was renewed and the clause added, that By the help of Christ we would endeavour to take heed and beware of the leaven of the doctrine of the Quakers according to the command of our Saviour Christ in Mathew 16.

1661 It pleased God to returne home our Elder Mr. Brown in safety from Virginia in the 3rd month notwithstanding the casting away of his vessel and goods to his great losse, and a great danger he was in afterwards by the Indians which preservation and deliverance was related by himselfe and for which sollemn thanks was rendered to the Lord in the congregation.

Elders attending every
2nd Day

Soon after the Elders gave publike notice that they should be present at the Pastors house every 2nd day of the week at one o clock and so spend the afternoon (and more if there should be need) with any who should come to them in a preparative way in order to the Churches knowledge and consent.

At a meeting of the Church September 9

State of the Children
of Members

These following Propositions concerning the state of the children of members were agreed upon and voted by the church according to Scripture:

1. That the children of the members borne in the Church or received with their Parents in their minoritie are true and reall members by virtue of divine Institution, according to that in Genesis 17.7. I will establish my covenant with thee and thy seed after thee to be a God unto thee and thy seed. The name of the children are put into the covenant by the Lord as well as the Parents name. Acts 3.25: such children are expressly called the children of the covenant which God made with Abraham.
2. The membership of such children doth not cease but by virtue of some other divine Institution, viz that of Excommunication. Matthew 18., I Corinthians 5 they are brethren therefore not to be accounted as Heathens, Publicans or wicked persons but by a just and orderly Excommunication. Hence it followes.

1. Such children have a right of claime to all the ordinances as they are capable of enjoying them in an orderly way, because they are children of the covenant Acts 3.25, and brethren Matthew 18
2. They have a right unto baptisme in their Infancie that being now the first Seal of the Covenant, and these being children of the Covenant Acts 3.25 and our Saviour witnessing for them that such children belong to the Kingdome of Heaven. Matthew 19.14.
3. They are under the watch and care of the Elders who are to take heed unto all the flock over which the holy ghost hath made them overseers, but such children belong to the flock, they must take care of the Church of God. I Timothy 3.5.
4. They are under the watch and care of the wholl Church, and in case of just offences they may and ought to be proceeded with either privately or publicly in an orderly way according to Matthew 18 and Luke 17.3. If thy brother offend thee, these are brethren.
5. That it is the Parents duty by diligent Instruction of their children to prepare them for and bring them to the triall of their fitnes for full communion. Deuteronomy 6.7. Thou shalt teach these words diligently unto thy children. Genesis 18.19 Abraham will command his children to keep the way of the Lord. Joshua 24.15 I and my howse will serve the Lord.

[78] 6. When they are at years of discretion and desire to joyn in full communion it belongs to the Church to judge of their fitnes for full communion in an orderly way. I Corinthians 5:12 Do not ye judg those within. (1) It belongs to the Elders Duty to examine them of their knowledge with Application to themselves; that it may be knowne they are able to examine themselves judge themselves and discern the Lords body, according to I Corinthians 11. (2) The Elders making known to the Church their desires for full communion the parties are in a Church meeting to expresse their own desire, their owning their Parents

This last was added another time—but afterwards this last was otherwise agreed upon and consented unto, first the case of Bartholomew Gidny and after that in all others of the children of the Covenant vide 1665 at this mark pag 84¹

¹I.e., p. 103 in present text.

covenant, and their knowledge with Application to themselves, if they can; or, the Elders to read for them what they have received from them.

And if there be no just exception against them in a moneths time they are to be received unto full communion to enjoy and use their right in the Lords Supper, and in votes as other members doe Acts 10. 47. Can any man forbid, etc.

At a meeting of the Church about October last

Richard Harvey
Mary Lay

Richard Harvy, and Mary Lay having stood propounded for a moneths time, and no exception against them, they were received unto membership by consent of the brethren; they making their confession and testimony given of their conversation.

Letters to the
members abroad

The Elders propounding the case of divers members removed from us divers years. It was consented unto that the Elders should write unto them to desire them that as the Lord gives them opportunitie they would either returne to us or els joyn unto some other Church which was accordingly done.

And whereas divers members of the Church as Joseph Boys John Kichin Joseph Pope and his wife, Mrs. Gardiner and John Maston, were generally known to absent themselves from the ordinances of Christ amongst us some of them appearing and giving no just reason for their withdrawing to avoid teediousnes our brethren Major Hauthorne Mr. Bartholmew and brother Prince were desired to bestow as much time in private discourse with them as they should think meet; that if it be possible they might gaine them, and to report what successe they find the next Church meeting.

A motion being made by some Elders in the Bay unto this Church to joyn with them in a day of Humiliation to seek the Lord for his mercy and favour in removing the judgment of sicknes, and for preventing our fears, and continuing the blessings of Church and Commonwealth which was consented unto and kept on December 22.

Mr. Blackleach and his wife being removed to live at Hartford desired their dismissal unto that Church, which was consented unto by the Church here and sent unto them by the Elders.

The Generall Court of this Colonie being exercised this wintertime with many difficulties, taking into consideration the many sinnes that might provoke the Lord against his people, in particular unprofitableness under the means, decay of first love, neglect of the order of the Gospell, inclination in the young generation to Prophanes etc. and the many dangers we are lyable to in these times from complaints against us, intrusion of Heretics, the Combination of Anti-Christ against all the Servants of God.

The Court did commend unto all the Churches and Inhabitants of this jurisdiction, and appoint the 2nd day of the 11th moneth to be kept as a day of Humiliation and Supplication to the Lord for a thorough returning from our provoking evils, and for the diverting of such calamities as may be coming upon us and the people of God elsewhere.

Which day was accordingly kept at the time appointed.

[79] At a church meeting 22 of the 11th moneth

Charles Gott
Exercise Conant
Jeh[*odan*] Harvy
H: Sallo's
Ab. Hill

These being children of the Church having been propounded a moneth time and no exception against them they made their confession and renewing their covenant were admitted unto full communion.

The Answer returned concerning the forementioned withdrawing members was that they were some of them in a more plyable way then formerly and therefore any further proceeding was respited till the next meeting that the Elders and some brethren might have opportunity of conference with them in the mean time.

The Elders and our brothers Bartholmew and Price were desired to consider of the cases of any of the children of the Church who have given offence before their membership was acknowledged by the

churches vote, to speak with them and to make report at the next church meeting

James Rising

James Rising admitted to the Lords Supper as recommended by Mr. Whites letter, if no just exception be against him before the next sacrament he to procure his dismissal as soon as he can.

The Church consented to the baptizing of Mrs. Elizabeth Conants child upon the letter from the Church at Corke testifying of her membership there.

At a church meeting 19th of the 12th moneth

Josuah Ray
Elizabeth Croad
Abigail Kippins
Mary Woodbery
Elizabeth Hill

These being members of the Church having been propounded a moneths time and no exception against them, they made their confession and renewing their covenant were admitted to full communion.

Elizabeth Hill the wife of Zebulon Hill also made her confession and had good testimony for her conversation; and so to be admitted unto membership the Lords day following.

Excommunication of
J. Boys
J. Maston
J. Kitchen

The case of the 6 members who had foresaken the Church Assemblies was again considered, and they not being gained by all the forementioned dealings of the Church with them, nor so much as coming to the Elders for conference as was desired, nor making their appearance before the Church as they were warned to doe; they having so long a time forsaken the fellowship of the Church, and in so doing cast out themselves and cast of[f] the Church, in the issue of the consideration by a vote of the Church it was consented to that these 3, J Maston, John Kichin and Joseph Boys should have the sentence of Excommunication pronounced against them and by another vote of the Church that the other 3, J. Pope and his wife and Mrs. Gardiner should be admonished, and further time given to them. Accordingly on the Sabbath following the Pastor preaching on Hebrews 10:25 Not forsaking the Assembling of ourselves together as the manner of some is; shewed from thence the greatnes of the evill of those brethren and sisters in a constant war and course of breaking

Admonition of Pope
and wife, Mrs. Gardiner

the 2nd and 4th commandments, and that their way was a casting out the Church and casting out themselves. In the close of the afternoon exercise according to the forementioned votes of the Church he pronounced the sentence of Excommunication upon John Maston, John Kitchin, J. Boys and the sentence of admonition upon J. Pope and his wife and Mrs. Gardiner which later was sent unto them in writing by 2 of the brethren.

Hill

Elizabeth Hill was then received unto membership

1662

Synod at Boston
March 10

On 26 of 12th moneth being the Sabbath day was read an order from the General Court, for calling of a Synod, this Church (as the rest of the Churches in the Colony) being desired to send their Messengers of Elders and brethren to Boston on the 10th of the 1 moneth, there to discusse and declare what they shall judge to be the minde of God revealed in his word concerning these 2 Questions. 1. who are the subjects of Baptisme 2 Whither according to the word of God there ought to be a Consociation of Churches and what should be the manner of it. It was left unto consideration till the Lords Day following when Major Hawthorne Mr. Bartholmew and the Pastor were chosen to go to the Synod at the time appointed; which accordingly they did; the Synod continuing together allmost a fortnight, finding questions to be weighty and that divers of them could not then stay longer together they adjourned the Synod to the 10th of the 4th moneth next, this the messengers of this church gave notice of on the next Sabbath after their returne home.

Adjourned till June
10th

[80]

Excom. of Mrs. Gardiner
J. Pope and wife

About 2 moneths after the sentence of Admonition was sent unto Mrs. Gardiner, Joseph Pope and his wife they sent in their answer in writing denying to continue their fellowship with the Church in the ordinances of God charging the Church with bloodie cruelty etc. which writings of theirs being read unto the Church, they did vote the sentence of Excommunication which accordingly was pronounced by the Pastor.

The Synod meeting again on the 10th of June was adjourned again till the 10th of September of which notice was given to the Church.

Our Brother Rayment and his wife removing their dwellings to Seabrook desired letters of recommendation to the Churches in those parts which was granted by the Church.

A day of Thanksgiving October 19 The Church was acquainted with 2 orders from the Generall Court the one recommending to the Churches a day of thanksgiving on November 5 with referens to the safe returne of the messengers giving such a portion of the fruits of the earth after threatning to deprive us of all, and the continuance of the mercy of the Gospel to us hitherto, the other recommending also a day of Humiliation on December 5 in consideration of the afflicted and low estate of the cause and people of God universally in these times together with some publike rebukes of God amongst ourselves: which 2 dayes were accordingly kept at the times agreed upon.¹

A fast

Mr. Croad and S. Ray making their confession were received unto membership on the Lords Day.

Sara Ray

Lot Conant and Mark Bachelor making their confession and owning the covenant in a church meeting were admitted unto full communion

Lot Conant

Mark Bachelor

The Pastor and Mr. Bartholmew being desired by the Church were present at the ordination of Mr. Brock Pastor of the Church at Reading. November 12.²

Brock

¹Rev. John Norton, teacher of the First Church in Boston, and Simon Bradstreet were chosen agents for the Colony by the General Court to go to England to negotiate with the Restoration government. They sailed on February 10, 1661/2 and returned in the Fall with a letter from Charles II confirming the charter and promising amnesty for past errors. Unfortunately the gratitude of the people was short lived and the two agents were criticized because they had failed to accomplish more.

²John Brock (1620-1688) Harvard College, 1646; settled First Church in Reading (now Wakefield), 1662-1688.

At a Church meeting 12 of 11 moneth

Synod book

The Pastor gave a notice to the Church that now the result of the fore mentioned Synod was printed and to be had at Boston and the consideration of the matters therein contained was commended to the Church by the General Court.

Ab[igail] Bachiler
Elizabeth Bachiler

Ab[igail] Bachiler daughter of John Bachiler and Elizabeth Bachiler daughter of Joseph Bachiler having been propounded a moneths time for no exception against them they making their confession and renewing their covenant were admitted to full communion. John Dodge John Hill Mary Westgate having been propounded a moneths time, no exception against them; for making their confession and having good testimony for their conversation they were to be admitted unto membership on the Sabbath following.

J. Dodge
J. Hill
J. Rising
M. Westgate
S. Ruck

James Rising having a letter of dismissal from the Church at Bermudas and Mrs. Sara Ruck having a letter of dismissal from the Church at Concord, these letters of dismissal were read and accepted by the Church and they also to be admitted unto membership in this Church on the Sabbath following. Robert Allens recommendation granted to the church at Norwich according to his desire.

Robert Allen
Recom.

On the Lords Day following John Dodge John Hill M. Westgate James Rising Sara Ruck were admitted unto membership after the usual manner.

[81]
1663

At a Church meeting March 30

Mary Balsh Elizabeth Williams and Dammaris Mansfield being propounded a moneth and no exception against them: (the daughter of our brother Conant, of H. Skerry, of Mr. Stileman) making their confession were admitted unto full communion and renewing their Covenant.

Ambrose Gale

Ambrose Gale having been propounded a moneth, no exception against him he making his confession, was admitted unto membership on the Lords Day following by consenting to the Covenant.

Elizabeth Woodbery was also received unto membership the Lords Day following in the same manner.

Also a day of publike Humiliation was then propounded and consented unto which was observed on, the 22 of the 2nd moneth.

At a Church meeting last of 6 moneth.

Mrs. Helwys the daughter of Major Hawthorn Rachel Raiment the daughter of T. Scrugs Elizabeth Hasket daughter of J. Hardy H[annah] Baker daughter of J[ohn] Woodbery having been propounded a moneth and no just exception against them, making their confession and renewing their covenant were admitted unto full communion.

Edmond Pach having been propounded a moneth and no just exception against him he made his confession, and had good testimonie for his conversation was on the Lords Day following admitted unto membership by the vote of the Church.

Eunice Smith the wife of brother Potter now living at Fairfield her dismission having been formerly granted, was now sent unto the Church September 7.

beginning of October

Letters were sent from the Church at Gloster, giving notice of their intention to ordaine Mr. Emerson¹ as their Pastor and desiring this Church to send their Messengers to be present at the ordination. The Pastor and Captain Lothrop and W. Allen were desired by this Church to goe thither at the time appointed which they did, and at their return an account was given to the Church by the Pastor and the ordination was approved of by the messengers of the Churches then present.

Nov. 9

Letters were sent unto the Church from Topsfield, signifying their intention of joyning in Church fellowship, and in ordaining Mr. Gilbert² their pastor,

¹John Emerson (1625-1700), Harvard College, 1656; settled Gloucester, 1661-1700.

²Thomas Gilbert (1610-1673). Came to New England in 1661; settled Topsfield 1663-1671; dismissed for intemperance in 1671; accused of sedition in 1666.

desiring this Church to send their messengers to be present with them on the day appointed and accordingly the pastor and brother Porter were desired by the Church here, to goe thither then which they did and after their returne an account was given to the Church by the Pastor that for the substance their proceedings at Topsfield in the churchgathering and ordination there was approved of by the messengers of the churches there present.

Also our brother Browning living at Topsfield and desiring his dismissal that he might joyn in church fellowship there it was granted by the church here.

Nov. 20

A day of thanksgiving was propounded and consented to by the Church with relation to the mercies of the year, and the Lords continuance of our peac and liberty thus long in such times as we live in, which was accordingly kept, at the time appointed.

Dec. 12

It was propounded to the consideration of the Church whether God did not call us unto more frequency in Publike days of Humiliation and seeking to the Lord for mercy with respect unto that great affliction and reproach which is come upon so many thousands of Ministers and Christians in these times by means of Episcopall usurpation, and human impositions in the worship of God, also with respect unto dangers threatning ourselves. It was chearfully consented unto that once a moneth for the 4 following moneths to set apart a day for seeking the face of God in sollemn Humiliation and prayer which was accordingly done on the last of which 4 days viz. the 16th of the first moneth the Church Covenant was read and sollemnly renewed by this Church.

Dec. 10

[82] There was a Church gathering and ordination of Mr. Newman¹ Pastor there, at their request unto this Church the Pastor, Mr. Conant and Captain Lothrop was desired to be present there who gave account afterward that the proceedings there were approved

Wenham

¹Antipas Newman (1627-1672) settled Wenham, 1657-1662.

by the messengers of the Churches, also Mr. Got and his wife and his sonne Charles and Mark Bachilor at their desire were dismissed then from hence to joyne with the Church there.

1664 At a meeting of the Church. March 27

Freeborn Sallo's the daughter of brother Wolfe having made her confession and renewing her Covenant ther being no exception against her she was admitted to partake of the Lords Supper.

Christopher Babbidge, Mrs. Woodcocke, Margery Williams the wife of Isack Williams and Jone Pitman the wife of Thomas Pitman of Marblehead having been propounded the usuall time, there being no exception against them, and sufficient testimonie for their conversation they were on the Lords Day following admitted unto membership by the vote of the Church.

4 moneth 5 day
Elder Brown dismission from his office

Elder Brown upon his return from Virginia this spring finding by experience his occasions such as he could not attend the office of an Elder with the constancy and expence of time that the work of it did require, and professing a need of attending his calling as a seaman, when he was to be much absent from the Church, he desired of the Church that they would dismis him from his office that he might with more freedome of Spirit attend the necessary duties of his calling. The Church after some time of consideration consented to his desire, and accordingly on the 5th day of the 4th moneth he was dismissed from his office.

W. Dountons Recommendation

A letter of recommendation was read unto the Church from a Church at Weymouth wherein William Dounton and his wife and Edward Humber were recommended unto the Communion of this Church, which was accepted and they admitted to Communion with us by virtue of the Communion of Churches.

A Fast

An order from the Generall Court was read, wherein in regard of the many distractions and troubles of this

colony and the afflicted state of the people of God in other places was recommended to all the Churches of this colony, the 15th day of the 4th moneth as a day of Humiliation and prayer which was accordingly observed on the day appointed.

4 moneth-19 day

A letter of dismission was desired by Johanna Town and Margaret Reddington to the Church at Topsfield, which was accordingly granted by the church here and sent unto them.

5 moneth-17 day

The Pastor acquainted the Church with an accusation and prooffe against Samuel Archer Senior, for Drunkennes, taken out of the records of the County Court before which he was convented and censured viz. Isack Williams affirmed that the last winter before one of the dayes of Humiliation Samuel Archer came to his howse and was distempered with drink as he conceived Mr Batter affirmed the same, that his carriage was such as he conceived him distempered with drink.

Accusation and proof
agst. S. Archer for
drunkennes

Christopher Walker affirmed that one day before a day of Humiliation the last winter in the evening he met Samuel Archer in the street by Mr. Browns he saw him fall down, and being near him went unto him, and spoke to him, and he answered him not but said Hugh, and he rising up went towards Goodman Princes rayles and there stumbled and fell down again, and after he was got up again he observed he went in a staggering way. The following Testimonies were taken upon oath before the honoured Magistrate Major Hawthorn at Marblehead on 6th of 5 moneth Rachel Codner Mary Brown and Sara Pike affirmed that upon a 2nd day of the week this summer they saw Samuel Archer of Salem lead an Indian woman by the hand along the way, and that he reeled very much []¹ they conceived him to be very much in drink. Luke Morgan and Georg Knight both of Marblehead affirmed that at the time above expressed they saw Samuel Archer put from him the

[83]

¹The bottom edge of the page is badly worn and three or four words have been lost.

Indian woman, and that he took up with his hand the lap of his skinne or coat and threw it aside.

This accusation and proof being read on the Lords Day, a meeting was then agreed on for further hearing of the case, which was on the 27th day of 5th moneth, the Church being met: when after the reading of the formal accusation and proof again, Samuel Archer presented a writing desiring it might be read, wherein amongst other things he did confess that he had sinned against God, dishonoured his profession and grieved the Spirit of his brethren by his often drinking more than was meet etc.

Admonition

The Pastor then showed his sinne by application of Gods word unto him and his scandalous sinne from the Ephesians 15.28 which speaks of excessive drinking, and Corinthians 6.10.5 that drunkards are excluded from the kingdom of heaven; and he was remembered that he had formerly been admonished¹ many years ago for the sinne of drunkennes and that his falling into it now again was an aggravation of his former evill, divers other things were also spoken to him by divers of the brethren to help forward his Conviction and Repentence, and so it was left for the present.

Impenitence

3 weeks after he was warned by the Pastor to come before the Church on the Lords Day viz 21 day of 6 moneth, when he was called but came not, making his excuse that he was not well. The Sabbath following being the 28th day he was called againe, and then appeared: when he was farre from manifesting any repentance in his expressions he did seem to comfort himself that he had confessed his sin and God had pardoned him also recriminating others Brother Rixe, Major Hauthorn, and Mr. Batter did then witnes that since he had been now dealt with in the Church assembly for his drunkennes he had fallen again into the same sinne in some degree. The issue was there being none to witnes for him, and no signe of repentance appearing in him, but rather signes of

Excommunication

¹*Excommunicated* struck out.

one besotted and hardened in his way, the Pastor propounded, and it was by the vote of the brethren generally consented unto, that he should be excommunicated out of the Church.

The sentence of Excommunication was accordingly pronounced on the Sabbath following viz. Sept 4 pronounced by the Pastor from the 1 Corinthians 6.10 shewing that impenitent drunkards are excluded from the Kingdome of Heaven, which was applied unto him and that text was afterwards for divers Sabbaths emproved for a warning to others.

Fast

There was another Fast recommended from the Generall Court in regard of the Lords frown, taking away much of the fruits of the earth and sending other signes of Gods displeasure against us which was accordingly observed on the day propounded viz. 1 of 7 moneth

Another Fast was also kept on the 16 of November upon the same grounds for the same ends with the former.

Mrs. Banks

On the 6th of 9th moneth the Church was acquainted with the desire of Mrs. Lydia Banks who had been absent from the Church 22 years that she might be dismissed to a Church in London of which Mr. Nye¹ is Pastor which was consented to by the Church.

Governors
Dismission

Also the desire of our Honoured Governor and his wife was made known to the Church for their dismissal to the Church at Boston which was accordingly consented to by the Church and sent unto them.²

Synods propositions
read

About the same time was a meeting of the Church for the reading of the propositions of the Synod touch-

¹Probably Philip Nye (1596?-1672), a distinguished Puritan leader who preached in open Conventicles in London at this time. He had earlier edited one of John Cotton's works for the press in London. Cf. *Dictionary of National Biography*, XIV, 726.

²I.e., John Endecott (1589-1664/5). He died on March 15th of that year but "Mistres Endecott" was admitted to the First Church in Boston on "the 28th day of the 3d moneth, 1665." Boston, *First Church Records*, I, 60.

ing Baptisme and consociation of churches at the end of which the Pastor promised that in time convenient he would communicate unto the brethren a short writing as a help for the [*practice of the Synod's propositions:*]¹

1665

[84]

Fast

The Generall Court sitting at Boston, finding many difficulties in the transaction of affayres with his Majesties commissioners, did send abroad a writing wherin they desired all the churches as people of God to be sensible of the many provoking sinnes, that were amongst us and also the many signes of Gods displeasure against us, and that all would apply themselves to Humiliation and Reformation and to cry mightily unto God []² that he would be reconciled to us and that in particular he would graciously encline his Majesties heart to favour us, accordingly they recommended the 22th day of the 4th moneth to be kept as a generall day of Humiliation and prayer which was observed amongst us at the time appointed as in other places.

Children of the
Covenant

On the 18th day of the 5th moneth being the Sacrament Day, the pastor preached on Acts. 3.25 you are the Children of the Covenant which God made with your Fathers. whence he delivered this Doctrine that "Children born of Parents in Covenant, they are Children of the Covenant and continue so to be, untill they be discovenanted in a way of God.

At the end of the sermon, he acquainted the church with the desire of 4 of the children of the covenant born and baptized in their church having now children born unto them desired that their children might be baptized. the parties themselves viz.

4 of them claiming
their rights

John Massy, John Gidny, Bartholmew Gidney, and Samuel Williams did stand forth and profess their

¹The edge of the manuscript is so badly worn that these words are illegible but Daniel A. White using the text a century ago apparently was able to decipher them. Cf. D. A. White. *New England Congregationalism*, p. 59.

²Word illegible. White omits it.

willingnes to own the covenant of the God of their Fathers, and did modestly claim the right of their children upto baptisme and desired they might be baptized.

Pastors Speech

The Pastor professed his willingnes and readiness to baptize these or any other children of the covenant amongst us according to his office it being clear to him to be his duty if he might doe it with the consent of the church in a peaceable way and he apprehended it as one of the great sinnes of the country that so many of the children of the Covenant were unbaptized, and that he would not that the sinne should lye any longer at his dore, being ready to do his duty — in that respect.

He also did bring to Remembrance, that the matter had been in debate at times in this church this 13 years.

That in the year 52 it was propounded by the former Teacher Mr. Norris as a Question to be agitated, concerning the baptizing of members children, and their children upon the right which was in severall church meetings debated in his time; when it was agreed that the children of Confœderates were reall members. and if he had not had grounds to believe that it was the Churches judgment that they were reall members, he had not ventured upon taking office in this Church. And after he was in office, it was brought into consideration again in severall church meetings when these 2 things were agreed upon and voted by the Church.

1. that the children of members born in the church or received in are true and reall members by divine institution
2. that their membership doth not ceas but by some other divine institution viz. excommunication.

After which there was a Synod, the result whereof was published and had been read in the church the scope of which was to show the Scripture grounds of the Doctrine that had now been delivered and that

the children of such are to be baptized. The Pastor also acquainted the church with the streight he was in, many of the children of the Covenant claiming baptism for their children which he knew not how to deny, and yet with a respect unto some brethren that were otherwise minded he had forborn as long as he could; but truly he did not see how he should be able to hold it long except he might have liberty to act in a peaceable way in this matter of baptizing the children of the covenant according to his owne judgment according to the Scriptures Luke 12 42. and though it was to be desired that we might all be of one judgment in this matter, yet it was not to be expected, but must be left unto God and time, we forbearing one another in love, as Eph.4.2. After some agitation the issue was. It was put to a vote. viz. whether . . . (M. H.¹ propounding and desiring it might be voted being but 2 appearing to offer dissent).² Whether the brethren of the church did consent that the Pastor should act in the Baptizing of the children of the covenant in this church in a peaceable way which was consented unto by the vote of the church at that time.

[85]

Vote of the Church

Children of the
Covenant baptized

Accordingly the Sabbath following viz. the 30th day of the 5th moneth the aforesaid John Massy, John Gidny, Bartholmew Gidny, and Samuel Williams having been privately examined by the Pastor did publikely profess their taking hold of the covenant, after which their children were baptized, the names of which are recorded in the catalogue of the children baptized in this church.

On the 20th day of the 6th moneth Elizabeth Stone the daughter of brother Dixy after private examination by the Pastor, did publikely profess her taking hold of the Covenant, wherupon her 4 children were baptized the names of which are also recorded in the catalogue of the children baptized in this church.

¹I.e., Mr. Higginson.

²At the bottom of the page partly illegible and torn: *The Pastor also informed the Church of some Children of the Covenant which were ————— Church meeting as soon as might be.*

Curwithy recommend Mr Curwithy and his daughter Curtis, and our brother and sister Harvy removing to Southhold desired letters of recommendation to the Church there which was granted by the Church, and accordingly sent with them.

At a meeting of the Church October 5

Admonition of 3 of
the children of the
covenant

Joseph Williams
Rebecca Bly
Remember Samon

3 of the children of the covenant born and baptized in this church having fallen into scandalous sinnes, and having been censured by the court; viz. Joseph Williams guilty of theft; Rebecca Bly and R. S. guilty of Fornication. They being called did appear and present themselves before the Church confessing their sinne, and professing their willingness to submit themselves to the ordinance of Christ. The matter of Fact being notorious needed no further proof, therefore after some of the brethren had spoken, the Pastor propounded that they might by layd under a publike and sollemn Admonition and so give them a space of Repentance which was consented to by vote of the Brethren of the Church.

Accordingly the Pastor propounded the 2 Corinthians 12 last, where it is said that many in the Church of Corinth had sinned and had not repented of the Fornication which they had committed: and then he made a personall application of the word unto these 3 delinquents charging the guilt of their sinnes upon them, shewing the danger of them and the wrath of God against then and yet his mercy promised if they did repent, each therefore was in the name of Jesus Christ required of them that they should apply themselves to repent of their sinnes before God, and due time to manifest their repentance before the Church for the removing of the scandall from our holy profession.

Notice given to all
the rest

Also notice was given unto all other Children of the Covenant amongst us that they must expect to be under the watch and discipline of the Church as well as to partake of the priviledged of the Church, and both in a regular way. *and that for time to come the brethren should bring forth such as are scandalous.*¹

¹In different ink by same hand.

A Direction for a publick profession after private examination

The Pastor did then also acquaint the Church with the writing he had formerly mentioned¹ and read unto them as a help to reduce the doctrine of the Synod into practice, it being a Direction for a publick profession after private examination by the Elders which Direction is taken out of the Scripture and points to the Faith and Covenant contained in the Scripture. it being the same for substance propounded to and agreed upon by the Church of Salem in their first beginning. 1629 6th of the 6th moneth; it being now printed any that desired it should have one of them for their use.²

B. Gidny admitted to the Lords Supper

Bartholmew Gidny propounded his desire of partaking of the Lords Supper: saying he had submitted unto Examination of the Pastor and publickly professed his Faith and owning of the Covenant, he saw not that anything more was required of him from Scripture this being considered of and spoken to by the Pastors and severall brethren, it was in that issue consented unto with respect to himselfe though with respect unto others it was left unto further consideration.

[86]

Mrs. Sherman
Such as had renewed their Baptismal In-
gagements claimed the right to the Lords Table and by the Pastor were admitted without inquiring anything further of them³

Also Mrs. Sherman the daughter of Mr. Johnson (our brother) living in Boston but belonging to this Church. Being here she submitted to the Examination of the Pastor and publickly professed her assent to the doctrine of Faith, and her consent to the Covenant and her subjection to discipline and so had her child baptized and staying here to the Lords Day after, she having been with the Pastor the day before, who examining of her declared unto the Church that he did observe her as able to examine herselfe and discern the Lords body and so she was admitted to partake of the Lords Supper.

Day of Thanksgiving

The Generall Court is considering the mercies of the last summer in giving seasonable raine when there was fears of a drought, and diverting a squadron of Dutch ships that threatened to invade our coasts, to-

¹See p. 103, above.

²See Introduction.

³In hand of Rev. Samuel Fisk.

A Fast

gether with our peace and liberty yet continued they appointed the 8th day of November to be kept as a sollemn day of thanksgiving, also considering divers causes of Humiliation amongst ourselves, and the sad condition of the people of God in other parts especially the severe hand of God in the Pestilence raging in London etc did appoint November 22 to be kept as a sollemn day of Humiliation, both which dayes were observed at the times appointed.

At a church meeting 4th of 11th moneth

Edmond Gale
Henry West
Elizabeth West
Thomas West
admitted to
membership

Edmond Gale, Henry West, and Elizabeth West his wife and Thomas West being non-members having stood propounded a moneth, and no exception against them, they made their confession, and were on the Lords Day following received unto membership with this Church by the vote of the Church, and by their own entering into Covenant.

Hanna Brown
Love Stevens
John Massy
John Ingersall

Also at the same time Mrs. Hanna Brown, Love Stevens, John Massy and John Ingersall were presented to the Church; as children of the Covenant such as had been either born in the Church or received with their Parents in their minoritie; and such having been formerly at severall times owned as members of the Church. The Pastor expressed that after his examination of them he did approve of them, as able to examine themselves and discern the Lords body, they being not under any Church censure he knew not of any Church-barre according to the Scriptures that might hinder them from partaking of the Lords Supper several of the Bethren did speak for it; only 2 of the Brethren which were absent the former church meeting when the same thing had been considered consented to and practised in the case of Bartholmew Gidny; they peaceably expressed their dissent, and that they would not oppose. The weather being cold and having been long together the Pastor propounded to them the substance of the doctrine of Faith and Covenant which God had made with their Fathers and the covenant duties they were engaged in in the church: which they all pro-

fessed their consent unto and so thus had their liberty to partake of the Lords Supper.

Fast

The council of this jurisdiction held at Boston on the 15th of the first moneth appointed the 5th day of the 2nd moneth to be kept as a day of sollemn Humiliation and prayer in consideration of the provoking sinnes amongst us and the tokens of Gods displeasure against us also considering the sinnes calamities and sufferings of the people of God in other parts, and expecting that many of Gods great workes, and gracious promises are not farre off from accomplishment as the conversion of Gods ancient people and the destruction of Antichrist.

This day was accordingly observed at the time appointed.

1666

[87]

On the 27th of the 3rd moneth: being the Lords day a writing was read subscribed by 6 hands wherin some brethren living at the Farmes, did acquaint the rest of the Church and people living at the towne that by reason of their distance from the meeting house they found many inconveniencies that they and their Families could not so comfortable attend the church assembly for the worship of God on the Lords day as they desired and therfore made a Motion to the rest that either they would help them to a Minister or leave them to their liberty to procure one themselves. This proposition was left unto consideration.

Farmers Proposition

At a Church meeting 23 of the 5th moneth

John Maskall
Mrs. Endecot
Sara Henly
received to
membership

John Maskall Mrs. Endecot and Sara Henly of Marblehead being nonmembers having stood propounded a moneths time, did now make their profession, and had good testimonie for their conversation they were on the Lords day following received unto membership with this church by the vote of the Church and by their own entring into the covenant of the Church.

10 of the children of
the covenant admitted
to the Lords Supper
Also Joseph Grafton
junior

Also at the same time Thomas Giggles, Mrs. Anne Gardiner, Mrs. Elizabeth Grafton, Mary Suasy, Lydia Pitman, Mary Herick, Lydia Herick, Hanna Woodbery, Elizabeth Patch and Mary Looms who had been either born and baptized in the Church or received with their parents in minority were presented before the Church. The Pastor expressing that after examination of them he did approve of them as able to examine themselves and discern the Lords body and that they being not under any church censure he knew not of any church barre to hinder them from partaking of the Lords Supper. After some speeches of some of the brethren, they expressing their assent and consent to the confession of Faith and covenant read unto them, they had their liberty to partake of the Lords supper as other children of the Covenant formerly.

A message to the 4 un-
der church censure

After some consideration of the 4 children of the Covenant under Church censure the Pastor and brother Horne were desired to doe a message to and from the Church, that it was expected they should in convenient time come and appear before the church to manifest their repentance.

Farmers proposition
considered

Ther was some consideration of the Farmers motion for another minister but another writing being at this time propounded by 5 of the near neighbors and brethren there abouts desiring that they might not be Engaged in that designe. it did not appear they had a competent number also (by such of the brethren as spake) it was thought not at present to be seasonable to prosecute such a matter. Also that the agitation of some things that did concern it was more proper to a town meeting.¹

¹The following entry at this point has been stricken out, viz: *A motion was read from the Council for some contribution toward the relief of some of Christophers people which was considered and was conceived of (as it was also by others abroad) it would best be done by bearing part in the Country rates not excluding free contributions of such as were able and understood the case.*

John Archer
admonished for
drinking to excesse

On the 9th of 12 moneth by the Lords day John Archer born and baptized in this church having been convented before the magistrate a fortnight before and fined for excessive drinking and breaking the peace, being called forth by the Pastor he appeared confessed his sinne and professed his submission to the discipline of Christ in his church. he was by the vote of the Church layd under the censure of Admonition, the pastor from Ephesians 5.18 be not drunk with wine wherin is excesse and Titus 1.6 children accused of riot and unrulines. he shewed this was the case and charged the guilt of these sinnes upon him, and required him in the name of Christ to repent of them before God and in due time to manifest his repentance in the Church.

[88]

1666

At a church meeting 6th of November

Children of the
Covenant committed
to the Lords Supper

Mr. Zerubbabel Endecot, Mr. James Browne, Mr. Jonathan Corwin, Hanna Gidney the wife of Bartholmew Gidny, Rebecca Putman the wife of John Putman and Elizabeth Hollinwood the wife of Richard Hollinwood, were presented before the church the Pastor expressed himselfe that after examination he approved of them as able to examine themselves and discern the Lords body, professing their consent to the Confession of Faith and Covenant read unto them, they had their libertie to partake of the Lords Supper as other children of the Covenant formerly.

The Pastor, and Deacon Horn acquainted the rest of the Church that they had given warning to the 4 children of the Covenant under Church Censure, that the Church expected their comeing to this church meeting to manifest their repentance for the removing of their great and hainous scandalls.

Joseph Williams
John Archer
Excommunicated

Accordingly Joseph Williams and John Archer were first called, but (1) neither of them appeared nor (2) did they send any excuse for their not comeing nor (3) did any appear to witnes anything for them as signes of Repentance (4) the Pastor and Deacon

Horne witnessed that in their speaking and dealing with them, they could not observe any signes of Repentance but rather the contrary, as besotted and hardned in their sinnes, it was generally judged by the brethren that spake and silently consented to by the rest, that they having had so long a space of Repentance granted to them and not hearing the Church they were to be cutt from their membership in this church as heathens and publicans, and the sentence to be pronounced by the Pastor on the Sabbath following; which accordingly was done with respect unto John Archer. *Onely Joseph Williams appearing on the Lords Day and desiring that further time and space might be given to him, it was consented to and he was respited unto further time.*¹

Concerning the
Baptizing of Elder
children such as Pasca
Footes in the other
Church book. Nov. 28
1652

At the same time the Pastor gave notice of the desire of divers of the members of the Church to have their Elder as well as their younger children baptized: he did also bring to remembrance which was recorded concerning this case in the other Church book namely in the case of the 8 children of Pasca Foot Nov. 28, 1652 that it was agreed upon that the Elder children should resort to the Elders and to give some account of their Faith and that no more should be done in that matter. After which on the 6 of the 12 moneth the aforesaid 8 children were all baptized by Mr. Norris the Teacher of this Church.

The present Pastor expressed himselfe to concurr with the judgment of the Church and their former Teacher in this matter. and further said that he looked upon those 2 grounds to be taken together with respect to the children of members grown up.

1. that they were the seed of confederates according to Genesis 17.7.

2. that they were sonnes and daughters that had knowledge and understanding according to Neh. 10. Accordingly he desired that such as had children unbaptized that were grown or growing up to years of discretion, that they would first bring them to him

¹Added by the same hand at a later time.

to be examined: and if upon due enquiry he found them neither ignorant nor scandalous, but such as according to their capacity did understandingly desire baptisme he was ready then to baptize their Elder as well as their younger children, divers of the Brethren did also speak for the encouragement of the Pastor in baptizing of such children in such a way.

Remember Salmon
Forgiven by the
Church

At the same time Remember Salmon was called and appeared: confessing her sinnes and shame before the Lord and his people, desiring that her soul might be washed from her sinnes by the blood of Christ and that the people of God would pray for her and that she might be reconciled to the Church.

[89]

The Pastor did expresse that at severall times he had received from her more enlarged pœnitentiall confessions of her sinnes also Deacon Horn and some others did express their observations and comfortable persuasion of some hopeful signes of Repentance in her wherupon the Pastor propounding the words of our Saviour that if any did repent we should forgive them, divers of the brethren manifested their concurrence the rest silently consenting, he did pronounce the sentence of Absolution with respect unto her.

Day of Thanksgiving

On 8th November there was observed a publike day of Thanksgiving according to the Courts order: with respect unto the mercies of the year and continuance of our peace in a such a troublesome time

a Fast

On the 22th of November there was also observed a day of Humiliation and prayer (according to the Courts order) to humble our selves under the many signes of Gods displeasure against us and to make supplication for his mercy and the continuance of our blessings as hitherto.

Motion of the brethren
on Basse River

This winter was a motion made by the brethren on Basse river to the rest of the Church here at the towne, that they might have their consent to be a Church of themselves and to have Mr. Hale for their Pastor which was left unto consideration, and the last of the 12 moneth by the consent of the

brethren both on that side of River and here at the towne was publicly observed as a day of sollemn Fasting and prayer to seek unto God for his direction and presence in such a weighty matter.

A Fast

Also in the 2d Moneth another publick day of Humiliation and prayer was observed by order from the Court of Magistrates, as a means of our further Humiliation under the signe of gods displeasure against the English Nation and in particular the burning of London together with some lesser judgments of God amongst ourselves as the small poxe in the Bay and the many dangers we are exposed onto, and to seek the Lord's Mercy for the English Nation and unto ourselves here in this wildernes.

1667

At a Church Meeting 4 [*day*] of 5th Moneth.

the children of the
Covnt and admitted
to the Lords Supper

John Gidney Samuel Archer Junior Jo: Peas, Martha Barton, Martha Foster were presented before the Church, the Pastor expressed himselfe that after Examination he approved of them as able to examine themselves and discern the Lords bodie they professing their consent to the Confession of Faith and Covenant read unto them, they had their libertie to partake of the Lords Supper as other children of the Covenant formerly.

Admitted to
membership

Goodie Guppa, Elizabeth Clifford, Mary Merit being non-members having been propounded a moneth, and no exception against them they made their confession and were on the Lords day following received unto membership by the vote of the Church, and by their own entring into Covenant.

Susanna Walker at her desire was dismissed to the Church of Boston.

About baptizing
children of Sister
Starre

The Pastor acquainted the Church with 2 cases, the one wherin it was desired by the Sister Hollinwood that her daughter Starres Children might be baptized their mother though dead, yet being in minoritie when she was received into the Church and their being good testimonie of her hopefull godlines, the Q. was why might not her children be baptized ac-

About Baptizing
Adopted children

ording to the 6 proposition¹ of the Synod which was read and left unto consideration.

the other about baptizing Adopted children. Mary Hodges concerning whom there were many that could testify her eminent godlines, and was in that way to joyn to the Church herselfe yet dying before her joyning the Church she did on her death bed give her little child to Sister Roots who with her husbands consent took it for her own child; and did sollemnly owne it before the Church desiring if it might be according to rule, that the child might be baptized. The Pastor propounded and read several passages out of Mr. Cottons Way of the Churches, Mr. Shepards Church membership of children and the answer to the 21st Qu: tending to favour the baptisme of Adopted Children, both being new cases and not within the compass of the consent which the Pastor had by the Churches vote, for the baptizing of the children of the Covenant in this Church in the year 65, he did therefore propound and leave these cases to consideration against some other time.

Libertie to use
the Bay psalme
book together
with Ainsworths

The Pastor having formerly propounded and given Reasons for the use of the Bay psalm bookes in regard of the difficulty of the tunes, and that we could not sing them so well as formerly and that there was a singularity in using Ainsworths tunes, but especially because we had not the liberty of singing all the scripture psalmes according to 3 Colossians 16 he did now againe propound the same and after severall brethren had spoken there was at last a unanimous consent with respect to the last reason mentioned that the Bay psalm book should be made use of together with Ainsworths to supply the [].²

[90]
1667

The motion and desire of the brethren and sisters on Bass River Side to be a Church of themselves having been left unto consideration for a good space of time

¹Actually Chapter XII, Section 6 of the Cambridge Platform of 1648.

²Several words illegible or torn.

July 4 the Churches
consent to the
Brethren on Basse
River side to be a
church of themselves

was now renewed, and a writing read which is as follows —

We whose names as underwritten the Brethren and Sisters on Basse River Side¹ doe present our desires to the rest of the Church of Salem that with their consent Wee and our children may be a Church of our selves — which we also present unto Mr. Hale desiring him to joyn with us and be our Pastor with the approbation of the rest of the Church. Subscribed.

1	1. Roger Conant	34. Lot Conant
2	2. Tho. Lothrop and	35. Mary Herick
3	3. his wife	36. Eliz: Woodbery
	4. W: Dodge and	37. Eliz: Haskol
4	5. his wife	38. Ralph Ellan
	6. D. Dodg Senior and	39. Peter Wolfe
5	7. his wife	40 and his wife
	8. H. Woodbery and	41. Freeborn Black
6	9. his wife	42. An Woodbery the
	10. W. Dixey and	wife of N Woodbery
	11. his wife	43. Mary Lovet
7	12. Jo: Stone Sen.	44. Eliz: Patch
8	13. Robt Morgan	45. H: Sallos
9	14. Hugh Woodbery and	46. Goodie Biose
	15. his wife	47. Lidia Herick
10	16. Sam: Corning and	48. Wido Woodbery
	17. his wife	49. An Baker
11	18. Jo. Hill and	50. Sara Leech
	19. his wife	Such as ar members
12	20. Exercise Conant	yet not in full communion
13	21. Edw. Bishop	desire to be dismissed
14	22. Rich. Brakenbery and	with their parents
	23. his wife	1. Peter Woodbery
15	24. Jo. Black Sen.	2. Jo Dodg
16	25. W: Woodbery Sen.	3. Jo Black
17	26. Nicholas Patch	4. Sam Corning
18	27. Josiah Roots	5. Nath Howard.
19	28. John Dodge	6. Humph. Woodbery
	29. Hanna Woodbery	7. Sus: Woodbery
	30. Mary Dodge	8. Jo: Woodbery
	31. Lidia Herick	9. H. Woodbery
	32. H. Herick and	10. W. Dodge
	33. his wife	11. H. Rayment

¹Subsequently incorporated as Beverly in 1668. Cf. Perley II, 406 ff.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 117

20	12. Sara Conant	19. Jos. Roots
	13. H. Herick	20. Tho: Woodbery
	14. Ephr. Herick	21. Jos. Lovet
	15. Jo. Herick	22. Bethia Lovet
21	16. Eliz: Herick	23. Rem. Stone
22	17. Ab: Stone	24. Eliz. Howard
	18. Eliz: Howard	74 in all.

This writing being read together with the names subscribed, ther was a unanimous consent of the brethren present, unto their desire, onely it was left to the Sacrament Day after when in the fullest church assembly the consent of the rest of the Church was signified by their vote in lifting up their hands. and so they have their liberty to be a Church of themselves, onely they continue members here untill their being a Church, the Lord grant his gracious presence with them.

Their Church
Covenant and
ordination of
Mr. Hale as
their Pastor

On the 9th of September these brethren of the Church gave us notice that they intended (if the Lord please) to joyn in Church fellowship together on the 20th day of the same moneth. desiring the presence of the Church here either by ourselves or Messengers. In regard of our nearnes and that they are a Church issuing out of ourselves, it was thought meet for as many to be present as could. So when the day came divers of the Brethren were present as also the Messengers of the Churches of Ipswich and Wenham. Mr. Hale propounded and read a confession of Faith and Covenant which they had often considered of amongst themselves, and did then (all that had been in full communion in the Church of Salem) expresse their consent unto that Confession and Covenant and so were owned as a particular and distinct Church of themselves, by the messengers of the Churches present and the brethren of that Church desiring of it, the Pastor of this Church was helpfull to them in the transaction of the business of the Ordination of Mr. Hale¹ as Pastor of the Church.

¹John Hale (1636-1700) Harvard College, 1657; settled Beverly, 1664-1700.

Joseph Phipeny and Docas his wife were received to membership in this Church upon their Dismission from the Church of Boston granted Aug. 6, 1667.

[91]

1668

On the 25th day of the 1 moneth at the time of the Sacrament of the Lords Supper was read letters of dismission from the Church of Boston, in the behalfe of Joseph Phipeny and Dorcas his wife, they having lived some considerable time here they were accepted by the vote of the Church unto membership in this Church, and then so they entred into covenant with this Church.

Fast

Ther was an order read from the Governor and Counsell for the observation of a publicke sollemn day of Humiliation and prayer on the 26th day of March with relation to the great concernments of the Churches and people of God here, and also in our native land and other parts of the world, which was accordingly observed.

Jo. Hathorne examined by the Pastor, at his earnest desire was admitted to the Lords Supper on a Sacrament day, upon his solemn owning the covenant of God before the Church

On the 29th day Mr. Hales motion concerning the dismission of some other of the children of that Church that had not been formerly mentioned was considered: and the answer returned was viz. that it was intended to dismisse all the children at once and together with their parents that had been members here. so that there needed not a particular dismission of any of them.¹

The Generall Court in the 8th moneth having not appointed any publicke dayes of Thanksgiving or Fast and prayer as formerly, it was propounded by the Pastor for us to keep a publick Day of Humiliation and prayer particularly with respect unto the reasons in common with others, as with respect unto the afflicted state of the Church of God abroad, the many difficulties in carrying on the work of God in Church and Court, and the death of so many ministers amongst us of late; particularly with respect unto some reasons more proper to our selves as the

¹Marginal note apparently intended to be inserted at this point.

late breakings out of sinne and prophannes amongst us and the sad appearance of divisions amongst us that we might seek to God that he would heal our spirits, and give us peace. This motion was in the issue agreed unto by the brethren of the Church, and the day was kept by us on the 23 of December.

Day of
Thanksgiving

Also with respect unto the mercies of the year past, and the constancy of Gods goodnes to us here with continuance of our peace, and the newes of peace in England and the liberty is granted to the people of God in England in such a measure it was considered and agreed on to keep a day of Thanksgiving afterward, which was accordingly done on the 14th day of the 11th moneth.¹

1669

Fast
March 25

In the beginning of the first moneth on the Sabbath an order from the Governor and Council was read wherin they recommended to all the Churches in this colony, to keep the 25 day of the moneth in publick Fasting and prayer in the sense of the many provoking evils amongst us, and the many tokens of Gods displeasure against us and the uncomfortable breaches in sundry places, and the present low estate of the Churches abroad stirring us up to seek to the Lord for mercy in these regards which day was accordingly observed here at the time appointed.

Dissenting brethren
Case at Boston

their letter

On the 3rd of the 2nd moneth was read a letter from the dissenting brethren of Boston sent unto this Church wherin they expressed that the result and advise of the Council called by the Elder and brethren the last summer was to grant them an amicable dismission in order to the propagation of another Church, this advise they had attended having several times moved for a dismission but in vaine. Therefore they made this addresse to sundry other Churches as their onely next refuge left them by Christ in his word; professing their firmnes to the government according to the Patent that they are not for any other way of Church order then that sollemnly declared from the Scriptures in the Platforme of Discipline; at the last Synod about the subject of Bap-

¹I.e. January 1668/9.

Pastor and Captain
Price sent to the
Council.

and how.

tisme and Consociation of Churches, desiring ever to maintain brotherly love and communion with the Church they desired to be dismissed from as also with the rest of the Churches. They did humbly again and again desire us in the bowels of Jesus Christ request and desire us, not to receive all sinister reports against them, but to send the Elder and messengers of our Church to meet with others in Council at Boston, upon the 13th of April to consider consult and give their helpful advise in their labouring case.¹

After the reading of this letter it was desired to deferre the issue till the Lords day after till it might be known from the Elders of Boston Church whether the Church there consented to such a Council or would give them a meeting; which by the Pastor (and others) was enquired of the week following who brought a negative answer from the Elders. Yet the Brethren of the Church generally did agree in this that ther was and ought to be a relief and remedy against miscariages in particular Churches in the Congregationall way. And in the issue by a vote they desired the Pastor and Captain Price to be present at the Council to goe not as members of the Council to vote therin, but to do what good they could as they heard Mr. Whiting² and Mr. Laiton³ of Lin Church were desired so to goe.

At a Church Meeting April. 30, 1669

Councill at Boston

The Pastor made some report of what was done at the Council wherin there was a meeting of mes-

¹Dissension had arisen in the First Church in Boston over the Half-Way Covenant and the choice of Rev. John Davenport as minister. The minority in the face of great opposition withdrew and formed the Third, later known as Old South, Church in 1669.

²Samuel Whiting (1597-1679), Cambridge University, 1616/7; settled Lynn, 1636-1679.

³Probably Thomas Loughton (died 1697), a prominent inhabitant of Lynn, who was admitted a freeman March 14, 1639, town clerk in 1672. His son, Thomas, was a deacon of the Lynn Church from 1699 until his death in 1713. Cf. Savage, III, 44. Alonzo Lewis and James R. Newhall, *History of Lynn*, Lynn, 1865, p. 155.

sengers from 13 other Churches besides Salem and Linne, and that they applied themselves first unto the Elders twice and then to the Elders and brethren of the Church of Boston the third time in way of Mediation for a pacification, but were 3 times denyed to admit of any conference with them, so the Council considered of the advise of the first Council and the Scripture grounds of it, and saw cause to approve of it, viz. that the dissenting brethren might have their dismissal and in case the Church refused denying their dismissal they might take their liberty seasonably to be a Church of themselves as if they had had a formal dismissal.

[92]
Children of the
Covenant admitted
here Lords Supper

Mrs. Putman, (Lieftenant Putmans Wife) Mrs. Abigail Ward, and Sarah Pickworth were presented before the Church. The Pastor expressed himself that after Examination he approved them as able to Examine themselves and discern the Lords Body. They sollemnly owning and renewing their Covenant, it was declared they had their Liberty to partake of the Lords Supper.

Non Members
admitted.

William Bartoll Mary Bartoll and Martha Beal of Marblehead, also Abigail Clark having stood propounded a moneth made their Confession, and in the issue there being no just exception against them, and some testimony for them, they were on the Lords day following admitted to membership of this Church by expressing their consent unto the Covenant, and by the Churches vote. G. Beal and H. Gilbert were not admitted.

It was then considered that Joseph Williams and Goodie Bly having been grossly scandlous the one for theft the other for fornication, and censured in the Court, and being children of the Covenant here, they had been publickly admonished and space of Repentance given and now this 2 year as yet they had not come, the Church agreed to send Mr. John Brown Senior and Henry Skery Senior to them to warn them to appear before the Church on the Sabbath Senight May the 9th.

Joseph Williams
restored

At which time Joseph Williams appeared and made a confession of his sinne, judging himself for it, desiring mercy and forgiveness from God and from his people. Tho his confession was more dry and more generall than was to be desired, yet Brother Brown and Brother Skery speaking something further on his behalfe what he had said to them, also the Pastor expressed that he had at severall times received sundry pœnitentiall expressions from him, as did also old Brother Browning, and there being nothing by any spoken to witness against him, which might contradict his confession. The Church in the issue enclined to accept of a low degree of a pœnitentiall confession and so by the lifting up of hands of many and silence of the rest he was by the Pastor declared to be released from his Censure and restored to the same estate he was in before, viz. as a child of the Covenant in an unblamable state.

Bly not appearing was left unto the next Church meeting.

Letter from the
Elders of the Church
at Boston

On the 16 day, being the Sabbath day was read in the publike assembly, a letter sent from 3 Elders of the First Church at Boston, to the Church of Salem, expressing their desires of a charitable Construction of their actions, and their willingness to declare the reasons of their actions when it should be desired. The Pastor declared that the week past the dissenting brethren had made use of the liberty at Charlestown in gathering into a church body of themselves, according to the advise of 2 councils in their case, with the approbation of Magistrates and Elders allowing to the law and had the right hand of fellowship given them by the Messengers from 5 Churches, so that he saw not any need of any further discourse about the contents of the former letter, at present. So it rested at the present. On the 27 day of November was observed a day of Thanksgiving for the mercies of the year, by order from General Court dated October 28.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 123

Letter from the
Pastor and Brethren
at Newbery

A letter was received and read on the Lords Day, from the Pastor and some brethren of the Church at Newbery their Elder signifying the divided and broken state of the Church there and earnestly entreating the Church here to send their Elders and a Messenger to help with others in the case, on the 3rd of November next. Our honoured brethren Major Hawthorn and Captain Price were sent as Messengers for this Church and were present at the time appointed. When they returned they shortly gave account that the Council was adjourned until the 19th day of April. At which time only the Pastor went from hence with the consent of the Church. (the other 2 brethren being hindered by weightly reasons.) At his returne from thence he made report unto the Church that though at first ther was a sad appearance of an irreconcilable breach, yet afterward the Lord was pleased so to blesse the motion made for Accomodation as to bow their hearts unto a Reconciliation on all sides. The Pastor being the leader acknowledging his own failings desiring forgiveness from God and them, and expressing his forgiveness of those that had appeared in opposition against him: many others did the like on both sides so there was a comfortable issue, they mutually binding themselves to observe the Directions of the Platforme of Discipline for time to come.¹

Council at Newbery

Thanksgiving

In the beginning of the 9th moneth an order was read from the generall Court for a day of thanksgiving on the 17th day with respect unto the mercies of the year past and in special with respect unto the merciful moderation of the raines that had threatened a Famine, which was observed at that time appointed. Also James Risings dismission was propounded and granted to Windsor Church.

¹John Woodbridge (c. 1613-1695) had been settled in 1663 as a colleague to his aged uncle, Thomas Parker (1595-1677) in the Newbury church. "A difficulty arose between him and the people on the subject of church discipline, which finally became so serious as to induce him to resign his ministry among them [1670]." Cf. W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the American Pulpit*, 9 vols. N. Y. 1857-1869, I, 129-31.

1670

Mrs. Stileman
*The first taking in of
 members on the
 Lords day Evening*¹

On the day of the 4th moneth the Pastor propounded whether it might not be expedient to admit members on the Sabbath after the evening sermon, except when there were so many that it would take up too much time, which was assented to. Accordingly old Mrs Stileman having stood propounded a moneth and no exception against her was admitted by consent of the Church. The Pastor reading her relation and she consenting to the Covenant which was propounded to her. On the Sabbath day July 10:

Fast June 16

On the 16th day of June was observed a generall Fast by order and appointment of the General Court. Which order for the Memorableness of it is here inserted.

At a Generall Court held in Boston May the 11th 1670.

The Generall Court being sensible of Gods hand upon the country sundry years in divers afflicting Providences have been desirous to enquire into the causes thereof and amongst others doe conceive these following may be considered. i.e., a selfish spirit, minding more *our owne things than the things of Christ, and of private before the publick good.*²

[93] too much slightnes and negligence in prizing and improving the Government both civil and sacred in Church and Commonwealth. a great and generall neglect of instructing and governing the rising Generation both in Families and church; a cooling of former life and heat in Spirituall Communion; too great a neglect in some places of a comfortable upholding and providing for the outward subsistence of sundry faithful ministers; too much decay of love to God and one another, and harbouring groundles jealousies accompanied with whisperings, backbiting

¹Marginal note in hand of Mr. Fisk.

²Bottom of page badly worn but text has been reconstructed from original document in Massachusetts Archives. Cf. *Mass. Bay Records*, IV, pt. II, 451.

which wayes tend to separate very Friends, too great abounding of sinne amongst us as pride, luxury, drunkennes, oppression, uncleannes and divers others. These with any¹ other sin that the Lord may upon enquiry convince his people of we desire may be confessed bewailed and a thorow Reformation endeavoured and for this purpose the Court doe appoint the 16 day of June next for a day of Humiliation to be kept throughout this Jurisdiction, and doe commend it to the Churches, Elders, Ministers and people to keep the same solemnly and seriously accordingly.

Admission of 5 members

On the 28th day of the 6 moneth Goodie Dod and Goodie Fortune of Marblehead having stood propounded a moneth were admitted to church membership after the usuall manner. On October 2 Goodie Wats² and Marget Ellis were also admitted after the usual manner.

On October 23 Mary Nowell was admitted to membership after the usual manner.

Thanksgiving

1671

On June 25. Mr. Elias Stileman his dismissal was propounded and granted with reference to his joyning with the church to be gathered at Portsmouth. Also Sister Wheeler was recommended to the Churches of New London and Norwich she living near to either of them. Also the beginning of this last winter was offered a day of publick thanksgiving by order of the Court.

At a Church Meeting March 22

Ropes
Lydia Neal
admonished

John Ropes and Lyddia Neal being children of the Covenant born and baptised in this church were publickly censured and admonished for the sin of Fornication which they had fallen into. The Admonition was consented to at this time by the vote of the Church and publickly dispensed by the Pastor the Lord's day following. Catechizing at the Pastor's house was also concluded on.

¹So also in original court record but printed as *many*.

²Or *Wate*.

126 The Records of the First Church in Salem

J. Ropes forgiven

May. About 6 weeks after John Ropes was admitted on the Lord's day to make a poenitent confession of his sin which he did unto good satisfaction. 5 or 6 of the brethren witnessing for his poenitent disposition and conversation, there was an act of Church forgiveness passed by the pastor with the consent of the Church.

1672

Flendor

Jane Flendor was propounded a moneth, no exception being against her, she was on the Lords day received into membership in this Church in the ordinary way.

3 children of the
Covenant

Sarah Marsh borne and baptized in this church: Mrs. Corwin Senior borne and baptized in Plymouth Church, by a letter of Recommendation and dismission from Marshfield Church, also An Peas from Ipswich Church all these submitting to a private Examination by the Pastor, he declaring their fitness and they owning the covenant and they were admitted as those whose membership was acknowledged as others before them to use their liberty in partaking of the Lord's Supper.

Mr. Nicholets

Mr. Nicholets¹ coming to Salem from Virginia and preaching here several times he was in the issue invited to continue for one year in a way of trial as a help in preaching the Gospel; and that they would provide for his maintenance by Contribution, in the like case this was by a vote of the Church and people together on the Lords Day as had been done formerly. After some time he propounded his desire to joyn to the Church here, and stood publickly propounded according to the ordinary time, no objection being made, he did on the Lords day August² make his profession and engaging in the covenant he was received by vote of the church.

¹Mr. Charles Nicholet or Nicholets came to Salem from Virginia in 1672 and was invited to remain for a year as assistant minister.

²Blotted, 1st or 4th.

R. Raiment The dismissal of R. Raiment and his wife to Seabrook Church was propounded and consented to and accordingly sent unto him by the Pastor.

Mr Joseph Brown
G. Giggles Mr. J. Brown and G.¹ Giggles 2 of the children of the Covenant born and baptized in this church, they submitting to private examination of the Pastor and publickly owning the Covenant were admitted to full Communion on the Sacrament day, March 9.

Nurse Goody Nurse having stood propounded a moneth and having no just exception against her, but witnesses for her, she was admitted unto membership by confessing to the covenant and with the Churches consent after the usual manner.

1673

a Fast March 2 was kept as a day of publick fasting and prayer by consent of the Church and people here, with relation to the afflicted state of the Church and people of God abroad and also the signes and fears of approaching judgments towards ourselves. The day was carried on by Mr. Hale, Mr. Nicholets and the Pastor.

Mrs. Verin Mrs. Verin junior as a child of the covenant was admitted to full communion after the usuall way. June 1.

3 more Children of
the Covenant Abigail Punchard and George Hardyes wife, as children of the Covenant were admitted to full communion in the usual way. Also Sara Giles by dismission from Linne.

Nov. 20 was a day of Thanksgiving kept by order of the Generall Court.

3 more received to
membership March 26 was a day of Humiliation kept by order of the Generall Court.

1674 April 11 on the Lords day Mr. Samuel Gardiner, Mary Gale, and Elizabeth Boyden were admitted to membership.

¹Probably Goody Giggles or Jeggles.

[94]

At a church meeting Nov 30, 1674

Attempt of gathering
a Church of Salem.
Non-Members
at Lyn.
December 8.

The Pastor acquainted the Brethren of the Church that he was informed by the Deputy Governor and Major Generall that T. Roots and Samuel Eburn had been with them for their approbation for themselves and their company to gather a church at Lyn on December 8. desired but they had expressed their non approbation, and by their advise the Pastor called this Church meeting to know whether the Church did approve of it or no. After debates and Agitation of the matter, upon many weighty Reasons that were alledged by many, it was voted by the generallity of the Brethren, that they did not approve of their sudden church-gathering, and therefore they desired them to forebear for the present that a matter of such weight might be done with more deliberation and better satisfaction. Unto such were added 6 Reasons.¹ The church also chose and desired Mr. Jo: Brown brother H. Skery, brother N. Felton and brother Ray to give notice of this vote and desire of theirs to T. Roots and company. Also they chose and desired Mr. William Brown, Mr. Batter, and Mr. Samuel Gardiner that in case they goe on to gather the Church there, that then these Brethren should go to Lin on Dec. 8. as Messengers from this church and there signify to the Assembly this vote and desire of the Church.

Frustrated

Accordingly on December 8. the Pastor and 2 of the foresaid Brethren went to Lin and did acquaint the Assembly there with this vote and desire of the Church. Also the Lord stirred up the Churches of Ipswich, Beverly and Rowly to send their Elders and Messengers to Lin, who joyned their desires with ours that there might be a present forbearance of their proceedings till there might be time for a hearing of the case.

Some of them

The issue of the day was that although the Elders and Messengers of other Churches that were desired by T. Roots, and proceeded to hear them make their

¹but drawn up by the Pastor added later in margin.

Relation yet finding their unfitnes for the Foundation of a Church, there was a Forbearance of the Church gathering for the time.¹

Order from the
governor and
Magistrate for
a Council:

On January 4 the Pastor received a letter of advise from the Governor and Council as followeth,

At a meeting of the Governor and Council held at Boston December 29, 1674, The Governor and Magistrates being Assembled in Council and being informed of the uncomfortable and unchristian difference now in Salem to the disturbance of the peace of the place and great grievance one to another, the regular and timely issue of which is the desire of all concerned to attend; They doe therefore commend it as their Advise and Counsel to the Church of Christ in that place, that before any further procedure be made in any of those things that are at present matters of offence to each other, that they possibly agree to nominate and request the presence of one or more organick Churches before whose Elders and Messengers those things that occasion their trouble being agitated and cleared according to the Order of the Gospell, through the Lords blessing and Assistance they may come to such an issue as may be to mutuall satisfaction, and the Scandall that will come by our divisions to the Name of the Lord, and the settled practise of these Churches may for the future be prevented. By the Council Edward Rawson Secretary.

¹In 1674 Mr. Nicholet was invited by the town but not the Church in Salem to accept permanent settlement. "Some of the inhabitants of Salem attempted to form a new church and engaged Mr. Charles Nicholet for their minister; but their design being opposed, they came to Lynn to complete it." Lewis and Newhall, *History of Lynn*, p. 261. An ecclesiastical council was held at Lynn on December 11, 1674 with delegates from the churches of Boston, Woburn, Malden and Lynn with Governor John Leverett. The council approved the formation of the church but upon the arrival of delegates from Salem, Ipswich, Beverly and Rowley, the vote was reconsidered and decided in the negative. Mr. Nicholet soon after went to England (1676).

February 19 1673 At a Church meeting February 19: 1673 in a Church assembly on the Lords day.

The Pastor
3 Reasons why he
desired not
Mr. N [*icholet*] a 3d
year

The occasion of it was that the Pastor having concurred with the Church and people in April. '72, to desire Mr. N [*icholet*] continuance upon tryall for one year. He was desired a 2d year by a Town vote in a Town meeting without any concurrence or consent of Pastor; yet being done he saw cause not to oppose it, but upon triall and experience, in relation to a 3d year lest he should be prevented by a Town meeting in March, he saw cause to call a Church meeting February 19, when he gave 3 Reasons to the Church why he desired not his continuance a 3d year.

Reasons

1. Because it was his duty to desire the sincere milk of the Word. I Peter 2. 2. but upon so much tryall and experience He found such a mixture in his preaching that rendred his preaching not desirable, neither for himself not for the people here.
2. Because it was his duty to love the truth and peace. Zach. 8. 19. but he found the Truth and Peace was much endangered by his continuance here so long.
3. He found no assistance nor help from him, but much affliction and oppression which he lay under by his means.

These Reasons he propounded to the consideration of the Brethren of the Church, whether they might not be Reasons also to them to concur in a vote, that he may have timely notice of it to provide for himself elsewhere.

This being allowed 4 months before the end of the 2d year which ended June 13. Some of Brethren desiring it, the Pastor gave 5 severall Instances upon which there was many howers debate; some of the Brethren speaking one way, and some another, the Pastor severall times propounded to put it to vote; but by some of the chief of brethren being desired to forbear saying if the Pastor had the major vote with

him, that the minor part either might or would joyn with the Town and have him notwithstanding. So the fearing a Breach, he satisfied himself with this that he had Discharged his own duty, and therefore did not put it to a vote.

Mr. N[*icholet*] call
a Towne meeting

In the beginning of March at a Town meeting, Mr. N[*icholet*] was generally desired by a Town vote to continue a 3d year. Before the passing of which vote they sent for the Pastor Nicholet desiring to know his mind. His answer was yes.¹

[95] They knew his minde allready, which he had declared in the Church meeting; but it being replied that the Town generally desired his continuance a 3d year, the Pastor expressed himself that if they did so yet upon his 3 former Reasons he could not concurre with them nor consent thereunto, and therefore should be onely passive therin, he should not oppose.

Town call of
Mr. N[*icholet*] for
life

In the moneth of September Mr. N[*icholet*] began and went on to preach 9 Farwell sermons of a Parting Minister as if he intended to remove, but the issue was that October 29 in a town meeting He was desired by the town to stay during life. The lecture following He expressed himself to accept of their call. Not long after which there was an attempt of divers of the non members to gather another Church in this place.

Of which at this Mark * on the other side of the leaf.²

Ordination
at Wenham

On January 10 on the Lords day there was a letter read from the Churches of Wenham desiring us to send messengers to be present at the Ordination of Mr. Geerish³ The Church accordingly sent Mr. Batter and brother H. Skery who were present at the ordination at Wenham on the 13th day, and to-

¹Or *Yea*.

²Cf. Committee of the Courts Results, p. 135, below, although no * appears in manuscript.

³Joseph Gerrish (1650-1719/20), Harvard College, 1669, settled Wenham, 1673-1719/20.

gether with Messengers of other churches did approve of the proceedings then as Mr Batter afterwards gave an account unto the Church.

At a Church meeting January 18, 1674

The letter of advise from the Governor and Council was first read. Then the Pastor acquainted the Brethren of the Church that there were 5 things to be considered of. 1. whether the Church would accept of this advise. 2. to prepare matters for the Council, 3. what churches to send to, 4. at what time, 5. how to bear the charges of it, And that the 2 first were of present consideration. The first of these was thus propounded, whether the church did accept of this Advise and Consent to have a Council in convenient time if we could not agree amongst our selves.

Quest.

The Pastor expressed his acceptance of this Advise, and so did the Honored Major Hawthorne and generally all the Brethren that spake, onely upon the desire of many not to have it voted, the Pastor did forebear to put it to vote. In relation to the 2d, divers things were mentioned as matter for a Council. But the Church generally enclined to consider of matter of Agreement, in order to which some things were at present mentioned and left unto Consideration. But finding ourselves in a hazardous posture needing help from Heaven it was agreed first to have a day of Humiliation to seek the Lord for his mercy and help in our case. On February 18, the day after another Church meeting the day of Humiliation was carried on by the Pastor and Mr. Nicholet.

At a Church meeting Febr. 19, 1674.

Exceptions against
Mr N[*icholet*]

The Pastor produced some exceptions in relation to Mr. Nicholets doctrine and practise, and read them to the Church then assembled, professing the reason why he had not done it sooner was He did hope that a friendly conference with some Elders might have brought it to a good issue long before this. But now He found it necessary to doe it in this way, in dis-

charging his duty of Pastor of this Church upon his account unto Jesus Christ. Having no other end but (that if it be the will of God) there might be nothing but the sincere milk of the Word in this place; and that the obstructions being removed, his Ministry may be acceptable and profitable in this place.

Which Exceptions being read and spoken to by the Pastor, by Mr. Nicholet, and by divers of the Brethren for severall howers together, Mr. Nicholet did in some things explain his meaning, in other things he did profess (that as they had been expressed) they were not his Judgment and though he professed he had not willingly designed to bring in any Error, or to corrupt the Word of God, yet He confessed He had out of weakness used unsafe expressions, and that he hoped that what He had understood to be offensive to others, He should be more watchful and carefull to avoyd the same for time to come.

This Acknowledgment of Mr. Nicholet was in the issue voted as accepted for Satisfaction with respect unto all that was past. At the same time Mr. Joseph Brown desired and obtained his dismissal to the Church of Charlestown by the vote of the Church.

At a Church meeting Febr. 25: 74:

Brother Phipeny
admonished

The case of Brother Phipeny was considered, he having long absented himself from the Lords Supper upon occasion of a difference between him and Brother H. Skery about which much time was spent and many of the Brethren did speak The issue was he not making any acknowledgement of his Error to Satisfaction He was by a clear vote of the Church layd under a censure of Admonition from Ephesians 5: 14: Warn the unruly and from I Corinthians 11.31.

Samuel Hebbert¹
admonished

Also at the same time, brother Hebbert brought his son Samuel Hebbert, as a child of the Covenant who was by the vote of the Church layd under the Censure of Admonition for the sin of uncleanness (for

¹But *Hebbert* in text.

which he had been fined) from Ephesians 3-4, 5.6 which was applied unto him.

Also another church meeting was agreed on, on March 11 to deal with sundry other of the children of the Covenant which had ——¹

[96]
1675

At a Church Meeting March 11, 1675.
2 of the Children of the Covenant.

R Bly
L. Hart
forgiven

Rebecca Bly and Lydia Hart, who had been formerly censured by the Church for the Sin of uncleanness being called they did appear and though they could speak little themselves, yet severall brethren witnessing for them, and that they did hope they had been made sensible of their sinne, and had some degree of Repentance, there was a generall inclination in a charitable way to accept of it as Satisfaction, and so they were forgiven and released from the censure by the vote of the Church. But it was declared that such are not hereby admitted to full communion.

Nathaniel Peas
Excommunicated

Nathaniel Peas having been severall times warned to appear before the Church, on 2 Church meeting dayes and 2 Sabbath dayes He not comeing at all, but refusing to come, was by the vote of the Church declared a Non-member of this Church as the lowest degree and expression of Excommunication.

Hun

On a Sabbath following, the wife of Nathaniel Hun appeared and submitted to the Censure of the Church, which was dispensed then, for uncleanness.

Attempt for another
meeting howse

This spring the greatest number of the town, and many of the Church joyning with them, attempted the building of another meeting howse, which they carryed on to such a forwardness as to rayne the roof of it upon the green, they were so confident as to joyn in a Petition to the Generall Court for their Approbation of Mr. Nicholet to be minister therein; the General Court appointed a committee to consider the case, who came to Salem on June 8, 1675. After

¹Bottom of page badly worn.

3 dayes hearing of the case, they gave in a Result, all their hands to it, which for the memorableness of it is here recorded.

June 10, 1675.

Committee of the
Courts Result

We the Committee of the Generall Court mett at Salem having given free and publick liberty to each partie to express themselves in the matters of their present differences unto a full hearing of the case committed to us cannot but first manifest deep and sorrowfull sense, of the sinful causes, sad concomitants and fruits of the unbrotherly distance of affection and spirit of contention which hath been so long prevayling in the Church, and amongst the inhabitants there. More especially we have observed to our great grief how much advantage Satan is getting by those strange and sinfull Animosities and highly reflecting and provoking cariages and expressions that have passed between those that are chief in this place, whose disunion in no wise consists with the flourishing and much to be desired efficacy and beauty of Civil and Sacred order amongst the people all which wee do sollemnly bear our testimonie against, and that we may further attend the Errand about which wee are sent and in some measure (as God shall be pleased to give success) attaine the great end aimed at by the Honoured Court wee declare and advise as followeth.

1. Wee declare the Course and way that hath been attended in the calling and settling of Mr. Nicholet as a Preacher by a promiscuous vote of the Towne is very irregular and expressly contrary to known wholesome lawes of this jurisdiction and of dangerous tendencie and influence as to the state and order of the Churches here established. And alike irregular and of evill consequences wee declare the generall voting of such Inhabitants in Town affayres who are not expressly qualified so to vote by law.

2. As an Expedient for the Recovery and settlement of peace and order of this place, we advise and direct they doe seriously endeavour a mutuall agreement to walk together in Love and for that End.

1. That the wholl Church and Town meet together in a publick day of Humiliation to be set apart to that end, and that the work of the day be carryed on by the Reverend Pastor Mr. Higginson and Mr. Nicholet that the wholl assembly may humble themselves before God for past irregularities and seek Reconciliation with him and one with another, and so the work of publick preaching for

2. the future be carried on joyntly by Mr. Higginson and Mr. Nicholet as before, that so the wholl people may be in a way of mutuall accord,

3. and when there shall be need of issuing forth into another congregation so weighty a work may be done with mutuall Love and Satisfaction, and according to the Rules of Gods word and the Lawes here established.

John Leveret Governor

Samuel Simons

deputy Governor

Edward Ting

William Stoughton

John Richards

Hugh Mason

Joseph Dudley

Peter Buckly

Daniel Fisher

John Wait

Warre with the
Indians
Exodus 17:7.8

The Came Amalek
and fought with Israel

At the same time when the Committee was here at Salem there came newes that Philip and the Indians began to make warre against the English in Plimouth Colony, There were soldiers sent from this Colonie to joyne with those of Plimouth; Afterwards the Warre proved more dangerous than was expected, both to the Eastward and on Connecticut River, the Indians burning, spoyling, and killing many of the English in many towns. The warre continued all the Summer and also the winter following, in which time by the order of the Court and Council there were sundry dayes of Fasting and prayer appointed and observed here in Salem as in other Churches and places in this Colony as on June 29, and on October

7th and on December 2, and on January 12th. Many companies of Horse and foot being also sent forth, many of our men were killed and the Anger of God manifested against the Country.

12 Evills to
be Reformed

The Generall Court apprehending the Lord called us to Reformation as well as Humiliation, they considered what might be the provoking Evills which might procure the Judgments of God upon the Countrey, and upon mature deliberation they inserted in the new added lawes printed and published the last sessions of the Court at Boston 12 provoking Evills requiring and urging a generall and effectual Reformation in these things some of which doe in a particular manner concern the Elders and Brethren []¹ Churches.

[97]

At a Church meeting January [1675/6]²

The Pastor acquainted the brethren met (of [] had recommended to the Churches the case of [] which was read out of the printed Lawes

The Court order
for discipline in
Churches

- ' The Court apprehending there is too great a [neglect of discipline in the Churches and]
- ' Especially respecting those that are their children [through the non acknowledgment of them]
- ' According to the Order of the Gospel in watching [over them as well as chattechising of]
- ' them, Enquiring into their Spirituall states [that being brought to take hold of]
- ' the Covenant they may acknowledge and be acknowledged [according to their relations to]
- ' God and the Church, and their obligations to be the Lords, and to [approve themselves so to be] by a suitable Profession and Conversation, doe therefore

¹Bottom of page badly worn. Two or three words missing.

²The upper right hand corner of this page has been lost and one quarter to one third of twelve lines of text are missing. A few words are also missing in the fourteenth through the seventeenth lines. Fortunately the text of the Act of the General Court for November 3, 1675 can be supplied from the public records. Cf. *Mass. Bay Records*, V, 58.

solemnly [recommend it] unto the Respective Elders and Brethren of the Severall Churches [throughout this] Jurisdiction to take Effectuall course for Reformation therein.

Narrative read

After which the Pastor read a Narrative of the Acknowledgement of the members children in the Church in Salem from the beginning, Also of the present Actings in Church affayres with the consent of the Brethren of the Church and that He had industriously aimed at the discharge of duty toward the Church and the Covenant and had done much that way so farre as He had the Concurrence of the Brethren with him, till the late obstructions.

Pastor attending every 2d day.

He propounded therefore to all the Brethren for their concurrence countenance and encouragement in this work according to 2 Scriptures. Ezra: 10.4. Ephesians 4:16 and as an Expedient for the reducing of it into practice that He should attend every 2d day at one o clock at his own howse for the end that any Parents may bring their children to tryall in order to their taking hould of the Covenant and admission to full communion, and to bringing any other with them. Also any Non-Members that any of the Brethren shall approve of to bring them and come along with them for their tryall in order to membership. Also to attend any Scandalle with respect to Discipline.

Catechizing

Also that every 2d week He would attend Catechizing on the 5th and 6th day as formerly.

Pastor maintenance not payd according to Engagement

There was a consent of the Brethren by Vote for the tryall of the Bay Psalme Book for half a year. And also the Pastor gave notice to the Church Meeting (as he had done before to the Selectmen on January 13) that the maintenance engaged to him for his support according to the Engagement voted and recorded in July 1671, viz. that He should have 100£ in money per annum and 40 cord of wood, the money to be paid 25£ a quarter, which though it was done well the years '72 and 73 yet for the year 74 and 75 it hath not been performed especially this last year

20£ borrowed of
Deacons at Boston

ending at January 1, That He had been faine to borrow 50£ for the necessities of his Family, which 50£ was due to him now this last January 1, therefore: that He had borrowed 20£ of the 2 Deacons of one of the Churches of Boston, He desired therefore that care might be had that the 50£ might be payd for the payment of his debts by March the 1st, and that the Deacons may see to it, also that He did expect the performance of that Engagement for the time to come, viz. 25£ April 1 next etc.; or He could not see howe He should be able to live and continue amongst them.

Notice on the Sabbath
of the Pastors attend-
ing for the work every
2d day and catechiz-
ing

On the Sabbath following Jan 23, the Pastor gave notice to the wholl Congregation that He should attend at his own hows on the 2d day of every week at one o clock for church work. also the 2 dayes after his lectures for catechizing as formerly.

1676

At a church meeting March 21, 1676

There being but few that came at the time appointed, the matters were left unto another time.

At a Church meeting April 20.

Mr. Nicholets
dismission

Mr Nicholets having preached his farewell Sermons, being upon his voyage for England and removed to Boston in order thereunto, desiring his dismissal, the Church consented, that He should be recommended to the Churches of Christ in London or elsewhere, and also dismissed from his membership with us when He should joyne unto some approved Church of Christ. Which accordingly was done, and sent to him from the Pastor by Mr Jon: Corwin.

Admission of Stacy,
his wife and 9
children

By a letter from the Church of Ipswich Thomas Stacy the Miller and Susanna Stacy his wife and 9 children were dismissed from their membership there into this church, which was accepted by the Church here, accordingly they were present and entered into Covenant with this church, the names of his children were Thomas, William []¹ John and Susanna.

¹Part of last line of page illegible. Their other children were Rebecca, Elizabeth, Joseph, Mary, Symon and Nimphas.

[98] []¹ Reads daughter having been guilty of the Sinne of [] and submitted themselves to the censure of the Church which [] and the Admonition expressed by the Pastor from Revelations 2.22 [] unto such as are guilty of Fornication, a space of Repentance []mnlly charged to Repent of their Sins and in due time manifest [] the Church.

[] Saimon² the daughter of brother Felton having been once before [] publickly for the sin of Fornication, and falling again into the same Sin [] aggravation of it, was by the vote of the Church Excommunicated, only the Excommunication to be pronounced some after Sabbath when she was risen up. Also Moses Eburn and his wife having been censured in the Court for the Sin of uncleanness before they were marryed, and being sent unto by the Church and called to appear at the Church meeting severall times, and they refusing so much as to come and the last time sending a letter with strange recriminations and reflections upon others, it was generally agreed they did not hear the Church, and therefore by the vote of the Church they were Excommunicated.

February 25. 74

Phipeny
Excommunicated

Joseph Phipeny being layd under an Admonition for his unruliness in rising up against []³ and the law and withdrawing communion from the Church and being called to appear before the Church meeting severall times, He not at all coming and giving very perverse answers to the Brethren that were sent from the Church to him, and utterly refusing so much as to come to the Church meeting, it was un-animously judged by the Church that He did not hear the Church and so was by a generall vote Excommunicated at this time.

¹The upper left hand corner of the manuscript has been torn so that parts of ten lines of text have been lost.

²Remember, baptized May 28, 1643, daughter of Benjamin Felton, married George Samon. Perley I, 241.

³Two words illegible.

- Wm Stacy admitted to full Communion May 9 being the Sabbath and Sacrament day, William Stacy as a child of the Covenant upon Examination by the Pastor and his publick approbation, []¹ himselfe professing and owning the Covenant of God was admitted unto full Communion.
- Mrs. Grafton admitted August 27. Mrs. Grafton (formerly Mrs. Lothrop) was received to membership in this Church by admission from the Church at Beverly.
- Council at Salisbury September 3. A letter was sent from Mr. Wheelwright of the Church at Salisbury to this Church to send their Messengers to the Council there to help to end the differences about Major Pikes Excommunication. Mr. []¹ and Mr. Jo: Hawthorn were desired by the vote of the Church to go thither as their Messengers on September 19.
The Messengers returning gave some account in generall to the Church, that the Council had agreed to advise them to releas the Excommunication of Major Pike finding it not justifiable upon divers grounds.
- Mrs. Higginson Recommendation Mrs Mary Higginson the Pastors wife being a member of []² the First Church at Boston, was recommended unto this Church, which was read and accepted of this Church at the time of the Sacrament. January 76.
- 1677 March 1 was offered as a publick day of Humiliation and prayer by an order from the Council with reference to the warre and to seek the Lord for speciall mercy in relation to the year ensuing.
- Manassah Maston
John Hawthorn wife
Elizabeth Allen adm.
to Lords Supper April 1 being Sacrament Day before the celebration of the Lords Supper Manassah Maston, Mrs. Hawthorn (Mr. John Hawthorns wife) and Elizabeth Allen (Sister Cliffords daughter) were admitted to full Communion as children of the Covenant after Examination by the Pastor and his publick approbation of them, they professing their consent unto the Covenant and renewall thereof.

¹Illegible.

²Two words illegible.

H: Skery Junior
Mrs. Brown

May 6 being Sacrament day. Henry Skery Junior and Mrs. Anna Brown (Mr. William Brown Juniors wife) were both admitted to full Communion as children of the Covenant in this Church after the foresaid manner.

Lords Supper

Agreed for time to come the Lords Supper to be the first Lords day in every moneth.

Mr. Lindall

July 29 Mr. Lindall having stood propounded above a moneth was admitted unto Church membership with consent of the Brethren on the Lords day after the Sermon. He expressing He had not an Audible voyce gave in a paper containing his profession of Faith and Repentance desiring to be read for him which was done by the Pastor.

A Fast upon Occasion
of the Indians taking
the katches at Cape
Sables

July 25

July 25 The Lord having given a Commission to the Indians to take no lesse than 13 of the Fishing catches of Salem and Captivate the men, though divers of them cleared themselves and came home, it struck a great consternation into all the people. The Pastor moved on the Lords day, and the wholl people readily consented to keep the Lecture day following as a Fast day, which was accordingly done and the work carryed on by the Pastor, Mr. Hale, Mr. Cheevers, and Mr. Gerrish¹ the neighbor Ministers helping in prayer the Lord was pleased to send in some of the Ketches on the fast day, which was looked on as a gracious smile of Providence. Also there had been 19 wounded men sent in to Salem but a little before, also a Ketch with 40 men sent from Salem as a Man of Warre to recover the rest of the Ketches. The Lord give them good successe.

[99]

Mr. Maverick

August 5 before the Sacrament Mr. Maverick []² received to Membership by entering the []

Clois

Peter Clois a member of the Church of York by a [] at York was himself admitted to the Lords Supper [] virtue of the Communion of Churches.

¹Of Beverly, Marblehead and Wenham respectively.

²The upper right hand corner of the manuscript has been torn so that parts of twelve lines of text have been lost.

- Mr. Hawthorns September 2. Mrs. Abigail Hawthorn and Mrs. Ha
[] Covenant admitted to the Lords Supper, they
renewing their []
- Mr. Cheevers October 7. Mr. Cheevers the Minister of Marblehead
was admitted [] Church being dismissed from
Ipswich Church.
- Mrs. Barton Also Mrs. Barton was admitted to full communion,
being Sacrament []
- Thanksgiving November 15: By order from the Generall Court
was kept here as in [] Thanksgiving for the re-
storing of our peace, and granting favor to us []
England and for other mercies.
- Contribution November 18 being the Sabbath was read by the
Pastor (at the desire of the Selectmen the vote of the
Town in their meeting November 9th) viz. that
there be a constant contribution for poore every
Lords day which shall be committed into the hands of
the deacons by them delivered to the Selectmen or
Order for the relief of the poore.
Those that cannot contribute money may putt in by
note what they will give other waies.

At a Church meeting December 3.

- 5 Marblehead These 5 of Marblehead viz. Benjamin Parmeter,
persons Members Edward Read, Mrs. Latimer, Mrs. Leg, Abigail
Merit having stood propounded a moneth, and no
exception being made against any of them, they made
their Severall professions (read for the most of
them) and sufficient Testimonie being given for
them, they were received to Church Membership by
the vote of the Church; and by their consenting to
the Covenant propounded to them.
- Mr. Baily Also the day before Mr. Baily¹ preacher at the Farmes
was admitted unto membership in this Church by vir-
tue of his Dismission from the Church of Newbery
which was read and accepted by the Church, he
joyning the Covenant with us.

¹James Bailey (1650-1707), Harvard College, 1669;
settled at Danvers (the Farmes), 1671-1680; Killing-
worth, Connecticut, 1682-1691.

Also at the same Church meeting Mr. Verin and Mr. Hawthorn were desired by the Church to speak with 4 of the children of the Church viz Goodie Hun, brother Hebbards son, Sister Williams and Sister Tomkins daughters, who are under the Churches admonition for Scandalous Sin, to inform them that the Church here expected that they should in some convenient time come and manifest their Repentence near the Spring.

Mary Williams

January 6 being Sacrament day, [*Mary Williams*] was admitted to full Communion, also Mrs. Leg was then baptized. February 21 was kept as a publick Fast by order of the Council, with Relation to the Judgment of the small pox in some places of the country, the fears of further troubles with the Indians, and in relation to our Agents in England.

1678

Mrs. Higginson

March 3 being the Sacrament day. Mrs. Mary Higginson the Pastors wife was received to membership in this church by virtue of her dismissal from Boston.

At a Church Meeting
March 9

Admission of 8
members

Samuel Eburn, Francis Girdler, Richard Reith, Roger Hill, Mary Hill, Rebecca Booth, Miriam Pethrick, Agnes Stacy, these 8 having been propounded a moneth, no exception coming against them they making their profession of Faith and Repentance in their own way; some by speech, others by writing which was read for them, they were admitted to membership in this Church, by consent of the Brethren they engaging themselves in the Covenant.

Sister Collins
Admitted

The wife of John Collins was also received to membership in this Church by virtue of a Dismission from the Church in [] ester¹

¹Manuscript torn. A John Collins of Gloucester married Mehitable of Edward Giles of Salem, March 9, 1658/9. Cf. Perley I, 281.

- T. West
Recommended. Thomas West removing to Bradford was recommended to the Church at Haverill.
- Hebbert and
Hun Goodie Hun and Brother Hebberts Son not appearing, the matter was left to another time.
- [100] []¹ and Mary Read appearing having formerly [] of the sin of Fornication, they presented their [] of their sin in writing desiring forgiveness from the Lord [] accepted and forgiven by the Churches consent [] witnessing for them.
[] who had long stood Excommunicate desired to be Reconciled [] but his confession being too generall and obscure, there was 3 brethren [] Grafton, Mr. Gardner, and Mr. Hathorn, desired to speak with him [] wards his Repentance, they having spent some time with him, He [] ming off to such a poenitential acknowledgment of his offenses particularly [] they all 3 witnessing for him before the Church on the Sabbath following. He was then solemnly forgiven and received into membership with the Church again.
Mary Felton as a child of the Covenant was admitted to full Communion; before the Sacrament as others formerly. May 3.
- Zachary Marsh
Sara Waters June 2. being Sacrament day, Zachary Marsh and Sarah Waters were both admitted to full communion; as children of the Covenant in this Church as others formerly. 36²
- a Fast June the 6th was observed as a Publick Fast by order of the Generall Court.
- Taply August 4: Sister Taply was by dismissal from the Church of Beverly received to membership in this Church.
August 11: Mrs. Baldin³ a French Gentlewoman

¹The upper left hand corner has been torn so that parts of ten lines of text have been lost.

²Six shorthand notations follow.

³This was Rachel Dellaclose who married Pierre Baudouin (Bowdoin) at Salem on May 27, 1672. Richard Croade was a Boston merchant who removed to Salem in 1664. Cf. Perley II, 388, III, 97, 205.

- Baldwin who came from the Ile of Jarsy and brought with her considerable Testimonials from sundry of the French Ministers concerning her piety and good conversation where she had lived; after some years continuance with us she desiring to joyn in membership with this Church did stand propounded a moneths time in which space nothing being heard of to the contrary. then she making her confession in her owne way in the French tongue it was translated into English by Mr. Croad; and was read for her by the Pastor, and ther being also a Testimony given of her good conversation by many of the Sisters of the Church, she was received into membership after the usual manner.
- Endecott Mr. Endecott was also recommended to this Church
Fuller from the Church at Wenham also G: Fuller was recommended to this Church from the Church at Rehoboth.
- Goodall December on Sacrament day. Goodie Goodall having stood long propounded, after good testimony given of her free will was received to membership by the consent of the Church by vote.
- Felton February 2 John Felton as a child of the Covenant in this Church was admitted to full communion at the time of the Sacrament.¹
- White Also Mr. White was received to membership by dismission from Scituat.

1679

- Thomas Putman March 2 on the Sacrament day Thomas Putman Junior and Mary Mason as children of the Covenant were received to full communion after the usuall manner.

At a Church Meeting March 10

- S. Booth Simeon Booth and Mary Penniwell that came from
M. Peniwell the Eastward having stood propounded after those of usuall manner, there being no exception against them, they made their profession, had severall that

¹Ten shorthand notations at this point.

witnessed for them, and so were admitted unto membership in this Church by their engaging in the Covenant with consent of the Church.

Mr. Baily's
buisines

Also there being a difference amongst the people at the Farmes about Mr. Baily, the present minister, they desiring advise from the Church about the case, there were three papers read, 1. one against him with 16 hands, 2 another for his continuance with 39 hands, a 3d of with 10 hands of near neighbors for him also, there was much agitation on all sides, and divers things were spoken by the Brethren but buisines being long and many of the brethren gone that we could not make a Church act of Advise in the case, therefore was left to another time.

R. Fuller

Also Robert Fuller was received to membership in this Church by a dismission from the Church of Rehoboth which was read and accepted by the Church here, He engaging himself in the Church Covenant with us.

At a Church Meeting April 21.

J: Phipeny
El. Russell

Joseph Phipeny and Elizabeth Russell were both received to membership after the usual manner. Also Sam []¹ daughter and Nathaniel Feltons daughter both having been guilty of the sin of Fornication were both presented by their fathers, and had the censure of Admonition dispensed to them by the vote of the Church.

2 Admonitions

Church Advise for
the Farmers

Also the people at the Farmes disagreeing about Mr. Baily desired the Advise of the Church which after hearing the case was that the minor part should submit to the generallity who desired his continuance onely when a church was there, they had liberty in [] him or any other.²

Fast

[101]

The Pastor at the time of the Sacrament of the Lords Supper propounding to the Church being then to-

¹Manuscript torn. The name is *Eburn*. See p. 149, below.

²The bottom of the page is so badly worn that several words are lost or illegible; also ten shorthand notations.

gether divers reasons for a publick Fast they readily consented therein whereupon he informed the wholl congregation of it in the afternoon and there was a very generall Assembly of the wholl people observing the day at the time appointed.

Grafton and
his Wife

June 1 being the Sacrament day; Mr. Jo. Grafton and his wife were admitted into full communion as children of the Covenant in this Church as others formerly in Aprill.

A Fast

By an order from the Generall Court July 10 was appointed as a generall Fast to be observed in all the churches, with relation to the state of things both in Old and New England which was observed here accordingly. August 3 being the Sacrament day was read unto the Church an Order from the Generall Court informing us of a Synod appointed on September 10 at Boston, to advise the Platform of Discipline agreed upon by the Churches in 1647 and what might appear necessary for the preventing of schismes, herisyes and prophane establishment of the churches in the Faith and order of the Gospel, etc. On August 31. the Brethren of the Church staying in the afternoon chose Mr. William Brown Senior and Mr. John Brown Senior as Messengers to goe with the Pastor to the Synod.

Synod.

Account of the
Synod.

September 7 being the Sacrament day the Pastor being returned from Boston gave an account to the Church what was done at the Synod, viz. that after the reading over and considering the Platform of Discipline published by the Synod in the year 1648 it was agreed on by the vote of the Synod, nemine contradicente that we do all own, approve and profess the same for the substance of it as the profession of these Churches, Also, that in answer to the questions propounded by the Court, there was an Agreement in severall things propounded in writing as provoking Evils in this time of Gods Judgments and the Remedies thereof, as to the Substance, End, and Scope of them by the unanimous Vote of the Synod. Also, a Confession of Faith to be drawn up by a

Committee agreed upon and presented to the Synod which adjourned till the week before the next Court of Election.

At a Church Meeting. November 5 :

J. Massy
admonished

Jo Massy having been convicted of drinking to Excess, appeared and acknowledged his offence, was layd under the Censure of Admonition by the vote of the Church.

2 Forgiven

Bro. Eburns and Feltons daughters for their sin of Fornication did appear at this time and made their poenitential confessions and had such witnesses for them that they were Forgiven by the Vote of the Church.

Messengers
to Rowly

In pursuance of an order from the Generall Court Mr. Cheevers and Mr. Baily were chosen and desired to goe as Messengers from this Church unto Rowly to help end their differences there.

S. Broket

The case of Sister Brocket having been twice heard by the Commissioners and 3 of the Brethren having been desired by the Church to hear and consider the case, which having done they gave in the result of what they found viz. that she was blamable in many things, having walked disorderly and greatly neglecting her duty to her husband, after some consideration the Church unanimously voted that she should be publickly Admonished on the Lords day.

The week after the 2 Messengers of the Church went to Rowly and were Assistant at the Council there, at their returne, some generall account was given that there was an agreement in the Council in propounding those things which being accepted by the Church was a means to end their differences and settle their peace.¹

¹Ezekiel Rogers died in January 1660/61 and was succeeded by his associate, Samuel Phillips. Mrs. Rogers claimed that the town owed her late husband's estate the sum of 15£ of unpaid salary. The town apparently thought otherwise and had paid Mr. Phillips 5£, for added duties, but others claimed that the money had been

At a Church meeting January 12.

Synod book

The Synod book in Answer to these 2 questions
1. What are the provoking Evils procuring the late and dreadfull judgments of God against New England. 2. What are Remedies and means for Reformation: was read over and considered of. Also our brother Horne having been Deacon of this Church above this 50 years being now very Antient, the Church proceded and agreed to choose 2 Deacons to be added unto him and so by the vote of the Church Mr. Hilyard Verin and Mr. John Hawthorn were chosen Deacons. Also the Church voted the continuance of the contribution for the poor.

Thanksgiving

A day of Thanksgiving was ordered by the Council to be observed throughout the Colonie, in relation to the Return of our 2 Agents from England who had been resident there 3 years on the Countryes service and other Mercies, which was accordingly observed here in Salem, on January 22.¹ Ther had also been a

Fast

Fast offered here before sometime in November.

[102]

At a Church Meeting February

Jo: Putman
Ab: Simson

John Putman Senior and Abigail Simpson were received in membership after the usuall manner.

Mr. Hawthorn and Brother Skery not free to accept the Deacons place Mr. Eli Gidny was chosen Deacon

appropriated by the town and "Kept in some men's hands." Mrs. Rogers in 1678 accused Mr. Phillips of duplicity and upon her death the same year the Ipswich church petitioned the General Court to clear their pastor's good name. The Court ordered an Ecclesiastical Council which upheld Mr. Phillips. Cf. A. E. and E. M. A. Jewett, *Rowley, 1639-1850*. Rowley, 1946. pp. 95-97; *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 8 vols. Salem, 1911-1921, VII, 184-186.

¹William Stoughton and Peter Buckley had been sent to England in 1676 to represent the Massachusetts Colony and did not return to Boston until December 23, 1679. There was some dissatisfaction especially with Mr. Stoughton but it is doubtful if any other agents could have achieved more.

by the vote of the Generality of the Brethren, and left to his consideration till the next time. The Pastor propounded and read a Direction for the renewing of our Church Covenant which was also left to consideration. Hanna Tyle received to membership by dismission from the Church of Haverill.

Tyle

1680

At a Church Meeting March 10

Mr. Eli Gidny expressing his acceptance of the Deacons office to which he was called and chosen by the Church, it was agreed on by the Church that they should be ordained Deacons in some convenient time either on the Lords day or on a Fast day.

The Direction for renewing our Church Covenant after severall agitations about it was agreed on by the Church to be sollemly read (as consented) by the Church the next fast day. Mrs. Broadstreets desire was consented to, viz her dismission, was written and sent unto her by the Pastor.

Mrs. Broadstreet
dismission

Fast

April: 15 was a Fast observed according to the Order of the Councill, when the first Church Covenant was read and the New Direction¹ propounded by the Pastor, as more accommodated unto our times, was also read, and both of them consented to as helps in renewing our Covenant with God and one with another; Also at the same time Mr. Hilyard Verin and Mr. Eli Gidny were ordained unto the Deacons office in this Church.

Covenant Renewed

2 Deacons ordained

Georg Keisar
Mary Gidny

May 2, being the Sacrament day George Keisar by Dismission from the Church of Linne, the wife of Deacon Gidny by dismission from the South Church of Boston were accepted unto membership entering into Covenant with this Church.

Ordination at Lin

Brother Hardy and Elder Brown were chosen to goe as Messengers with the Pastor to the Ordination at Linne, where Mr. Joseph Whiting was Teacher and Mr. Jeremy Shepard Pastor last week in October 6.²

¹See Introduction.

²Jeremiah Shepard (1648-1720), Harvard College, 1669, settled Rowley, 1673-1678, Essex, 1679-1680, Lynn, 1680-1720.

152 The Records of the First Church in Salem

Thanksgiving A day of Thanksgiving was observed by the Courts order November 26

Synods
Confession On the Sabbath day December 5, the Pastor gave an account that the Confession of Faith and Platforme of Discipline by agreement of the Synod and Generall Court were now printed together.

Mr. Burro's Also the Brethren of the Farms, Mr. Baily by agreement being removed the []¹ acquainting the Church with Mr. Burrows² his comeing amongst them to preach to them this winter they desire Churches Advise and helpfulness in order to his continuance amongst them.

At the End of winter on a Sacrament day notice was given to the Church that Mr. Burro's and they were agreed for continuance and together desiring the Churches Approbation. After some Agitation, the Church agreed thus far that they did so far approve as to have nothing against it, reserving their Liberty when they should be a Church to choos him for a Pastor or any other as God should then direct.

1681
Jo. Leech
Mary English On the Sacrament Day John Leech and Mary English were admitted to full communion as Children of the Coveant in this Church in the usuall way.

At a Church Meeting, May, 5:

Ezekiel Cheevers
Benjamin Gerrish
Mary Hodge
Alice Booth Ezekiel Cheevers, Benjamin Geerish, Mary Hodge, and Alice Booth after they had stood propounded a moneth and no exception came in against them, they made their profession of Faith and Repentance, and were accepted by the Vote of the Church present, and were admitted into the Church Covenant on the Sabbath day following.

¹Torn; one word missing.

²George Burroughs (1650-1692), Harvard College 1670; settled Falmouth, Maine, 1674-1676, Danvers, 1680-1683; Falmouth again 1683-1690, and Danvers again, 1690-1692. He left Falmouth both times because of Indian attacks.

Fast
John Foster
Mary Dorland
July 7 was observed as a generall Fast by the Courts order. On the Sacrament day John Foster Junior and Mary Dorland were admitted to full Communion as Children of the Covenant in this Church in the usuall way. October 2

Peas
October 6 on Sacrament day Jo Peas and his wife had a letter of Recommendation granted to the Church of Springfield.

[103]

At a Church Meeting November 9.

Prescot
Swinnerton
Leech
Peter Prescot, Job Swinnertons Wife and John Leech's wife having stood propounded a moneth, and no exception against them, making their confession and testimony for their conversation, they were admitted to membership in the usuall way.

Massy
Restored
John Massy having stood under Admonition for the Sin of excesse in drinking witnessed against him and confessed by him, He did at this time make a pœnitent confession, and the 3 Skeryes his neighbors witnessing for his hopefull reformation, was by the vote of the Church forgiven and released from the censure.

Kippins
admonished
Abigail Kippins being complained of to the Church by her neibors Brother Grafton Thomas Giggles, Jo Ingerson Elizabeth Gardner that she had gone on in a way of excess on drinking and fuddling, and they had often admonished her one alone, and 2 or 3 of them together and yet she had gone on therin; She answered for herselfe onely by confessing the charge against her and by presenting a paper full of pœnitent expressions but after due consideration many of the Brethren expressing themselves that pœnitent words without works meet for repentance were not to be accepted, therefore by the vote of the Church the Pastor did lay her under the Church censure of Admonition, waiting to see if the Lord would give her Repentance.

1682

Pitman
Mungy
Phipeny
Brown
March 3 on the Sacrament day Elizabeth Pitman and Elizabeth Mungy were admitted to full communion after the usuall manner.

April [*Blank*] Phipeny a French woman the wife of [*Blank*] Phipeny was admitted into the Church after the usuall manner.

154 The Records of the First Church in Salem

At a Church Meeting June 5

- Buckston and his wife Anthony Buckston and his wife, and Margaret Becket the wife of John Becket were received to membership after the usuall manner. Also Abigail Kippins who was before layd under a Church Admonition having now good testimony given for her by those that formerly witnessed against her that they did in charity observe signs of Repentance in her. She was now restored and forgiven by the Church. Also the Pastor did speak to the Church, about their duty of observing and Encouraging such as they knew to be Godly to joyn the Church. And that they should watch over such as were reported to be given to drinking and company keeping to deal with them in a regular way. Also he did recommend the Scripture Math 9. 1 to the serious consideration of the Church, that in regard of his age and weakness they would look out for another Minister to be joyned with him, one that is well known and approved to be godly and an able preacher of the Gospel, and so left it as an object of their serious consideration.
- Becket
- Kippins restored
- Motion for another Minister
- Fast June 22 was observed as a generall fast by the Courts order, principally to beg mercy from God in relation to our 2 Agents sent for England. The Pastor then did also renew the motion for another minister as matter of prayer to the whole congregation.
- Mr. White On the Sacrament day, Mr. White removing himself to Marshfield desired and obtained a Dismission to the Church there.
- Archer August 6, on the Sacrament day Bethia Archer was admitted to full communion.

At a Church Meeting November 7.

- 7 Members received These 7, Mr. Neal, Richard Adams, Thomas Ives, John Norton, Mrs. Neal, Rebecca Tomkins, Mary Chaplin, having stood propounded a moneth, and no exception coming in against them, they made their profession of Faith and Repentance, and were received by the Vote of the Brethren of the Church, and had the Covenant propounded to them and accepted by them the Sabbath following in the publick assembly.

W. Booth and his wife removing to Springfield were Recommended to the Church there.

[104]

J. Norton

February 4 being the Sacrament day, John Norton came of himselfe to make a pœnitential confession of the sin of drunkenness that he had fallen into in some degree since he was admitted. But the Church generall thought meet he should not then receive the sacrament so he did withdraw.

Nath. and John
Putmans contention

After the Sacrament the Pastor acquainted the Church with the scandalous contention that was between the 2 brothers Nathaniel and John Putman whereupon it was voted, that Elder Brown, Mr. Jonathan Corwin, Mr. Verin and Mr. Hawthorn be desired to spend time with them to enquire fully into the differences and all the matters of offence they had one against another and if they could not Reconcile them then to make Report of the matter to the Church the next Sacrament day.

March 2. The foresaid brethren informed the Church before the Sacrament that they had spent much time with the 2 brothers and in the issue reconciled them as they thought, and so they read to the Church the Reconciliation signed by their hands which Nathaniel P rested in but John P objected against etc., in so much as the Church generally were unsatisfied with him desiring him to withdraw for the present according to that Matthew 5. If thou hast ought against thy brother.

4 admitted to
full Communion

Hanna Geerish and Sara Babbidge as children of the Covenant were then admitted to full Communion after the usuall manner.

April 1. being the Sacrament day. Jonathan Putman and Daniel Ray were admitted to full Communion as children of the Covenant after the usuall manner.

1683

The Church and people having considered the Pastors motion for another minister to be joynd with him they observing the infirmities of age growing upon him and not knowing how soon they might be deprived of him and left destitute of a Minister;

156 The Records of the First Church in Salem

Mr. Noys
his call

Having heard a good report of Mr. Nicholas Noys and that he was free; having also the credible testimony of divers magistrates and ministers concerning him, for his Ability Piety and Suitableness for Salem, they did unanimously agree to call him to that work of the Ministry amongst us here, and it pleased God to facilitate some difficulties that were in the way, that in the issue He came to us: and entered on that work of the Ministry the 1st week of May.¹

At a Church Meeting July

5 Members

These 5 were received to membership after the usuall manner. Widow An Day, An Horn wife of Joseph Horn, Susana Daniel, Hanna Cloyce, Alice Darby of Marblehead.

The Pastor gave notice that in regard the difference between the Putmans was such as could not at present be issued, it was best to leave it unto God and time.

At a Church Meeting August

7 Members

These 7 Samuel Sandy, Mary Merit, Rebecca Carder, Charity Sandy, Elizabeth Glasse, Jone Blackly, and Elizabeth Gatchel wife of Jeremy Gatchel were admitted to membership after the usuall manner.

At a Church Meeting 1st week of November

7 members
moved

These 7 John Chaplin, John Merrit, John Seward, John Stacy, Grace Coes, Mrs. An Syms, Martha Wilson, were admitted to membership as formerly. Also the Church having agreed did by their Vote, choos and call Mr. Noys to the office of a Teacher in this Church, agreeing also on November 14 for the day of Ordination. Accordingly letters were sent to the Churches of Newberry, Rowly, Ipswich, Wenham and Beverly to give notice of it and to desire their presence and assistance on the day appointed which being come, the Elders and Messengers of the

¹Nicholas Noyes (1647-1717), Harvard College, 1667; settled Haddam, Connecticut, 1668-1681; Salem, 1683-1717.

Mr. Noys his Ordination
 November 14:
 forenamed Churches were present; Mr. Noys preached on Mark 1: 7, 8. He was ordained by Imposition of hands of the Pastor and Mr. Hubbard of Ipswich and Mr. Phillips of Rowly. Also Mr. Hubbard gave the right hand of Fellowship in the Name of the neighbor Elders, He offered that as Enoch was the seventh from Adam, so Mr. Noys was the 7th ordained Church officer in Salem etc. The calling, ordaining and settling of Mr. Noys in Salem, was with general Acceptance of all both in town and country. The good Lord grant his presence and blessing with his ministry for the conversion ædification and Salvation of Souls.

3 Members
 It should have been remembered before that in the beginning of November Mr. Noys by a dismissal from the Church of Newberry was received unto membership in this Church, also Mr. Daniel Eps and his wife both received unto membership here, by a dismissal from the Church of Ipswich, all 3 after the usuall manner.

[105]
 1684

At a Church Meeting March 11.

6 members
 Richard Flendor, Georg Bonfield, Alice Pickering Mary Horn and Margaret Gardiner, having stood propounded a moneth and no exception against them they were admitted to membership after the usuall manner. Also Mrs. (Roger) Conant was received by a letter of dismissal from a church in Ireland¹ Also the Church (by Mr. Verins death) having no Deacon divers brethren were nominated, and left unto consideration to the next Sacrament day.

2 to full communion
 Samuel Gardiner, the baker, and Sarah Pitman as children of the Covenant were admitted to full communion on the Sacrament day April 1.

3 Brethren desired to attend the Deacons work
 Then also by the vote of the Church our brethren Benjamin Geerish and John Maston were desired to joyn with our Brother Hardie to help in the Deacons work, at least for a time.

Untill the Church should take further order.

¹Elizabeth, wife of Roger Conant, Junior, was a native of Cork, Ireland. Cf. Perley, I, 79.

2 to full Communion On the Sacrament day John Horne and Hanna Striker admitted to full Communion.

At a Church Meeting May 19

11 Members of
Marblehead

These persons following being all of Marblehead were admitted unto Church fellowship after the usuall manner viz.

Benjamin Gale, Meriam Hanniford, Johanna Hawly, Dorcas Pedrick Mary Rowles, Mary Clottery, Charity Pitman, Deliverance Gale, Mary Fergusson, Abigail Hinds, Mary Doliver.

Baston

June 6 being the Sacrament day Thomas Baston of the Village was received to membership in this Church after the usuall manner. After this the Church members living at Marblehead presented their names together with their desire that the Church here would grant unto them with their children a dismission that by consent they might become a church by themselves, viz.

Samuel Cheevers	Agnes Stacy
Moses Maverick	G. Meritt
Ambrose Gale	G. Meritt
Richard Reith	Abigail Merit
Benjamin Parmiter	Tabitha ² Pedrick
Edward Read	Abigail Hinds
William Bartoll	Charity Pitman
Francis Girdler	Jone Blackler
Samuel Sandin	G. Clarke
Georg Bonfield	G. Henly
John Merit	Mrs. Conant
John Stacy	G. Darby
Benjamin Gale	Rebecca Carder
John Sayward	Elizabeth Glasse
Eunice Mavrick	Anna Sims
Elizabeth Leg	G. Sandin
Jone Pitman	Grace Coes
G. ¹ Dixy	Miriam Hanniford
G. Bartoll	G. Hanly
G. Watts	Deliverance Gale

Aug 13
The Church at
Marblehead
gathered

¹I.e., Goody. Cf. D. A. White, *New England Congregationalism*, pp. 307-308.

²Dorcas? *Ibid.*

G. Ellis	Mary Rowles
Sara Dod	Mary Clattery
Mary Fortune	Mary Fergusson
Elizabeth Russell	Mary Dallabar
G. Pedrick	Elizabeth Gatchel
	50 in all

and Mr. Cheevers
ordained pastor

There was a unanimous vote of the Church granting the desire of the Brethren and sisters of Marblehead, that they (and their children) might become a Church of themselves. Afterwards, they did signify to the Church, that they had agreed upon August 13, when they intended (if the Lord pleas to joyn in Church Fellowship together) and also to choos and ordain Mr. Cheevers Pastor of their Church. They desired also the presence of Messengers from this Church as also from the Churches of Lin, Beverly, Wenham and Ipswich.

On the foresaid August 13, after Mr. Cheevers had prayed and preached, he presented and read a Confession of Faith and Covenant which they had all considered of and agreed upon amongst themselves, and which then they did express their consent unto. And so they were owned and approved by the Elders and Messengers of the Churches present as a particular and distinct Church of Christ amongst themselves. Then the Brethren of the Church by their vote expressing their calling and election of Mr. Cheever to be their Pastor, who was ordained by the laying on of the hands of the Pastor of Salem together with 3 other Elders, Mr. Hubbard of Ipswich was desired to give the Right hand of Fellowship, and the Pastor of Salem to mannage the wholl action.¹

Chebocko Church

The year before Chebocko Church was gathered and Mr. Wise² the Pastor ordained in the same way, Messengers from Salem being present As also the

¹Samuel Cheever (1639-1724), Harvard College, 1659, settled Marblehead, 1668-1724.

²John Wise (1652-1725), Harvard College, 1673; settled Hatfield, 1677-1678; Essex (Chebacco), 1683-1725.

160 The Records of the First Church in Salem

Bradford Church year before that the Church at Bradford was
[gathered] and Mr Sims¹ ordained there the same
way.

 [106] On October 5 being Sacrament day these 3 being
3 admitted to children of the Church Benjamin Wilkins, John
full Communion Putman Jr. and Debora Winter, were admitted into
full Communion in the usuall manner.

Thanksgiving []² thanksgiving for the Lords continuing our
[]² of the General Court.

At a Church Meeting, October 3

5 members Thomas Daby, Elizabeth Edwards, Hanna Putman,
Jo Putmans wife (Junior) were admitted to mem-
bership after the usuall manner. Also some discourse
that meeting about enlarging of Baptisme, which was
left unto another meeting; Ab: Winter received to

Fast membership. October 22 was kept as a day of Pub-
lick Fasting and Prayer with respect to the hazardous
and perillous state of things in New England that
God would appear in mercy to help us in this time
of our need. It was kept in all the Colonies of New
England by order from the Commissioners. October
25 Jacob Allen was received to membership on the
Sabbath in the Afternoon.

J. A.

At a Church Meeting November 6

Consent of the Whereas in the former Church meeting the Elders
Church to the Elders acquainted the Church with a variety of cases
in Baptizing of they met withall in baptizing beyond what was
Children in these and hitherto practiced, after some discourse about it, and
such like cases because many of the Brethren were absent it was
agreed then to appoint this Church meeting on pur-
pose that the matter might be maturely considered,
and that there might be full notice of it, and that the
wholl Church might come together.

¹Zechariah Symmes, Jr. (1637/8-1707/8), Harvard College, 1657; settled Rehoboth, 1661-1666; Bradford, 1682-1708; appears to have resided there as early as 1668.

²Illegible.

Accordingly being mett together the Pastor informed them, that they might remember that the Synod book containing the Scripture grounds for 7 proposals touching the subject of Baptisme has been (allmost 20 years since) read and considered in the Church, and that then they consented to the Baptizing of the children of such parents as were born in the Church or received with their parents in minority though they be not yet admitted to the Lords Supper, and according to the scope of the Synods 5th proposition, and accordingly we have practised ever since. But as time and experience hath shewed there are many other cases wherin we are as yet defective in Baptizing.

As in the case of 1) the children of such Brethren as have scrupled that Baptizing any infants at all that are grown up and yet are unbaptized, and they have children also. 2) the children of other churches who live amongst us and they have children also 3) the children of Church members whose Parents are dead 4) the Children of such Christians as live amongst us, though not members of this or any other particular Church; the Pastor and Teacher both did express their own judgments: that in these and such like cases the children ought to be Baptized as well as those we do allready. viz., the parents submitting to the Examination of the Elders, and we finding them qualified as those whose children we have hitherto baptized though they dare not as yet offer themselves to the Lords Supper. They also professed they intended not the Baptizing of the children of all promiscuously, viz. not of any ignorant scandalous persons who contradict the profession of Christianity. The Pastor also expressed that the reason why he had forborn to Baptizing sundry of these cases hitherto was for want of the Brethrens consent. But now they met with so many such cases of those that did frequently importunately desire Baptism for their children that they could no longer forbear, but desired to have the Consent of the Brethren that they might act freely in Baptizing according their own judgments;

Reasons

and that for such Reasons as these 1.) Because Baptizing belongs to their office: Mat. 28. 19, Luke 12. 42, Heb. 13. 17, 2.) These and such like cases are included in the Scripture grounds of the Synod in 1662.3.) Though Brethren differ in their Apprehensions about Baptizing, yet they may on the principle of Forbearing one another in love, consent to their Elders to Act in things belonging to their own office according to their own light. I Thessalonians 2. 4., I Timothy 1. 11, Ephesians 4. 2. Also Mr. Noys the Teacher did fully and freely express himselfe to concur with the Pastor in this matter, not merely in way of compliance, but as his own judgment perswaded.

[107]

In the Agitation, discourse and conference about this matter many of the chief of the Brethren did express themselves as concurring in judgment with the Pastor and Teacher, and that they thought they should not onely have liberty but countenance and encouragement in their way and work, and though some others of the Brethren that were otherwise minded did express their scruples, fears and doubts, yet they would not oppose but suffer the Elders to act peacably in this matter. So that in the issue the liberty of the Pastor and Teacher to Act in Baptizing in these and such like cases as they hold themselves bound to do by virtue of their office. Was voted nemine contradicente.

Voted

2 admitted to
full Communion

December 7 being the Sacrament day was admitted to full Communion Nathaniel Ingerson and Henry Wilkins.

Wadsworth

On May 10 was read in a printed paper from the Court about the renewing of Covenant and Church officers and Discipline, left under consideration. On May 17 on the Lords day afternoon Christopher Wadsworth having been propounded, was received unto membership in the usuall way.

Rix
Woodwall

On June 7 being Sacrament day. James Rix and Mary Woodwall were admitted to full communion after the usuall manner.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 163

Hardy
Andrews
Estwick

On July 5 being Sacrament day the 2 sisters Mrs. Joseph Hardy, and Mrs. Andrews were admitted to full communion.

On August Sacrament day the widow Estwick was admitted to full Communion.

1686

Fast
3 admitted to
full Communion

March 25 was kept as a publick fast by order of the Generall Court. On May 2 being Sacrament day Israel Porter and his wife and Abigail Foot were as Children of the Church admitted to full Communion.

At a Church Meeting May 3

5 members
admitted

Sarah Putman, Rebecca McKarta, Bethia Hacker, and Hanna Gill and Alice Curtis were received unto membership as others have been.

Fast

July 14 was kept as a publick fast by order of the President and Council, For seeking the mercy of Rayn in a time of great drought and for the Lords gracious presence and Assistance with the New Government and for the afflicted state of the Church of God in the world.

5 admitted to
full Communion

September 5 being Sacrament day, these 4 Susanna Dutch, Ester Maskall, Elizabeth Bush and Anne Felton were admitted to full communion as others before, and Samuel Golthait before.

At a Church Meeting Sept. 7

9 members

These 9 were admitted to Church Fellowship; Robert Follet and Persis Follet his wife, John Dam, the Widow Joanna Elson, Jane Phelps, Elizabeth Golthait, Elizabeth Henfield and Hanna Harvy after the usuall manner. Also Brother Stacyes daughter Elizabeth Comer having been guilty of Fornication presented a writing at this meeting acknowledging her sin, in a pœnitant way. She was forgiven by the Church.

Stacyes
daughtner

- Contribution for the French Protestants By an order from the President and Council there was a generall Contribution through the Colony for the distressed French Protestants that were come to New England etc. Accordingly there was a Contribution at Salem on the Lords day Sept 5 which amounted to six and twenty pounds odde money, which was sent to Boston by Mr. Benjamin Geerish who returned with a receipt of the money from the persons appointed to receive.¹
- for the Irish As there had been a Contribution some years agoe for 13 men that suffered shipwrack comeing from Ireland to whom was given seventeen pounds in money.
- 2 members On October 7 the Sacrament day, Elizabeth King and Deliverance Walcot were admitted to full Communion as others before.
- Thanksgiving November 25 was kept as a publick day of thanks giving for the mercies of the year by order from the President and Council.
- Mr. Lawson [108] These Brethren at the Village presented a paper to the Church subscribed with 14 hands, signifying that having had Experience of Mr. Lawson for 2 years they did approve of him for his doctrine and conversation desiring liberty from the Church that they might transact with him in order to his settling amongst them, which was consented to and granted.²
- John Maston
Benjamin Gerish
chosen and ordained (about the end of September) Whereas on March 11, 1684: our brother John Maston, and our brother Benjamin Geerish were desired by the Church to assist in the Deacons work, finding by experience there were neglects and murmurings growing among us as in Acts 6. 1 the Church after consideration of

¹The Revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685 resulted in large numbers of Huguenots migrating to the American Colonies. A considerable number of French Protestants especially from the Isle of Jersey had settled in Salem after 1660. Cf. Perley III, 204 ff.

²Deodate Lawson came to New England in 1680; settled Edgartown, 1681-1682; Danvers, 1683-1688; Norwell, 1694-1698. Returned to England.

Deacons
October 4

the matter at several times, they did on the Sabbath October proceed unto a free election and choosing (by a generall Vote) of the 2 foresaid brethren to the Office of Deacon viz. on the Sacrament day; and after their acceptance, notice being publickly given to the congregation that if ther was no just exception brought in we should the Lords day after proceed to their ordination, which accordingly was done, viz. on the Lords day November 4 the 2 forenamed Brethren were by the 2 Elders ordained to the Office of Deacon in this Church with prayer and Imposition of hands according to the pattern Acts 6.

At a Church Meeting Dec. 7.

7 Members

These 6 women were received to Church membership after the usuall manner viz. Elizabeth Giles, Mary Orms, Hanna Collins, Mary Herbert, Hanna Folet, Susanna Sibly, also Martha Mackallam by admission from Lyn.

2 to full
communion

On the Sacrament day before December 5, Eliezar Giles and Ruth Westgate were received to full Communion.

Mrs. Gidny

Febr. 7 Sacrament day the Widow Susanna Gidny was received to full communion.

1687

2 admitted

April 24, Mikil Cooms was received to Church membership. June 26 the Widow Flint was received to Church membership.

The Churches Con-
sent to Admit such as
Hanna Babbig
Hanna Archer

On the Sacrament day in May, there being divers of the Children of other Churches living amongst us desiring to be admitted to the Lords Supper in the same way and manner as we admit the Children of our own Church, it was then propounded by the Elders to the brethren for their consent, which was yielded nemine contradicente. Accordingly, Hanna Babbidge and Hanna Archer coming to us, upon Examination finding them able to Examine themselves and standing propounded one week were admitted to the Lords Supper after the usuall manner, Sacrament day July 3.

166 The Records of the First Church in Salem

- 3 admitted
Sept. 3 On the Sacrament day John Tomkins and Mary Homes as children of the Church were admitted to full communion after the usuall manner. Also Goodie Jacob was then received to Membership after the usuall manner.
- Fast On November 17 was a day of Thanksgiving kept (as by agreement in other Churches so here) For 1. the mercy of the harvest: 2. The mercy of the Kings declaration for liberty of Religion, and Confirmation of our Properties. And 3. for the generall health and peace amongst us here.
- Thanksgiving Ther had been a publick Fast kept in the Spring before against the Judgment of Worms threatening a Famine. As Joel 1 and 2 chapters.
- J. Cooms On November 27 Joanna Cooms was admitted to Church membership. Then was read also an Order from the Governor and Council for a generall day of Thanksgiving throughout all New England, expressing in a general way the 3 forementioned grounds and causes of Thanksgiving, which day was accordingly kept and observed in Salem on December 1.
- Thanksgiving
December 1
- S. Putman
B. Putman December 4 Sara Putman was admitted to Church Membership. Her Husband Benjamin Putman was also admitted the day before.

1688

- Fast A Publick Fast was kept for Rayn etc., it having been long wanting.
- Brother More
publikely
Admonished Old Captain More having been for many years under suspicion and a common Fame of lascivousness, and some degree at least of incontency and therefore was at severall times spoken to, by sundry brethren and also by the Elders in a private way, because for want of proof we could go no further. He was at last left to himselfe so farr as that he was convicted before justices of peace by 3 witnesses of gross unchastity with another mans wife and was censured by them.
- On July 1, after the morning sermon, 5 Elders acquainted the Church with it, 2 of the brethren were

sent to him to require him to come in the Afternoon which he did, speaking in some relenting way, and submitting to the Church and so a publike Admonition was consented to by the vote of the brethren, which was pronounced by the Pastor charging him the blame and shame of a scandalous Sin being a gross breach of the 7th Comandment not fit to be named, and that aggravated by his being formerly privately admonished, and he was now in his old age, etc., then he was delivered from the Lords table and required to Repent as Revelation 2. 21.

- [109] J. Allen and his Wife Aug. 5 the Elders acquainted the Church with Jacob Allen and his wife forsaking the Church Assemblies and joyning the Quaker meetings, and professing themselves Quakers, after some consideration the Church by vote desired Mr. J. Corwin, Mr. S. Gardner and Mr. Geerish to go as Messengers from the Church to require them to come to the Elders and to the Church to give an Account and to Return from their evil way etc.
- Admonished September 2. The brethren returned and acquainted the Church that having Spoken with them, that they utterly refused to come to the Church, expressing their resolution to go on still in the way of Quakerisme; whereupon the Church consented, that the brethren should go with Mr. Noys to Admonish them to repent from these Scriptures. Hebrews 10.24, Acts 2.42, and 3 Epistle John 10
- J. A. Sarah Cheevers was received into the Church after the usual manner.
- S. Cheevers September 30 Hanna Small, Elizabeth Nurse received to membership.
- 2 more October 7 being Sacrament day, Rachel Golthait, Deborah Masters as children of the Covenant were admitted into full communion and Sara Robinson.
- 3 more
- J. A. Also then Mr. Noys and Mr. G[ardner] gave an Account of their Admonishing of J[acob] A[llen] and his wife but that they continue still in their way not to hear the Church. Yet it was thought meet to forbear highest censure and wait somewhat longer.

168 The Records of the First Church in Salem

3 more

November 4 it being Sacrament day, Elizabeth Priest and Mary Lambert admitted to full Communion, also Jo Pickering admitted to membership.

S. Golthait

December. Our brother Samuel Goldthait having been so overtaken with drink as was publicly observed in the Street was dealt with by the Elders who finding him pœnitent gave him some time, he came again and both by words and by a pœnitential confession in writing which was read before the Church it being considered that he was not wont to be so overtaken and it was attested by the vote of Church without laying him under a public Admonition.

3 more

February 3, being Sacrament day Eli: Keisar, Elizabeth Flint and Sarah Pickering were admitted to full communion being Children of the neighboring Churches.

1689

May 5. At the Sacrament M Smith was admitted to the Communion.

2 more

June 2 At the Sacrament the Widow Jones was admitted to full Communion.

J. Chaplin
Admonished

June 9 on the Sabbath morning after the Sermon the Elders acquainted the Church with a Generall Rumor and report concerning J. Chaplin and that there was divers witnesses of it, that he had been given to cursing and swearing language and sometimes to excessive drinking both abroad among the Sauvages, and here also since he came home. He was sent unto to appear before the Church. When he came the []¹ scandalous offences were charged upon him and he did confess the divers []² but seemed to excuse his Fault but by the unanimous vote of the Church, He was from diverse Scriptures personally applied to him by the Pastor and Teacher publicly declared to be under the offence of the Church and barred from the Lords table and admonished to repent of his Sins, etc.

¹Torn; one or two words missing.

²One word missing.

June 16 Hanna Stone admitted to Membership and baptized.

July 7 Sacrament Day. Elizabeth Brown admitted to full communion.

Fast

On May 16 there was a public Fast observed as propounded by the Committee of Safety to seek mercy from God in the present unsettled State of things amongst us.

Z. Hill

July 14 Zebulon Hill was admitted to membership after the usual manner.

3 more

November 3 []¹ wife of []² Massy admitted to full communion.

November 18 []³ was admitted to full communion.

February 3 Grafton, Marget Grafton was admitted to full communion.⁴

February 16 Margaret Hilyard received to Membership.

3 more

April 6 on the Sacrament Day. Mr. Ruck, Abigail Walker, Jehodar Grafton were admitted to full communion.

May Benjamin Maxfeld admitted to full Communion.

2 more

July 6. Mr. Robert Gibs and John Stacy son of Thomas Stacy admitted to full Communion.

Fast

July 10

[110]

On November 10, 1689 was presented the desire of the Church members at the Village to have their dismission that they might be a Church of themselves for themselves and their children.

The Church at Salem Village

viz. Bray Wilkin and his wife	John Putman junior and his wife
Nathan: Putman	Henry Wilkis
John Putman and his wife	Benjamin Wilkis and his wife

¹Torn; one or two words missing.

²Torn; name illegible; possibly *John*.

³Torn; name missing.

⁴This whole line has been struck out in the original record.

Joshua Ray and his wife	Benjamin Putman and his wife
Nathan Ingersoll	Jonathan Putman and his wife.
Thomas Putman	Sarah the Wife of
Ezek Cheevers	James Putman
Edward Putman	Deliverance Walcot
Peter Prescot	25 in all.
Peter Cloys	

Mr. Parris ordained
Pastor

The Church here consented to their dismissal for that End, desiring the Honored Major Gidny, Mr. Hauthorn, and Mr. Corwin to be as their Messengers present and assistant to them in that work which was carried on and compleated on a day of Fasting and prayer on November —; after the usuall manner and custome of such churches, as where one Church becomes 2 by consent with the Approbation of Magistrates and neighbor Churches, whose Messengers were present. At the same time, Mr. Parris¹ was chosen and ordained their Pastor. The wholl business was transacted by Mr. Noys Teacher of the Church of Salem.

3 more

September 7. On the Sacrament day, Samuel Phipeny Sarah Horn Margaret Rix received to full Communion.

Fast

August 28 was observed as a publick day of Fasting and prayer by order of the Generall Court, to pray for a blessing on the Canada Expedition, etc.

one more
one more

Dorcas Carver was also received to full Communion. September 20 Mrs. Blanco was received unto Church fellowship.

1691

Thanksgiving

March, a day of thanksgiving was kept by order of the Generall Court with respect unto the Mercies of the year past.

Giles Cory

April 26. Giles Cory a man of 80² years of age having been a scandalous person in his former time, and

¹Samuel Parris (1653-1719/20) settled Danvers (Salem Village), 1689-1696; Dunstable, 1707-1712.

²He is supposed to have been born about 1619 so he was, in fact, only about seventy-two. Perley II, 193.

God having in his later time awakened him unto Repentance he stood propounded a moneth, and making a confession of such evils as had been observed in him before. He was received into the Church with consent of the brethren.

one more

Ezekiel Waters his wife after she had stood propounded, there was some objections against her for a time which being removed she was publickly received to Membership after the usuall manner.

Bro. More
Absolved

Old Captain More having lyan under the Churches censure, almost 2 years whereby he was debarred from the Lords Supper comeing severall times to the Elders, and at last publickly in a writing and partly by speech professing his Repentance for his offences against God and his Church was in charity accepted and by the vote of the Church forgiven and restored to his former state.

one more

Jude¹ Pudny after removing some []² was received in membership.

Contribution for the
Redemption of
Captives

By reason of many captives taken of late by the Indians especially from York there was a general contribution propounded by the Governor and Council thro out the Colony for the Redemption of them. February 21, the contribution of Salem amounting to thirty-two pounds in money was sent unto Captain Sewall and Mr. Jeremiah Dumar who were appointed to receive it; a receipt of which was returned to us under Captain Samuel Sewalls hand, dated at Boston February 26, 1691/2.

Council at
Lyn

In December ther was a Council at Lin, in relation to some differences between some brethren and Mr. Shepard their Pastor. Mr. Noys and 3 other brethren were by vote of the Church desired to go thither and joyn with other Elders and Messengers of the Churches of Boston and Malden, to help make peace,

¹I.e., Judith, wife of John Pudney. Perley III, 21.

²Torn; one or two words missing.

which through the blessing of God on their endeavors was attained to the generall satisfaction of all.¹

[I I I]

March 1.

- 2 more Pricilla Skerry wife of Henry Skerry, and Mary Elson the wife of Samuel Elson on the Sacrament day April 1 were admitted to full Communion.
- one more Sara Pasco admitted to full Communion the first Sabbath in May
- one more June 26 on the Sabbath day Mrs. Benjamin Geerish was also admitted.
- Nurse Ex-communicated July 3 After the Sacrament the Elders propounded to the Church, and it was by an unanimous vote consented to, that our Sister Nurse being a convicted witch by the Court and condemned to dy, should be Excommunicated, which was accordingly done in the Afternoon, she being present.
- Fast May 26 a publick day of Fasting and prayer was kept by agreement.
- Fast July 14 by Order of the Generall Court was kept a publick Fast.
- Thanksgiving Generall Thanksgiving throughout the province of the Massachusetts for the Return of the Governor and Mr. Mather bringing over with them a settlement of Government, etc.
- Fast August 28 by an Order from the Governor and Council was observed as a day of Fasting and prayer, to seek mercy from God in relation to the present afflicted state of things in both Englands, to which was added by said Order an Exhortation was added to all the Churches to keep the wheel of prayer in continuall motion by successive and repeated agreements for days of prayer with Fasting, in their

¹Jeremiah Shepard (1648-1720), Harvard College, 1669, was minister of the Lynn church from 1680 until his death. He seems to have been an activist preacher and in 1689 headed a delegation from Lynn to Boston to protest the Andros government. In 1692 he was "cried out" against as a wizard. Cf. Sibley II, 267-276.

severall vicinities till our God hath spoke peace to us and we find his Salvation nigh unto us with glory dwelling in our Land.

Accordingly

Thanksgiving

Afterwards a day of Thanksgiving for the mercyes of the year was observed by Order from the Governor and Council viz. in January 92

Cory Ex-communicated

Sept 18 G[iles] Cory was excommunicated, the cause of it was that he being accused and indicted for the sin of witchcraft he refused to plead, and so incurred the sentence and penalty of pain fort dure being undoubtedly either guilty of the sin of witchcraft or of throwing himself upon sudden and certain death, if he were otherwise innocent.

1693

Communion day
Mary Pascho
Sarah Hill
admitted

April 2. Mary Pascho wife of Hugh Pascho and Sarah Hill wife of Philip Hill, were both admitted to full Communion.

Louder

The same day Elizabeth Louder wife of John Louder presented a pœnitant confession of her sin in being with child by him who is now her husband before marriage which confession was read and accepted by the Church, and she restored to her former state so as to have liberty of having her children baptized.

3 admitted

May 7 before the Sacrament was admitted to full Communion Captain Steven Sewall, Elizabeth Cook and Priscilla Marsh.

*Elizabeth Marston
ownd the Covenant*

September. Elizabeth, wife of William Marston, as child of the Church owned the Covenant, and had her child Baptised.¹

1694

April 1 on the Sacrament day. Lieftenant Pickering, and Mrs. Price were admitted to full communion after the usuall manner. August 5 on the Sacrament day, Jane Pickering the wife of Jonathan Pickering and Elizabeth Horn the daughter of John Horn were admitted to full Communion in the usuall way.

¹This entry was made later by Mr. Fisk.

- Aug. 26 Elizabeth Taply admitted to full Communion.
- Abigail Smith wife of John Smith admitted to full Communion.
- Thanksgiving November 29 was observed as a day of Thanksgiving
December 13 was observed as a day of Humiliation.
January 27. Martha wife of Samuel Robinson was received to membership in the usuall way.
- Admitted February last Sabbath, Tomizen Woodwall wife of Samuel Woodwall was admitted to full Communion.
- 1695
- Glover Elizabeth Glover was admitted to full Communion
March with the Church on the Sabbath day before Sacrament.
- Seewall Mrs. Margerit Seewal was a child of the Church at
admitted Cambridge and desirous [of] Communion with this Church was propounded the last Sabbath in March and received to full Communion the first Sabbath in April, before the Sacrament of the Lords Supper.
- Fast August 7 observed a publick fast being appointed by
[112] the Government.
- Abigail Punchard On the 2nd of June Abigail Punchard was admitted
admitted to ful communion with the Church, just before the Lords Supper, she was propounded the Sabbath before.
- June 23 Mehitabel Fountain owned the Covenant and had her 5 children¹ baptized.
- June 30 Mary wife of Samuel Gale owned the Covenant and had her 2 children² baptized.
- July 7 Sarah Leach was admitted to ful Communion with the Church, before Sacrament, being propounded the Sabbath before.
- July 21 Grove Hirst owned the Covenant and was baptized, having before bene examined by the elders, and bene propounded the Sabbath before, and at the same time,
- ¹James, Sarah, Mehitabel, Peter and John. Cf. Perley III, 173.
- ²Mary and Samuel. *Ibid.* III, 245.

- Deborah the wife of Jeremiah Mechum Junior owned the Covenant, and had her child baptized, she having bene examined by the elders, and propounded the Sabbath before.
- August 11 Rebeckah wife of James Gillingham having bene examined and propounded before entered into Covenant and was baptized and her 2 children.¹
- August 18 Francis Ellis having bene baptized in infancy in Ireland and having bene examined by the elders and propounded the Sabbath before, owned the Covenant and had his 4 children² baptized.
- November 24 Mrs. Anna Stevens was joyned to the Church and Baptized and had liberty to partake at the Lords table.
- December 15 Benjamin Pitman Junior and Susanna Flint wife of Samuel Flint being children of the Church and having submitted to examination owned the Covenant, and Mary the wife of said Benjamin, being unbaptized, and having submitted to examination and been propounded, gave her profession of the Christian faith and her repentance, and entering into Covenant was at the same time baptized.
- 1696
- March 8 Mrs. Mary Woolcot wife of Mr. Josiah Woolcot a child of the North Church at Boston, owned the Covenant here, after having been examined.
- May 3 Daniel Bacon Junior having in his minority bene baptized at Lin owned the Covenant personally here and had 3 children³ baptized, at the same time Anna Ropes a child of this Church being examined as the former, owned the Covenant personally.
- May 10th Elizabeth Booth widow of George Booth, having been with child by said Booth before marriage appeared before the Church and confessed her fault that case to be against the 7th Commandment that forbidding all unclean lusts and requiring chastity in

¹Rebecca and Hannah. *Ibid.* III, 324.

²Francis, Thomas, Sarah and Mary. *Ibid.* III, 243.

³Daniel, Sarah, and Benjamin. *Ibid.* III, 28.

- every condition and at the same time upon the testimony of her repentance was reconciled to the Church and personally owned and entered into Covenant, having been examined before, and had liberty of having [*her*] child baptized, granted to her.
- 27 The Widow Candish¹ owned the Covenant and had her child baptized.
- June 7 Sarah Ross wife of James Ross entered into Covenant and came under the watch of this Church, and was baptized, having been examined and propounded from time before.
- June 14 Hanna Gavet wife of Philip Gavet being a child of the Church in Cambridge, after examination and standing propounded a week, owned the Covenant in this Church and had her six children Baptized, the 3 eldest² were examined and catechized.
- 21 Mr. John Higginson Tertius and Hanna his wife after examination owned the Covenant.
- July 5 Mrs. Lydia Corwin, having formerly owned the Covenant, was now after examination and being propounded admitted to full Communion before the Sacrament.
- August Judah Mackentire wife of Daniel Mackentire, and Joanna Shaw wife of William Shaw Junior, after examination and being propounded one fortnight and now their confessions being read, were received into the Church, with the consent of the Church, and were baptized.
- Elizabeth Nichols, wife of [*Samuel*] Nichols, after having been examined received the Covenant and had her child baptized. John Hallet renewed the Covenant and had his child Baptized. Margret the wife of John Harris after being propounded and examined entered into Covenant and was Baptized. The wife of our brother John Felton after being propounded and examined renewed the Covenant with

¹Mary, widow of William Candidge.

²Philip, Hannah, Elizabeth, Ezekiel, John and Samuel. Cf. Perley III, 337.

November 1 God and the Church and was received to Communion.

14 Deborah wife of James Gold having been with child (by him who is her husband) but having her confession brought before the Church in a []¹ was received into the Church []².

[113]

Fast January 14 was observed as a publick fast being appointed by the Government.

Thanksgiving February the 4th was observed as a day of publick thanksgiving being appointed by the Government.

Feb. 7 Mrs. Hanna Higginson wife of Mr. John Higginson Junior being examined and propounded the Sabbath before, was received to full communion. She had personally owned the Covenant before.

On the same Sacrament day, Bethia Peas who had entered into Covenant with God and the Church before and was baptized on her own personal profession now was received to full communion she having bene again examined propounded, and publickly renewed her covenant. William Murray having bene baptized in infancy in Scotland submitted to examination, was propounded, and on the Sabbath he entered into Covenant with God and the Church here and had his child Baptized. After the Sacrament the Teacher earnestly desired the communicants such of them as had adult children to put them in mind of their Baptizmal covenant and told them that although God accepted the parents covenanting for their children in their minority yet, God expected their personal owning the covenant at age, and that such as the parents should think qualified they should stir them up to such full communion with the church.

February 28 Mr. Benjamin Marston acknowledged the covenant and had his child Baptized.

¹Manuscript badly torn.

²Last line illegible.

1697

- March 9 Mr. Benjamin Brown and his wife, and Mrs. Mary Emerson were received to full communion.
- 14 Elizabeth English Daughter of Sister Stevens acknowledged the covenant.
Sarah wife of Abel Gardner owned the Covenant.
- April 4 Mr. Robert Kitchen, Mrs. Bethiah Gidny, Mrs. Pickering wife of Mr. William Pickering, the wife of John Ward, and the widow Candish renewed the covenant, they were entered into Baptism after examination and propounding and were admitted to full communion.
- 18 Sarah Phippen owned the covenant having bene before examined and after meeting the church desired to stay and Mr. Benjamin Pitman Senior was joynd to the church, and Mrs. Gidny wife of Mr. Nathaniel Gidny was received to full communion, the same day Dorothy Lord widow was propounded in order to be Baptized.
- 25 Mary Parsons was propounded in order to Baptism.
- May 2 Mrs. Mary Gardner, Margret Williams and Elizabeth wife of John Woodwell owned the covenant and were received to full communion having before bene examined and propounded.
- May 19 Dorothy Lord and many Persons enterd into Covenant and were baptized.
Publick
Fast¹
- 23 Mr. Nathaniel Gidny owned the Covenant and Mrs. Lindol was propounded in order to joyn to the church.
- 30 Mrs. Mary Lindol was received into the church and was baptized after having stood propounded one week, her declaration was read.
- June 6 Mr. Samuel Brown and his wife and John Waters and Mrs. Kitchen and the wife of Nath. Beadle Senior and the wife of Benjamin Ashby and Susannah West were received to full communion before the

¹In margin.

sacrament having bene examined and propounded the Sabbath before they then renewed the covenant.

The same Sabbath Brother John Stacy at his request had liberty granted by the church to embody with those of the brethren at the east,¹ and Watertown, that were going to be a church, provided that affair was orderly carried on with the consent of the Neighboring churches and Elders, and Mrs. Elizabeth Hirst was propounded in order to Baptizm.

- 13 Mrs. Elizabeth Hurst after having bene examined by the Elders entred into Covenant with us and was Baptized.
- 27 Susannah the wife of Aaron Messervey ownd the covenant here after being examined and propounded as is usuall and had her child baptized.
- July 4 Abigail Williams wife of Hilliard Williams having bene examined and propounded personally owned the Covenant and was received to full communion.
- 25 Mary the wife of John Smith having bene examined and propounded as is usuall owned the covenant and had her child baptized.
- August 1 Susannah Bacon wife of Daniel Bacon Senior a child of the church at Lin was received to full communion without having bene before examined and propounded, now renewed the covenant as the children of this church.
- September 5 Mr. Samuel Gidny and Elizabeth wife of Lewis Hunt the first a child of this church the 2d a child of the church at Cambridge owned the covenant personally.
- October 3 Mr. Benjamin Maston, Bethia Peters, wife of Richard Peters and Dorothy Lord were received to full communion having bene examined by the elders and propounded.

¹The Church "gathered at Watertown, East End" became by a process of shifts in parish boundaries, the First Church in Waltham. Cf. C. A. Nelson, *Waltham, Past and Present*, Cambirdge, 1879, pp. 54-56.

- 10 Benjamin Hutchinson of Salem Village being a child of this church owned the covenant having bene examined and after had 3 children Baptized.
- November 7 Isaack Fits a child of the church at Ipswitch now living here was received to full communion with the church [] examined and propounded and []¹
- [114] The same Sabbath our Sister Abigail Leads² formerly Libbens had her dismission in the church at Dorchester. Mary the wife of Samuel Foot and Hanna Harvy were propounded in order to Baptizm.
- November 11 was observed a day of Publick Thanksgiving to God for the mercys of the year particularly for the Harvest after much drough and cold weather. we had yet a more plentyful harvest than the foregoing year, which was a year of great scarcity by reason of unseasonable Frosts, and for the mercy of Health and for deliverance from a feared invasion by the French enemy.¹ It was commanded by the Government.
- 14 Mary wife of Samuel Foot and Hanna Harvey entered into covenant and were Baptized after having bene examined by the Elders and propounded and Samuel Foot the same day renewed the covenant and had his child baptized.
- 21 Mary Brawdway propounded in order to Baptizm.
- December Mrs. Mary Bowdish wife of Capt. William Bowdish having bene Baptized at age, was propounded and examined by the elders before and now renewed her covenant and was received to full Communion. Mary Brawdway enterd into covenant with God and came under the watch and discipline of the Church and was Baptized.
- January 30 Debora Bly enterd into Covenant with God and came under the watch of the Church and was Baptized having bene examined.

¹Manuscript badly worn.

²Benjamin Leeds and Abigail *Knight* were married at Dorchester August 11, 1696; she was admitted to the church there on February 26, 1698/9 and died June 29, 1712. *Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths*, pp. 102, 127; *Dorchester Church Records*, p. 29.

Mr. William Gidny and Mrs. Gidny were propounded in order to full communion with the Church and admitted the next Lords Day.

1698

- March 6 Mr. Samuel Ruck after being examined by the Elders and propounded owned the Covenant and was received to full communion.
- 13 Sarah wife of John Williams after examination and being propounded Entered into Covenant with God came under the watch of the Church and was Baptized.
- 17 Observed a day of Publick prayer with fasting appointed by the Governor and council.
- April 3 Mary the wife of Samuel Gale and Mrs. Barbara Wells after having bene examined and propounded, ownd the covenant personally and were received to full communion with the Church.
- 10 Hanna, Negro Woman, formerly the Servant woman of Lieuetenant Thomas Gardiner, deceased, she had before bene called Venus, but that name being accounted unworthy of a Christian woman, she was at her Baptism at her desire named Hanna. At her examination she answered according to Mr. Cottons Catechise very exactly and her account she gave of the work of Gods spirit upon her was an evidence of the efficacy and sovereignty of the grace of God, she had also the testimony of Diverse of the church for a christian conversation, publickly entered into Covenant with God and came under the watch of the Church and was baptized.
- June 12 Mary Robinson wife of Samuel Robinson Junior entered into covenant and came under the watch and care of the Church, having bene examined and propounded she was baptized.
- August 14 Sarah Hinksman having bene examined owned the covenant and came under the watch of the Church.
- November 6 Hannah Gavet wife of Philip Gavet after being examined by the Elders and having bene propounded, was received to full communion with the Church before the Sacrament.

- The same Sabbath the village desired Elders and Messengers from the Church to Assist and counsel at the ordination of Mr. Joseph Green,¹ on the 10th instant, which was accordingly attended, The teacher, Mr. Jonathan Corwin, Mr. Benjamin Brown, and Deacon Marston were present. The ordination was then comfortably effected.
- December 4 Mr. Abel Gardner was admitted to full Communion before the Sacrament having bene propounded and examined by the Elders.
- 15 was a day of Publick Thanksgiving observed by order of the General Court for the mercyes of this year, it was a very cold day.
- January 1 The Widow Marshal, after having bene examined and stand propounded one week, renewed the covenant personally and was accepted to full communion.
- February 12 Captain John Brown personally ownd the Covenant.
- 1699
- April 2 The wife of Abel Gardiner having been examined and propounded was received to full communion with the church, after renewing personally the covenant.
- Sarah Carter and 3 children Sarah the wife of John Carter having bene examined by the Elders and stood propounded one fortnight and nothing objected against was received into Covenant and was baptized on her own profession as also Sarah her eldest daughter being aged about 13 was received into covenant on her own profession and was baptized with 2 other of her children being minors were baptized at the same time viz. Mary and Martha.
- April 9 Daniel Grant after being examined and propounded ownd the covenant and had 3 children Baptized; James Smith being examined and propounded enterd into covenant and was baptized.
- May 21 Samuel Golthwait Junior ownd the covenant and had his child baptized, He was first examind.

¹Joseph Green (1675-1715), Harvard College, 1695; settled Salem Village, i.e., Danvers, 1697-1715.

- July 2 Sarah Bavage¹ now Dennis¹ dismissed to Ipswitch church and Sarah Hadlock to the church at Salem Village.
- August 5 Mrs. J. Wilson² ownd the Covenant and was received to full communion with the church and Sister Candish now Earl dismiss to the North Church at Boston.
- 20 John Orn Junior after examination ownd the covenant.
- September 3 Mr. Nathaniel Hawthorn owned the Covenant and was received to full communion and the widow Walker entered into Covenant and joynd to the [].³
- [115]
- September 24 Nath. Felton son of Brother Felton ownd the Covenant and had his child baptized and at the same time Nathanael Lindal and Abigail personally ownd the covenant the 3 foregoing were examined as is usuall.
- October 29 Mary the wife of Robert Moulton joynd to the Church and were baptizd having first been propounded and examined, on the same day Sarah the wife of Miles Ward was propounded to full communion.
- November 5 Sarah the wife of Miles Ward, ownd the covenant and was received to full communion with the Church.
- 19 Miles Ward ownd the covenant.
- 26 Mr. John Hawthorn Junior and Richard Waters having bene examined personally renewd the covenant and Martha the wife of Richard Waters having bene propounded and examind enterd into Covenant and was baptized.
- December 31 Mrs. Hanna Gerrish having bene examined owned the covenant.
- February 4 Rebecka wife of John Bly and the widow Remember Moses were received to ful communion with the church after having bene examined and propounded, they personally renewing the covenant.

¹I.e., Babbidge, wife of Thomas Dennis.

²*Williams* could be read for *Wilson*; text is practically illegible.

³Manuscript torn.

- 11 Remember Cocks having bene examined publickly and personally ownd the Covenant and had her son baptized.
- 1700
- March 2 Margery Pasco and Mary Pasco, after being examined and propounded personally ownd the covenant and were received to full communion.
- 9 Mary, the wife of Samuel Goldthwait after having bene examined and propounded enterd into covenant and was baptized.
- 31 Mr. Walter Price, having bene examined ownd the covenant and had his child baptized.
- May 19 Samuel Howard having been examined owned the covenant and had his child baptized.
- 26 Mr. Lewis Hunt having submitted himselfe to examination by the Elders and having bene a fortnight propounded and nothing objected, had the confession of his faith and the profession of his repentance publickly read, and with the consent of the brethren was joynd to the church.
- June 16 Mrs. Ruth Gardiner after examination personally ownd the covenant and had her child baptized.
- July 7 Priscilla Skerry a child of this church having been examined and propounded one week, renewed the covenant and was received to full communion.
- August 4 James Smith, Remember Cox, and Anne the wife of John Smith after examination and being propounded, renewed the covenant and were received to full communion.
- September 1 Mr. Benjamin Lynd, Mary the wife of John Collins, and Hanna the wife of Eleazer Moses, and Hanna Harvey, were received to full communion with the Church, having bene examined and propounded renewed the covenant.
- 15 Mr. Edmond Batter he having been examined Renewed his Covenant personally and had his child Baptized.
- November 10 Mercy Eliot having bene examined and propounded enterd into covenant and was baptized.

1701

- April 27 Sarah Eburn and Abigail Harvey after having been examined and propounded *week*¹ made open profession of their repentance towards God and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ Entered into Covenant and were baptized.
- June 22 Mary the wife of Samuel Waters ownd the Covenant after having been examined and had her child Baptized.
- August 24 Mary the wife of Ebenezer Lambert after having bene examined, ownd the covenant and had her children Baptized.
- September 7 the widow Boston having been examined and propounded as usual was upon renewing the covenant, received to full communion with the consent of the Church.
- 14 Sarah Peach daughter of Brother William Stacy having falen into the sin of fornication, through the grace of God became poenitent, and had her confession openly read before the church wherein she first askt forgiveness of God for Christ's sake. and then of the church and of her parents, and desired the church to be reconciled to her, and the church accepted her voluntary offer of open confession, and her confession and restored her into the same state the rest of the children of the church are in, and having been examined before, at the same time owned the covenant.
- 28 Anne Andross wife of John Andros having bene examined and propounded had her declaration read professing her faith and repentance was joynd to the Church with the consent of the brethren.
- October 4 Sarah Miles having been examined and propounded renewed the covenant and was received to full communion, with the church, the brethren consenting.

[116]

- 26 Letters being sent to this church from the Church at

¹Inserted above line.

- Beverly desiring the assistance of Elders and messengers at the ordination of Mr Thomas Blowr,¹ they were communicated to the Church, and the church chose and desired Major Brown, Colonel Hawthorn, Mr. Jonathan Corwin and Deacon Marston to go with the teaching elder on that occasion and they accordingly went on October 29 on which day Mr Thomas Blowr was ordained pastor of that Church.
- November 2 Elizabeth Trask having bene examined by the Elders and stood propounded 2 weeks and nothing objected. Enterd into covenant and was Baptized.
- January 4th Sarah Coburn wife to Edward Coburn, being a child of the Church at Beverly having bene examined and propounded with the consent of the brethren was received to full communion, she entering into covenant here.
- Feb 1st Mrs. Sarah Higginson, wife of Colonel John Higginson, a child of one of the Churches in Boston,² in communion with us, having been examined by the Elders and propounded was received to full communion with the consent of the Church.
- 1702
- March 15 Samuel Ingersol having bene examined and propounded publickly enterd into covenant and was baptized and his child. The same day Mary Egar was propounded in order to baptizm.
- 22 Richard Prince Junior and Hanna wife of Peter Hinderson were propounded in order to Baptizm.
- 29 The wife of Samuel Howard baptized in the church at Beverly in her nonage being now come to live in Salem, submitted to examination and personally ownd the Covenant here and came under the watch of this church.

¹Thomas Blowers (1677-1729), Harvard College 1695; settled, Beverly, 1701-1729.

²Sarah Savage, wife of Colonel Higginson, was baptized in the First Church in Boston, June 26, 1653.

April 4th¹ Mrs. Maston wife of Mr. Benjamin Maston, a child of the church at Ipswitch and Mrs. Batter wife of Mr. Edmund Batter, both of them having bene propounded and examined, and nothing objected were received to full communion with consent of the Brethren, and they owned the covenant — it was Sacrament day.

The same day Richard Prince Junior, Hanna Hinderson wife of P. Hinderson and Mary Eger having bene propounded and examined and nothing objected, they enterd into covenant and came under the watch and care of the church and were baptized. The same day Elizabeth daughter of John Waters having bene examined personally ownd the covenant. Mehitabel daughter of Mr. D. [*eliverance*]² Parkman and Mary wife of John Waters Junior and Abigail daughter of Lieutenant Neal, were propounded in order to Baptizm.

19 Mehitabel daughter of Mr. Parkman and Mary wife of John Waters Junior and Abigail daughter of Lieutenant Neal, having bene propounded and examined and nothing objected against them, they enterd into covenant and came under the watch and care of the church and were baptized.

26 Abigail the wife of John Allin having bene examined and propounded the usual time and nothing objected against her, enterd into covenant and came under the watch and care of the church and was baptized.

May 3d Mrs. Elizabeth Corwin daughter of Mr. Jonathan Corwin having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected enterd into covenant and was received to full communion with consent of the church.

31 Hanna, Sarah and Martha daughter of our Sister Mrs. Hasket and Lydia Neal daughter of Lieuetenant Neal, having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against them, upon their profession

¹Text reads April 4th, which fell on a Saturday. Probably intended for April 5th; a usual sacrament day.

²Cf. Perley III, 65.

- of faith and repentance entered into covenant and came under the watch and care of the church and were baptized.
- June 7 Mr. James Lyndal a child of this church and Eunice wife of Robert Willis being a child of the Church at Topsfield having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against them, renewed their covenant and with the consent of the brethren were received to full communion with the church.
- June 21 Sarah Flint having bene examined and propounded Entered into covenant and came under the watch of this church and was baptized.
- 28 Hannah wife of Nathaniel Beadle having been examined owned the Covenant personally.
- July 4 Priscilla Arthur having bene examined and propounded renewed her covenant and was received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.
- 12 Captain John Turner and Elizabeth Dean wife of Joseph Dean and Sara Hunlock having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against them upon their personal profession of faith and repentance entered into covenant and came under the watch and care of the church, and were baptized and at the same time Mrs. Mary Turner having bene examined renewed her covenant.
- August 2 Ruth wife of David Flint having bene examined renewed her covenant and the widow of John Mascol Tertius a child of the church at Beverly owned the covenant here and came under the watch and care of the church.
- 9 Deborah Lee wife of Thomas Lee having bene examined and propounded entered into covenant and on personal profession of faith and repentance was baptized the same time the widow White renewed her covenant and had 3 children Baptized.
- Sept. 6 Mr. Peter Ausgood and his wife, and Samuel Howard and his wife after having []¹ their covenant and were received to full communion.

¹Manuscript torn.

[117]

- Novemb. 8 Mr. Samuel Leech, and his wife, after having bene examined personally owed the covenant and had their child baptized.
- Decemb. 20 Sarah Gustin having desired to be baptized was sometime before this Sabbath propounded and now given in a poenitent confession in writing, having bene guilty of the sin of fornication, and upon her professed repentance, and flying to Christ for mercy and pardon and having bene before examined and a good testimony given of a sober and poenitent conversion appearing in her, she was baptized entring into covenant.
- January 31 Deborah the daughter of Leiuetenant Neal having bene examined and also propounded making profession of faith and repentance enterd into covenant, coming under the watch and care of the church was baptized.
- Feb. 7 Mr. John Gardner son of Captain Samuel Gardner and Mrs. Price wife of Captain Walter Price, having bene examined and propounded owned their covenant and were received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.
- 28 Joseph Hardy a child of this church propounded in order to full communion with the church and the desires of Mrs. Sarah Bowdish, widow, to joyn to the church was at the same time propounded. And William Punchin having his confession read, was joyned to the church.

1703

- March 7 Joseph Hardy Renewed his covenant with God and the church and with the consent of the brethren was received to full communion he having submitted to the Examination of the Elders.

The same Sabbath after sacrament was appointed a meeting of the church Brethren at the house of our teacher at one of the clock in the afternoon to consult about several matters of great importance, and to do what should be judged the duty of the church

relating to such cases as should be propounded, the meeting to be on March the 8th.

March 8 The Brethren of the Church met together at the Teachers house at the time appointed at which meeting of the church the following particulars were agreed upon and consented to by the vote of the Church.

1. That for the time to come on every publick fast day and every publick Thanksgiving day after sermon, the Deacons of this Church shall ask of the whole Assembly that come together to worship the Lord, a contribution for the poor.
2. That the mony gatherd by these contributions or anything else given in Notes be bestowed on the poor of this church especially, and yet so as compassionate regard be had in the distribution to any of the poor that are wont to worship God with us in the same meeting house.
3. That the mony and goods of any kind gatherd by these contributions shall be distributed to the poor as above, according to the discretion of the Deacons of the Church, and such two of the selectmen as shall be desired annually by the minister or ministers of the church to joyn with the Deacons in the distribution.
4. That if any contraversy shall arise betwixt the distributors of the mony and goods collected, about the distribution that it shall be decided by the minister or ministers joyning with them in the distribution.
5. That the Deacons shall keep a fair record of the several summes given at the several times by the Assembly and record the names of the persons to whom any of this contribution mony or goods is given, and the summes given to them, in some one of the Church books to be seen of any, as occasion shall serve.
6. That the mony and goods Received by the contribution shall be kept in the Deacons hands till the distribution be made.

7. That the above-mentioned directions and appointments of the church at this meeting concerning the contribution on fast days and Thanksgiving days shall be observed untill at some meeting of the church the church shall see reason, otherwise to direct and appoint.

At the same church meeting The church desired and appointed our Brethren Major Samuel Brown, Captain Samuel Gardner and Mr. Daniel Epes to inspect the accounts of the Deacons for the time past concerning the maintenance of the Lords table, that it may be known what the church is indebted to them, and who of the members are indebted to the church and how much, that the blame may be only on such of the church, as sinfully neglect to bring in to the Deacons, their part of what was agreed on by the church for the maintenance of the Lords table, and that care may be taken to bring such to a more ready performance of their duty.

At the same church meeting it was consented to, that if any pleaded poverty as the reason of their neglect, that the case should be considered by the ministers and Deacons of the Church, and if they judged the plea and excuse good it should be forgiven them [*but that*]¹ they must expect to bring into the Deacons []² and that the church ask [118] and will require it of them.

At the same meeting also it was agreed and voted by the church that that our Brethren Major Samuel Brown, Captain Samuel Gardner and Mr. Daniel Epes, should inspect the accounts of monys received by the Deacons at several contributions formerly given for the poor and their distributions of those summes for the satisfaction of the church, and the discharging the deacons of the summs so received and distributed.

At the same church meeting it was agreed that for time to come and until the church take further order, that the several members of the church

¹Manuscript badly worn.

²Most of the last line illegible.

whether men or women shall yearly sometime in the month of March bring into the Deacons 2 shillings and sixpence each of them for the maintenance of the Lords table, (such only excepted as the Ministers and Deacons shall excuse on the account of the poor circumstance they are in) and that it shall be accounted scandalous for any to neglect so to do, if after the Deacons have demanded it they shall still neglect to do it and they shall be lyable to answer for their neglect before the church.

At the same meeting it was propounded to the Brethren that any of them that had children or other relations or neighbors that were children of the church that had faln into scandalous evils that had not manifested their repentances before the church that they should exhort and admonish them to bring forth fruit meet for repentance and seek reconciliation with the church by offering a publick confession of their sin, for the glory of God, and the prevention of further censure, And a Record of the church produced wherein it is said that for the time to come it was expected the brethren should bring forth such as were scandalous.

At the same meeting of the church was considered the case of Elizabeth Allin wife of Jacob Allin, who for forsaking the Church and the ordinances of Christ, and living in the profession and practice of Quakerism, and refusing to appear before the church when orderd so to do, lay under the censure of admonition and suspension dispensed to her by the churches sending the teacher of the church with two of the brethren, who did accordingly admonish her and give returne of their so doing to the church, where upon the church agreed to wait yet longer, if perhaps God might give her repentance. The Church now considered that notwithstanding many years waiting and using much clemency and patience towards her, she hath hitherto refused to hear the church. They thought it necessary to send yet once more to see if she will yet hear the church, and judging it duty to procede to renounce communion with her in case she still persist in the error of her way and therefore desired two of the brethren viz.

Mr. Daniel Epes and Mr. John Pickering to urge her to repentance and to hear the church, and to signify to her that otherwise she must expect to be excommunicated.

At the same church meeting also the church was informed that our Sister Tamzin Hill did forsake the church and ordinances and went to the meeting of the Quakers, and that notwithstanding means used by the teacher of the church to reclaim her whereupon it was agreed that 3 of our brethren viz. Mr. Daniel Epes, Deacon Maston, and Mr. Samuel Ruck should be sent to her to enquire into the reason of her forsaking the church and the ordinances of Christ and to exhort her to return to the Church and not forsake the Christian Religion which she had professed, and that she would not break the Covenant she had solemnly made with God and with the church and that they should make return to the church of their so doing and of her replies to them.

At the same church meeting with the consent of the Brethren of the church was given unto our Brother John Massey¹ an old great church Bible it having bene often sent to Aged people and misusd, and not like to be any way more serviceable, then by giving it to some aged person, and he being considered as the first Town bornd child, it was given to him and deliverd to him before the brethren.

March 28

The widow Mrs. Sarah Bowditch having stood propounded one month, and nothing objected against her was upon the reading of her profession of her faith and confession of the sin of excessive drinking to which she had bene formerly bene addicted enterd into Covenant and was joynd to the church with the consent of the Brethren.

Abigail Birch having been guilty of the sin of fornication made a pœnitent confession of her sin, and was reconciled to the church, upon her renewing Covenant and had liberty of having her child baptized.

¹John Massey had been born about 1631 in Salem and was, therefore, about seventy-two years of age at this time. Cf. Perley I, 217.

- April 4 Charles Burroughs and Elizabeth Waters having bene propounded and examined by the ministers renewed their covenant and were received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.
- 18 Mehitabel King wife of Samuel King having bene with child by him who is now her husband before marriage made publick poenitent confession of her sin, and was reconcild to the church and at the same time renewed her covenant and so had liberty to have her child baptized.
- May 16 Jonathan Bly having submitted to examination and having stood propounded, and nothing objected against him, enterd into covenant and was baptized.
- June 8 Sarah Eburn having bene examined and propounded renewed the covenant and was admitted to full communion with the consent of the brethren.

Then also the brethren of the church consented that our brother James Rix and his wife should have letters of dismissal and recommendation.

our brother John Chaplin having long layn under an admonition for some scandalous offences upon a very poenitent letter of his sent to the church from N. Jersey where he now lives and attested by Mr. Herri-man¹ minister was restored to our communion being []² of it made to him by letter.

[119]

- August 1 Abigail French wife of Humphry French having formerly bene baptized here, and Mary West wife of Samuel West, a child of the church at Newbury having bene propounded and examined, renewed their covenant and were received to full communion with the church with the consent of the church.

Dina Ingols wife of Stephen Ingols, having bene baptized in infancy and now upon examination publickly renewd the covenant and had her children baptized.

¹John Harriman (1647/8-1705), Yale College, 1667, was minister at Elizabethtown, N. J., from 1687 to 1705.

²Six words illegible.

Anna Leech daughter of John Leech a child of this church having faln into the sin of fornication, made publick confession of her sin, and having bene examined renewd her covenant and forgiven by the church and had her child baptized.

Sept. 1 Mrs. Mercy Maston wife of Mr. Nathanel Maston having bene examined Renewed her covenant and had her child baptized.

Octob. 17 Hana wife of Isaack Follet having bene examined and propounded enterd into covenant with God came under the watch of the church and was baptized she and her child.

the same day Ezechiel Goldthwait having bene examined renewed his covenant and had his 3 Children Baptized.

Jan. 30 John Rogers, son of Jeremiah Rogers, was joynd to the church and baptized, he having bene before propounded, and his confession of his faith read.

Feb. 6 Mr. Timothy Lindol and Mrs. Abigail Lindol, and Hanna daughter of our brother John Foster, all being children of this church after having stood propounded one week and having bene examined and approved by the Elders were received to full communion with consent of the brethren.

1704

April 2 Mr. Nathanael Higginson, Elizabeth daughter of Brother Thomas King and Abigail daughter of Brother John Waters, having bene examind before the Elders Renewd their covenant with God and the church. Mr. N. Higginson had his child Baptized.

May 7 Mary the wife of Adoniram Collins having bene examined renewed her Covenant and her child Baptized.

July 2 James Kettle and his wife were received to full communion with the church with the churches consent, having before consented to examination by the Teacher and having bene propounded one week and nothing objected and now renewed their Covenant with God and the church.

- August 13 Bethia wife of Isaack Fits having bene examined¹ renewd the covenant personally with God and the church.
- August 6 Sarah Baxter having bene examind and propounded and nothing objected, enterd into covenant with God and the church, and was baptized.
- Sept. 3 The widow Elizabeth Verry having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected renewed her covenant with God and the church and was received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.
- 10 Mr. Nathaneel Marston, Bethia the wife of Isaack Fits and Elizabeth the wife of Simon Jeofferys Renewed their Covenant with God and the church and at the same time Mr. Marston had a child baptized and also Elizabeth Jeoffery had her child baptized. They had bene examined before they renewed covenant.
- Octob. 1 Mrs. Marston wife of Deacon Marston and Lydia Gale, were received to full communion with consent of the Brethren having bene examind and propounded they renewed their covenant with God in the church.
- The same day Elizabeth Verry and Jonathan Very children of our Sister Elizabeth Very enterd into covenant and were baptized, they had been examined and propounded.
- 15 Nathaneel Waters and his wife Elizabeth both children of this Church having bene examined renewed their covenant with God and the Church and had 2 children Baptized.
- 22 Sarah Cooper having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected enterd into covenant with God and the church and was baptized.
- Novemb. 12 Dorcas Maybee having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected enterd into covenant with God and the church and was baptized.

¹This entry has been struck out in the manuscript but Jonathan, their child, was baptized on August 13, 1704. See also below under September 10, 1704.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 197

- Dec. 3 Mr. George Corwin having bene approved by the Elders and propounded and nothing objected against him, renewed his covenant with God and the church and was received to full communion with consent of the Church.
- Febr. 18 Jacob Willard personally renewed the Covenant with God and the church and had his child baptized.

1705

- April 1 Richard Prince and Mary his wife and John Mash¹ and Elizabeth West having bene propounded and examined renewed their covenant with God and the church and with the consent of the brethren were received to full communion with the church.
- May 6 Mary the wife of Brother Tomkins and Christian the wife of Captain Abbot having bene propounded and examind renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with the church with the consent of the brethren and Judith the wife of Henry West was recommended to this church from the church at Newbury and entred into covenant with us and was received to membership and full communion.

[120]

- August 5 Doctor Wheeler² being a child of the church at Concord, being examined have owned the covenant here and had his child baptized.
- Sept. 30 Michel Bacon a child of this church having bene examined renewed his covenant and had his child Baptizd.
- Octob. 7 Mr. Francis Ellis and Jemima the wife of Benjamin Verry having bene examined and propounded, with the consent of the Brethren were received to full communion, renewing the covenant with God and

¹I.e., Marsh.

²“Dr. Joseph Wheeler came to Salem from Ipswich in 1704 and died the next year. He was ‘a sober, good, conditioned man and well beloved’”. Perley III, 370.

the church and Experience Norton being recommended to us from the North Church at Boston was received.

- Jan. 13 Henry West and Sarah and Rachel Lindal al 3 children of this church renewed their covenant personally with God and the church, and Henry West had his children baptized.
- Feb. 24 Abraham Pierce¹ having bene propounded and his relation read with the consent of the Brethren was joyned to the church himselfe entering into Covenant with God and the church.

1706

- April 7 Mr. Nathaneel Lindal having bene examined and propounded renewed his covenant with God and the church and was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.
- 14 Mrs. Rebecka Atwater and Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish renewed their Covenant personally with God and the church.
- 18 A Publick Fast.
- May 19 Mary Elizabeth and Hanna children of Brother Goldthwait having bene examined personally renewed their covenant with God and the Church. Martha and Mary Hooper having bene propounded and examined enterd into covenant and were baptized.
- 28 was a contribution for the people of Saint Christophers that were insulted by the enemy a Brief being granted by the Governor and Council for that end.²

¹Abraham Pearse was in church communion as early as March 11, 1686/7 when he was married by Rev. John Bailey (Balye) in Boston to Isabel Witherspoon. "10th of August 1690, one child (viz) of Abraham Pearse (he and his wife Isabell came over with me out of Ireland. I married them in Boston, he was in church communion) called Samuell. They live at Salem." *Watertown Records*, III, 207.

²April 12, 1706 Ordered that His Excellency the Governor, and the Council be desired to Issue forth Briefs to

the same day John Giles and Susannah Marsh were propounded in order to full communion and Charles King and Susanna Packer were propounded in order to Baptizm. At the above mentiond contribution was gathered twenty nine pounds three shillings at 8 shillings the ounce which summe was sent by Mr. Josiah Wolcot and by him deliverd to Captain Andrew Belcher for the end and use it was collected as Appears by a receipt under Captain Andrew Belchers hand bearing date May 27, 1706.

Mr. Benjamin Brown afterward gave upon the Brief for relieving the Island of Saint Christophers the Summe of twelve pounds at 8 shilling per ounce silver which was sent by Major Stephen Sewal and by him delivered to Captain Andrew Belcher for the end and use it was collected as appears by a receipt under Captain Andrew Belchers hand, bearing date June 5. 1706.

June 2 John Giles, and Susanna Mash having bene before propounded and examined by the Elders were received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren, they renewing the covenant with God and the church personally; And the same day Margeret the wife of Walter Palfry was propounded in order to joyning with the church.

9 Charles King and Susanna Packer having bene examined and propounded a fortnight Entered into covenant with God, and came under the ministerial guidance and oversight of the Elders and the watch of the church and were baptized.

16 Rebecka Tomkins having bene examined personally renewed her covenant with God and the church.

July 7th Margaret Tomkins having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against her was re-

the Several Towns and Precincts of this Province, exciting them to express their Charity by free Contribution for the Relief of the Distressed Inhabitants of the Island of Saint Christophers. Mass. Acts and Resolves, VIII, 158, 565-567. Hutchinson, History of Mass. Bay, II, 121 note.

- ceived to full communion with the consent of the church, she renewing her covenant with God and the church.
- 14 Daniel Lambert a child of his church having bene examined personally owned the covenant with God and the church.
- 28 Mr. Francis Willoughby having bene examined personally own [*ed*] and renewed the covenant and had his child baptizd.
- 4 August Elizabeth Tomkins having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against her was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren, she renewing her covenant with God and the church.
- September 1 Rachel Pomery having bene examined and propounded, being a child of this church was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren, she having renewed her covenant with God and the church. The same day John Jacobs enterd into covenant and was baptized having been examind and propounded and nothing objected against him.
- 15 Mary Tarrin¹ having bene propounded and examined and nothing objected against her enterd into covenant and was baptized.
- 22 Mrs. Margaret Palfry having bene examined and a declaration of her faith publickly read was joyned to the church with the consent of the brethren and was baptized, and 2 of her children the same day.
The same day Abigail the wife of John Paine renewed her covenant and had her child baptized.
- October 27 William King having bene examined renewed the Covenant with God, and his wife Hanna having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected enterd into covenant and was baptized.
- November 3 John Woodwell having bene examined and privately manifested with many tears his repentance of the sins of company keeping and drinking and consenting to

¹Or *Tarzin*.

them []¹ declaring his confessing and bewailing those sins renewed his covenant and had his child baptized.

The same day Margaret Palfry Junior and Anstice Palfrey having bene propounded and examined and nothing objected entered into covenant with God and were baptized.

17 Daniel Foster having bene examined and propounded renewed the covenant with God and the church and then received to full communion with the consent of the brethren his wife Hanna having also bene examined and the confession of her faith publickly read, entered into covenant with God and the church and was baptized and joyned to the church, the brethren consenting.

Feb. 22 Mrs. Susanna Maston propounded in order to full communion with the church.

[121]

1707

March 2 Mrs. Susanna Maston was received to full communion with the church, with the consent of the Brethren.

23 Hannah the widow of Robert Herbert, having bene examined personally owned the covenant with God and the church.

30 Daniel Lambert and Bethia the wife of Brother John Mascal Junior was propounded in order to full communion with the church.

April 6 Daniel Lambert and Bethia the wife of Brother John Maskol Junior were both received to full communion with the church with the Brethrens consent.

16 was a day of humiliation observed according to order of Authority.

20 James Hooper propounded in order to Baptizm.

27 Mrs. Margrit Sewal Junior propounded in order to full communion.

¹Illegible word, perhaps *Teacher*.

- May 4 Mrs. Margrit Sewal Junior having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected Renewed her covenant with God and the church and was received to full communion with the church with the consent of the brethren.
- The same day James Hooper having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected entered into covenant and was baptized.
- 18 Elizabeth Pomery having bene examined, as a child of the church renewed her covenant with God and the church.
- June 1 [*Mary*]¹ the wife of John Proctor had letters of dismissal from the Church at Chebacco, and entered into covenant with God, and the church here and was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.
- 15 Humphry French was propounded in order to Baptism.
- 29 Humphry French after a pœnitent confession for the sin of excessive drinking, and company Keeping, which was publickly read, together with the profession of his faith, he entered into covenant, and was baptized.
- The same day Mrs Mercy Swinnerton was propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- July 6 Mrs. Mercy Swinnerton having bene examined and propounded, and nothing objected against her, Renewed her covenant with God, and this church and was received to full communion with the church the brethren consenting.
- Sept. 28 Samuel Philips Junior and the wife of Mr. Nathaneel Higginson were propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- Octob. 5 Samuel Philips Junior, and the wife of Mr. Nathaneel Higginson having been examined and propounded Renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with consent of the Brethren.

¹Cf. Perley II, 23.

William Herbert having bene examined renewed the covenant.

Isaack Fits obtained a letter of dismission from this church to the church at Ipswitch.

1708

- March 7th Sarah Maskal daughter of Brother John Maskal Junior having bene examined and propounded as other children of the church and nothing objected Renewed her covenant with the church and was Received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.
- April 15 Was observed as a day of Publick prayer with fasting as was appointed by the Governor and Councill.
- 25 Mrs. Rachel Lindol and Mary Eager were propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- May 2 Mrs. Rachel Lindol and Mary Eager were received to full communion as other children of the church, with the consent of the church.
- 30 Anne Gyles wife of John Gyles was propounded in order to full communion.
- June 6 Anne Gyles was received to full communion as others with the consent of the church.
- June 27 Hanna Hirbert was propounded in order to full communion.
- July 4 Hanna Herbert¹ was received to full communion as others with consent of the church.
- 15 was observed a publick fast ordered by authority.
- August 1 Mary and Hanna Goldthwait having bene propounded and nothing objected and examined renewed the covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with the consent of the church.
- 22 Abigail wife of Thomas Massy having bene propounded examined entered into covenant and being baptized.
- Sept. 19 Mary wife of Christopher Battin having bene examined acknowledged her covenant with God and the church and had her child baptized.

¹Scribe wrote *Hirbert* and *Herbert* interchangeably.

Rebecka wife of Ebenezer Glover having bene propounded and examined entered into Covenant with God and the church and were baptized she and her child.

Octob. 3 William King and Hanna his wife having bene propounded and examined and nothing objected renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with the consent of the brethren of the church.

Christopher Bavage and Lydia his wife were examined and ownd the Covenant and had their child Baptized.

November 7 Priscilla Mash and John Mash were dismissed to the church at Menden with the consent of the Brethren and also Susanna Mash soon after.

Elizabeth Kellum daughter of John Kellum was examined propounded and Entered into covenant and was Baptized.

[122]

November 21 Elizabeth wife of William Frost having bene examined owned the covenant and had her child baptized. *Also Judith the wife of Cockreel Reeves, owned the Covenant here.*¹

Jan. 2 Stephen Chapman examined and owned the covenant and had his child Baptized. Same day Martha Willard having bene propounded and examined ownd the covenant and with the consent of the brethren was received to full communion.

Feb. 27 Mr. Francis Willoughby and Captain John Gardners wife Elizabeth were propounded in order to full communion.

1709

March 6 Mr. Francis Willoughby and Mrs. *Elizabeth*² Gardner wife of Captain John Gardner having bene propounded and examined, renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion.

¹Added in later hand.

²Inserted over *Bethia*.

- 27 Mrs. Mary Willoughby having bene examind personally owned the covenant with God and the church.
- April 3 A meeting of the brethren of the church was appointed to be at our Teachers house at Two of the clock in the afternoon to consider of something of great importance that the Teacher had to propose to them, the meeting to be on the day following being the 4th day of this instant month.
- 4 Accordingly the brethren met at the time and place appointed, and the Teacher declared to them his inability to carry on the whole worke of the Ministry here himselfe alone and that he dare not in conscience undertake the charge of so many souls, for he found by experience he was not able to do it, Now in his declining age, and infirmity dayly growing upon him, and insisted upon it that when he was first called and ordained to be a Minister in Salem it was to be an Assistant to the Reverend Mr. Higginson now with the Lord, and therefore he did not intend neither was it desired or required of him that he should do the whole work himselfe alone, and that now he was Twenty six years older¹ than he was then, and not able to do now, what he could do then, moreover he declared that although the far greater part of the work had bene carried on by him, during the very old age, and infirm state of said Mr. Higginson yet he had not borne it so long without asking helpe had it not beene that the Town had bene in a low state, by reason of the wars and losses that they sustaind at sea, and so were unable to maintain three ministers and such was the state of Mr. Higginson and his wife by reason of continual sickness, and infirmity, that he needed his full maintenance as much or more then when he was able to carry on his work, and consequently no help could be had in a standing way, without maintaining these ministers, which he thought the Town would not consent to and that they could not have well performed it, if they had promised it. But the case did not stand as before seeing Mr. Higginson was departed this life

¹Mr. Noyes was in his sixty-second year.

and needed not. And therefore the charge would not be increased, but rather lessened to what it was before although another should be chosen to assist in the work of the ministry according as the brethren desired. Whereupon the brethren of the church being desired to speak freely their minds relating to another minister, did generally declare they thought the declaration and also the motion for another to assist in the ministry was but reason [*able*] and that they were convinct the teacher wanted help that such a great congregation needed two ministers. And the Brethren of the church then consented and agreed that a day of prayer with fasting should be set apart to seek the favor of God and his direction and blessing in order to the obtaining another minister. And that the day should be observed in publick in the meeting house, and that the whole Assembly should be informed of it, and be desired and invited to joyn with us in the worship of God on that day the occasion of it being of equal importance to them with the church, and the pitching upon the day for prayer and fasting was left to the Teacher that he might discourse with the Elders in the neighbourhood and might have some helpe in the carrying on the work of the day and the meeting ended saving that as we begun the meeting with prayer so likewise it was ended with prayer, and thanksgiving to God that he had given us a peaceable and successful meeting. The teacher having spoke with the Elders, pitcht upon the 20th day of April being our lecture day to be the day of prayer, and on the Sabbath foregoing that lecture day Notified the Assembly of what he had declared to and desired of the church and did also then make the same declaration to the whole Assembly. and desired them also to consent that another Minister should be called to assist in the work of the Ministry and declared to them how the church and himselfe did most earnestly desire that all the Assembly would attend the publick worship on that day and joyn with us in observing the said day for the forementioned ends.

April 20 The church and the Assembly Generally appeared at the meeting house and religiously observed the day. The Reverend Mr. Green¹ preached on part of the day and the Reverend Mr. Blower² prayed before his sermon. And in the Afternoon the Reverend Mr. Gerrish³ prayed before sermon and Teacher preached.

May 1 Mr. Joshua Pitman having been examined personally owned the Covenant.

The same day After the Sacrament it was agreed that on the ninth of May there should be a meeting of the brethren of the church at the Teachers house to consider what was proper to be done next in order to the choosing and calling another minister, and to procede to nominating and choosing one in order to settlement in case the church so agreed.

- 9 Accordingly on the Ninth of May 1709, the Brethren of the church generally met at the Teachers house, and after prayer to God for direction the matter for which the meeting was appointed came into consideration and after a friendly agitation concerning the method of nominating and chusing one to assist in the ministry as abovesaid the several votes following passed.

[123]

1. It was proposed whether the church should procede any further as to Nominating and chusing a minister as abovesaid at this time or no?

And by a General vote, by holding up the hand it was agreed in the affirmative.

¹Joseph Green (1675-1715), minister, Danvers, 1697-1715.

²Thomas Blowers (1677-1729), see p. 186n., above.

³Joseph Gerrish (1650-1719/20), minister, Wenham, 1673-1720.

2. It was proposed whether Mr. George Corwin should be the first in Nomination in order to the Chusing and calling of a Minister to Assist in the Ministry as abovesaid or no? Which was also voted and generally agreed in the affirmative. This vote was also by lifting up the hand.
3. It was proposed whether the Brethren of the Church do chuse and call M^r George Corwin to be the Minister to assist in the Ministry as above said in order to settlement as abovesaid or no?

And farther, in case the said Mr. George Corwin be chosen and called as abovesaid, whether it should be proposed to the inhabitants that come to our meeting in Salem, in order to their joyning with us in the abovesaid chusing and calling the said Mr. George Corwin in order to Settlement ? or no ?

Both which proposals were voted, and generally agreed to by holding up the hand, in the affirmative. These votes being passed as above, the meeting was ended with prayer and thanksgiving to God for the good agreement.

May 22 Prudence Witheridg, daughter of Mary Proctor the wife of Benjamin Proctor was propounded in order to Baptizm.

29 Robert Pease was propounded in order to full communion with the church.

June 5 Robert Pease ownd the covenant and was received to full communion the Brethren of the church consenting.

The same day Prudence Witheridg entered into covenant and was baptized — Mr. John Rogers obtained letters of dismissal from us to the church of Christ at Boxford.

Augst 21 William Herbert having bene examined renewed his covenant with God and the church and had his child baptized.

Sept. 18 John Rogers Junior and Dorothy his wife having bene examined personally renewed their covenant with God and the church and had their child baptized.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 209

- Decemb Sarah of William Rogers at age having bene examined and propounded Enterd into covenant and was baptized.
John Webb having bene examined ownd the Covenant with us and had his child baptized.
- Feb. 26 Thomas Field having bene examined renewed his covenant with God and the Church and had his child baptized.
- March On sacrament day Mr. James Ruck having bene propounded and examined Renewed his Covenant with God and the church and was received to full Communion with consent of the church.

1710

- April 2 Mary Brown widow of William Brown and Elizabeth Collier daughter of John Collier deceased, were both propounded in order to Baptizm.
- 9 Jeremiah Burrows having bene examined renewed his covenant with God and the Church.
- 16 Mary Brown widow of William Brown deceasd having bene examined and nothing objected against her enterd into covenant and was baptized herself and 4 children.
Elizabeth Collier daughter of John Collier deceased having bene guilty of the sin of fornication had a paper read publickly professing her faith and repentance and confession of her sin enterd into covenant and had her child Baptized.
- 23 Daniel Abbot propounded in order to Baptizm. Mary Collins widow of James Collins, upon her pœnitent confession for the sin of fornication before marriage was reconcild to the church and upon her renewing her covenant had liberty of having her child Baptized.
- 30 Mrs. Vial propounded in order to full communion with the church, and Elizabeth Hunlock propounded in order to Baptizm.
- May 7th Mrs. Vial having bene propounded and examined Renewed her covenant with God and the Church and

was received to full communion with the church, the brethren of the church consenting.

- 14 Daniel Abbot and Elizabeth Hunlock having bene both propounded and examined Entered into Covenant with God and the church and were both baptized.

Thomas Foot and Sarah Foot having bene examined both he and his wife renewed their covenant with God and the church and had their child baptized.

- June 4th Richard Waters having bene propounded one week and examined was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren he renewing the Covenant.

The same day Elizabeth wife of Jeremiah Neal Junior after examination Renewed the Covenant.

- August 6 Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish wife of Mr. John Gerrish ownd the covenant.

- August 13 Mr. Josiah Willard and his wife ownd the covenant. The widow Chievers relict of Peter Chievers ownd the covenant and had her children baptizd.

- Sept. 3 Mr. Josiah Willard having bene propounded and examined was received to full communion with the consent of the church.

- November 5 Elizabeth Mash daughter of Susanna Mash having bene propounded and examined renewed her covenant with God and the church and was took into full communion with the church with the consent of the brethren.

The same day Mrs. Mercy Hirst was propounded in order to joyn to the church — Abigail Allin and

- 12 Anna Allin mother of Abigail Allin having bene propounded 3 weeks entered into covenant with God and the church and were Baptized having bene examined.

[124]

- November 19 Mr. Timoth Orne and Mrs. Hannah Cabot ownd the covenant having bene before examined and they had their children Baptized the same day. Mary Pinson was propounded in order to Baptizm.

- 26 Mrs. Mary Hirst wife of William Hirst Esquire having bene propounded 3 weeks before and nothing objected, had a paper read of her profession and confession of faith, and was joynd to the church with the consent of the Brethren.
- Dec. 3 Mary Pinson having bene examined propounded and nothing objected entered into covenant and was baptized.
- Jan. 28 Mrs. Capman¹ having bene examined personally owned the Covenant.
The same day, Mercy daughter of Mr. Jonathan Pickerin, Margret and Elizabeth daughters of Nathaniel Silsby propounded in order to baptizm.
- Feb. 11 Mercy of Jonathan Pickerin, Margret and Elizabeth of Nathaniel Silsby entered into covenant and were baptized.
- Feb. 11 Daniel of Jeremiah Rogers was propounded to joyn with the church.
Daniel Rogers was joynd to the church having bene propounded and examined one fortnight before, he was received with the consent of the Brethren and was baptized; the same day Nathaneel Ausgood and Hanna his wife personally ownd the covenant having bene examined before.

1711

- March 4 Thomas Palphry was propounded in order to Baptizm.
- 18 Thomas Palphry having bene propounded entered into covenant and was baptized.
- April 1 Seeth Hardy having bene examined and propounded ownd the covenant and was received to full communion with the church the brethren consenting.
- 15 John Phippen owned the covenant and had his child Baptized.
- 29 Martha wife of Samuel Pope and her son Joseph Winston he being about 15 years of age were propounded in order to Baptizm and on May 13 they owned the covenant and were Baptized.

¹I.e., *Chapman*(?).

May 6 Daniel Epes Esquire, Samuel Brown Esquire and Deacon Maston were chosen by the church after Sacrament was done, to go with our Teacher to the Reverend Mr. George Corwin to signify to him the churches choosing and calling him to Assist our teacher, in the work of the ministry in order to settlement with us and to pray his acceptance, and that in conjunction with those worthy Gentlemen John Higginson Esquire William Hirst Esquire and Josiah Woolcot Esquire who were chosen and desired to joyn with the messengers of the church in waiting on the Reverend Mr. George Corwin to signify this Parishes concurring with the churches vote passed on May 9th 1709, concerning the choosing and calling Mr. George Corwin to assist in the work of the Ministry here, on the proposal voted at the Parish meeting cald for that end on May 3d. 1711. For it must be noted that notwithstanding the parish had voted a non concurrence upon the 2d January 1709 with the churches choice, yet there was liberty according to law, for the church to appeal to a council of churches, which liberty was also desired by the Teacher in the churches behalfe in case they should desire it, but while the matter hung in suspence and was under deliberation whether it was best for the church to Appeal to a council or no, Seing though there was a prospect of the churches obtaining their choice that way, yet it was doubted whether it would consist with the peace of the place, and comfort of Mr. Corwin, to be brought in by a council; after the major part of the parish had voted a non concurrence with the church; it so came to pass that many of the inhabitants living without the Town bridge obtaind of the Generall Court a district to be a parish by themselves, which occasioned a letter to be sent by many of the church and parish to the Teacher desiring that the matter relating to the concurence of the parish with the churches vote concerning the chosing and calling of Mr. George Corwin to Assist in the ministry here in order to Settlement might be

brought on again, a copy of which letter is here inserted.

To the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes Preacher of the church of Christ of Salem.

Sir, It is the request and desire of several of the members of the church and principal inhabitants of your Parish who are ready and willing to Encourage and afford you help and Assistance in the great work of the ministry.

Whereas, we are not insensible of your often indisposition of body and your growing onto years, and the great charge you have upon you, that calls for helpe and assistance, which you have often manifested your desire for, and in order to which the church did sometime the last year proceed to the choice of an Assistant to you in the work of the ministry, and did then make choice of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin for that end, which afterward being brought to the Parish where a Negative was passed: which we judge was chiefly occasioned by the design of many for a new Precinct, which they having obtained from the General court,¹ we now judge it proper again to bring forward the churches vote, to the Parish, not doubting but that now, you may have help, and a vote of the Parish may be easily obtaind confirming the churches vote for Mr. George Corwin if he will accept of a maintenance as may be collected on the Lords days by a sure contribution, which we doubt not but will be an Handsome and suitable support to him and we shall willingly and readily do and contribute what is proper on our parts and Encourage others of the church and Parish to do the like for his maintenances; wherefore we pray that you will promote the same as God in his wisdom shall direct you. And that you may long continue as a rich blessing to this church and Parish is the hearty desire and prayer of the subscribers are 109.²
 [125]
 Salem April 1711.

¹See pp. 226-228, below.

²The sentence is awkward but meaning is clear.

The Teacher having received this letter thought it the most probable and hopeful way for to obtain peace in Salem, and to bring about good agreement between the church and the Parish, and for both to have another minister and himself assistance in the worke of the ministry, which he was not able to carry on alone, did therefore desire of the Selectmen that a meeting of the Parish might be appointed by them, that under the present circumstances it might be seen whether the Parish now would vote a concurrence with the vote of the church for the choosing and calling the Reverend Mr. George Curwin to assist in the worke of the ministry here. And the Selectmen readily granted the Teachers desire and appointed and legally warned a meeting of the Parish for the end abovesaid to be on the 3d of May 1711. At which meeting the following votes passed, which were taken out of the Town Records.

Salem SS. At a meeting of the Freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town who live within the Town Bridge and to the southward of the high road, of the high Road to Lynn as also those on Royal side duely qualified according to law, being duely warned assembled at the usual place May 3d 1711.

Proposed, whereas the Church did make choice of Mr. George Corwin for an assistant to the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes in the worke of the ministry here, and a consent and concurrence of the inhabitants of this Parish being desired at this time, voted that this Parish doth concurre with the church, and do also make choice of the said Mr. George Corwin for the end aforesaid who shall have for his support what shall be Raised by a free contribution which shall be asked on the Lords days.

A true cotype taken out of Salem Town Records.

May 8th, 1711. Attest Walter Price Town Clerk

Voted that Colonel John Higginson Esquire William Hurst Esquire and Josiah Wolcot Esquire are chosen to go to the Reverend Mr. George Corwin in con-

junction with those the church shall choose to acquaint him with the Towns vote and know whether he accepts of the same.

Vera Copia taken out of Salem Town Records May 8, 1711. Attest. Walter Price Town Clerk

On May the 8th the Teacher with the messengers of the church and also of the Parish waited on the Reverend Mr. George Corwin and showed to him the votes of the church and of the Parish Relating to his being chosen and called to Assist in the work of a ministry here in order to Settlement and prayed his acceptance of being chosen and called as above, both by the church and Parish and of the proposal made for his maintenance by a voluntary contribution on the Lords days so we left our proposals and desires with him for his consideration and Answers. And the Reverend Mr. George Corwin gave his Answer in writing, on May 11, 1711 which is as followeth:

To the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes with the Honourable Gentlemen of the Church and Parish chosen to treat with me, to be communicated to the first church and Parish in Salem.

I received your proposals in order to a settlement in the work of the ministry among you, and am very sensible of your respect therein shown to me, which proposals having seriously considered, I do accept thereof, intending by the grace and help of God to assist in the work of the ministry so long as you shall afford a comfortable subsistence. In the meantime desiring your prayers that I may be made an able minister of the New Testament and may finish my ministry with joy. That you may be Edified and the work of God succeeded among you by the labours of him who is willing to serve you in the Gospel of Christ.

Salem May 11th, 1711.

George Corwin.

May 13 Mr. Corwins Answer was communicated to the church and the whole Assembly on the next Lords day after the 2nd meeting was done, and so he began his Ministry with us, and the first contribution for him was on May 20, 1711. Lord give us Peace and the blessings of the Gospel of peace. Amen.

[126]

June 3 Thomas Palphry having bene propounded for full communion and examined renewed the covenant and was received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.

July 1st Silence Rogers the wife of Daniel Rogers having bene examined and propounded on June 24 Entered into Covenant with us and was received to full communion with the church the brethren consenting.

8 Nathaneel Phippen ownd the covenant and had his child baptized.

29 was a Publick Fast appointed by the Governor, to begge the blessing of God on the expedition to Canada and 9 August was also a general publick fast on the same occasion.

Sept. 16 Elizabeth wife of Malachi Foot having bene examined owned the covenant.

Oct. 7 Samuel Ropes having bene examined personally owned covenant and Lydia his wife having bene examined and stood propounded 2 weeks enterd into covenant and was Baptized.

the Reverend Mr. Samuel Phillips was dismissed from this church to joyn in church Fellowship with the church in the south part of Andover.¹

The comminicans in the south part of Andover desird the Elders and Messengers of this church to be present with them on October 17, to joyn with the Elders and messengers of other churches to counsel and help them in their Imbodying and becoming a

¹Samuel Phillips (1690/1-1771), Harvard College, 1708; first minister, Andover (South Parish), 1711-1771.

church themselves and the ordaining the Reverend Mr. Samuel Phillips to be their pastor. The Elders not being able to go to the church chose and desired Major Sewal Esquire and the Reverend Mr. George Corwin and Captain Peter Osgood to go as messenger from this church and they did go and the offices of the day were orderly carried on, the church embodied and Mr. Philips ordained their pastor.

- 28 Doctor Thomas Barton and his wife, and Elizabeth Barton, his sister, and Lois wife of Timothy Orn, and Mrs. Hanna White, and Mary, and Abigail Foot were propounded in order to full communion with the church, and having bene examined, and propounded and nothing objected against either of them they all renewed their covenant with God, and the church, and were well received to full communion with the church before the Sacrament with the consent of the Brethren.
- Nov. 4
- 11 Mrs. Mary Bowdige having bene examined owned the covenant and renewd it.
- 25 Deacon Gerrishs wife and the wife of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin were propounded in order to full communion and Thomas and Michael Driver were propounded in order to be baptized.
- 29 Was observed a day of Publick Thanksgiving for the mercys of the year by order of the Government.
- Dec. 2 Mrs. Mehitabel Corwin and Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish having bene examind and propounded and nothing objected were received to full communion with the church before the sacrament with consent of the Brethren.
- 9 Thomas Driver and Michael Driver entered into Covenant with God and the church and were both baptized.
- The same day Mrs. Abigail Holloway was propounded in order to baptizm.
- 23 Mrs. Abigail Holloway having bene examind enterd into Covenant with God and the church and was baptized.

- 30 Anne wife of Benjamin Ropes and Mary daughter of Mr. Samuel Philips were propounded in order to full communion.
- Jan. 6th Anne wife of Benjamin Ropes and Mary Philips having bene examined were received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren, both owning and renewing the covenant with God and the church.
- 20 Margret Prat having bene examined, personally owned the covenant.
- Feb. 10 Hanna Ruck daughter of Thomas Ruck deceased, having bene propounded examined and entered into Covenant was baptized.
- Mary Hunt daughter of Mr. Lewis Hunt having bene examined personally owned the Covenant.
- Hanna wife of John Bacon and Margret King were propounded in order to Baptism.
- 17 Susanna wife of Thomas Laskin propounded in order to Baptism.
- 24 Hanna wife of John Bacon and Margret King having bene examined entered into covenant with God and the church and were both baptized.
- Mrs. Pratt wife of Mr. John Pratt was propounded in order to full communion.
- Mary Lander and Hanna Lander and Isabel Lawrence Mr. Epes his Negro woman were propounded in order to Baptism.
- 1712.
- March 2 Mrs. Pratt, wife of Mr. John Pratt, personally owning the Covenant was with the Consent of the Brethren received to full Communion.
- After the Sacrament, a church meeting was appointed to be at the Teachers house att 2 of the Clock in the afternoon on the 6th of the Month, being Thursday.
- 6 On which day they Accordingly mett to consider of the several following particulars propounded to them by the Teacher. Viz: 1. Whether the Record of the Excommunication of our Sister Nurse (all things considered) may not be Erased and blotted out —
The Result of which Consideration was:

That whereas on July 3rd 1692, it was proposed by the Elders, and consented to by an Unanimous vote of the Church that said Sister Nurse should be Excommunicated, she being convicted of witchcraft by the Court and she was accordingly Excommunicated; Since which the General Court having taken off the Attainder, and the Testimony on which she was convicted being not now so Satisfactory to ourselves, and others as it was generally in that hour of Darkness and Temptation: And we being Solicited by her Son Mr. Samuel Nurse, to Rase and blott out of the Church Records the Sentence of her Excommunication. This Church having the matter propos'd to it by the Teacher and having Seriously considered it, doth consent that the Record of said Sister Nurse's Excommunication be accordingly Rased and blotted out; that it may no longer be a Reproach to her Memory, and an Occasion of grieffe to her Children, Humbly requesting that the mercifull God would pardon. whatsoever Sin, Error or Mistake, was in the Application of that Censure and of that whole affair Through our Mercyfull high priest, Who knoweth how to have Compassion on the Ignorant, and those that are out of the way.

[127]

2. It was proposed whether the Sentence of Excommunication against our Brother Giles Corey (all things considered) may not be Erased, and blotted out. The Result of which was

That whereas on Sepr. 18th, 1692, it was considered by the Church that our Brother Giles Corey stood accused of and Indicted for the Sin of Witchcraft, And that he had obstinately refused to plead, and so threw himself on certain Death.

It was agreed by the vote of the Church that he should be Excommunicated for it; And accordingly he was Excommunicated. Yet the Church having now Testimony in his behalf, that before his Death he did bitterly repent of his obstinate refusal to plead in defence of his Life: Do consent that the sentence of his Excommunication be Erased and blotted out.

3. Something was proposed with relation to the Legacy left to the Church by Benjamin Brown Esquire. The Result whereof was

At a Church meeting at the Teacher's House, in the First Parish in the Town of Salem, March 6, 1711/
12

1712 Whereas Benjamin Brown Esquire Late of Salem, deceased, gave and bequeathed by his Last Will and Testament Fifty Pounds, money to this Church; About the one half thereof to be Improved for purchasing a Silver Baptismal Bason, and the other half thereof to be Improved (the Income thereof) towards the Discharging of the Expence for Provision for the Sacrament on behalf of the poorest members of the said Church who cannot well pay for themselves — And forasmuch as Colonel Samuel Brown, Esquire and Captain Jonathan Brown Executors of the Last Will and Testament of Benjamin Brown Esquire aforementioned deceased have punctually paid in to the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes or Teacher, the afore named Legacy —

The Baptismal
Bason, given the
Church by Benjamin
Brown
Esquire
Deceased

Viz: a Silver Bason of Twenty five pounds Value; And Twenty five pounds more in Silver Money at Eight Shillings per Oz: which is since put out to Interest for the Church's use as abovesaid. Which Legacy the Church gratefully acknowlegeth to have received, according to the religious and Generous gift, and bequest of the Testator; And so therefore desire our said Teacher to give to the said Executors full discharge for the same; if what is already given may not be thought sufficient.

Voted on the Affirmative Deo predicto, Nemine contradicente.

It was further Voted that the Bason above mentioned be left in the Custody, and Keeping of the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes for the Church's use as Occasion may offer. And that the Twenty five pounds already put out on Interest; the Bond of which being left in the said Mr. Noyes hands and also when the principle may be payed in, that our said Teacher, with the

Deacons for the time being, be Impowered to put out the same again, unto a Sufficient person or persons as in their discretion, they shall think meet, The Interest thereof always to be Improved for the help of poor Members as Abovesaid. Voted in the Affirmative Deo predicto, Nemine Contradicente.

Moreover Whereas the Abovenamed Colonel Samuel Brown Esquire, and Captain Jonathan Brown, have Lately given to the Church, Two large pewter flagons, which were formerly lent to the Church by the Uncle the aforenamed Benjamin Brown Esquire, wherefore the Church requests the Teacher to give Thanks and Suitable Acknowlegments to them for the same —

Unanimously Voted at the same Meeting.

March 9th Susanna wife of Thomas Laskin, and Mary Lander, and Hanna Lander, and Isabel Laurence, Mr. Epes his Negro woman, having bene examined and propounded, and nothing objected against either of them, they entered into covenant with God, and the church and were all of them Baptized.

23 Rebecka wife of Alexander Mackmalion and Sarah Grover having bene examined and propounded owned the Covenant with God and the church.

April 6 Elizabeth of Jonathan Felt and Elizabeth daughter of Richard King having bene examined and propounded Entered into Covenant with God and the Church and were Baptized.

The same day Nathaneel Ausgood and his wife Hanna, Dorithee wife of John Rogers Junior, Rebecka wife of Nathanael Massy and Elizabeth Beal having bene all examined and propounded renewed their covenant with God and the Church and were received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren.

13 Sarah Archer wife or widow of Stephen Archer and their daughter Sarah having bene both examined and propounded and nothing objected Entered into Covenant and were baptized.

- May 5 Mrs. Abigail Brown wife of Colonel Samuel Brown and Mrs. Mary Linde wife of Mr. Benjamin Linds and Mrs. Sarah Hardy wife of Mr. Joseph Hardy and Elizabeth Hunlock having been propounded and examined and nothing objected against them were received to full communion with the church, they entering into Covenant, the brethren consenting.
- 25 Sarah Searle having been examined and propounded in order to baptism and nothing objected entered into covenant and were baptized and her two children.
- [128] Abigail wife of John Gray having been Examined and propounded in order to Baptizm and nothing objected Entered into covenant and was baptized and Her child.
- Hanna Neal having been examined and propounded in order to baptism and nothing objected Entered into Covenant and was baptized. Hanna Bootman, Mary Gale, Mary Orn of Joseph Orn, Elizabeth, Abigail and Mary daughters of Thomas Flint, having been examined personally owned the covenant.
- June 1 Mrs. Elizabeth Hirst and the widow of Thomas Mascal deceased and Sarah Grover having been examined and propounded in order to full communion with the church owned the covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with the church with the consent of the brethren.
- 22 Sarah Farr having bene examined propounded and nothing objected Entered into covenant and was baptized.
- August 2 Elizabeth Neal wife of John Neal having bene examined and propounded Entered into Covenant and was baptized, and her child.
- 17 Ephraim Skery having bene examined owned the covenant and had his Child Baptized.
- Sept. 21 John Rogers was propounded in order to joyn to the church.
- 28 Colonel Higginson was propounded in order to full communion with the church.

Oct. 5 Colonel Higginson was received to full communion upon his renewing the covenant with God and the church, the brethren consenting.

Elizabeth Edwards Junior a child of the church having been guilty of attempting to murder herself by taking pounded glass about an spoonful and an half, it pleased God by means used to spare her life, though she was brought nigh to death, and lived in horrible pain and Horror of conscience, a considerable time: but being recovered pretty well sought reconciliation with the church and made a poenitent confession of her Sin and renewed her covenant with God and the church and the church forgave her, it was about a month since that she made this confession.

12 John Rogers having been propounded and nothing objected against his declaration and confession was read and he was received to full communion by entering into covenant with God and the church the brethren consenting.

19 Hanna Stacy daughter of Samuel Stacy was propounded in order to Baptizm.

26 The Widow Elkins and her daughter Lydia Cheever were propounded in order to full communion with the church.

Nov. 2 The widow Elkins and her daughter Lydia Cheevers renewed their covenant with God and the Church and were received to full communion the brethren consenting; the same day Mrs. Hanna Philips wife of the Reverend Mr. Samuel Philips of Andover was dismissed to the church in the South district of Andover.

9 Hanna Stacy having been examined and nothing objected entered into Covenant and was baptized. The same day Mary Elkins having bene examined entered into covenant with her personal consent, with God and the church.

Jan. 4 George Deland and Mrs. Ruth Hathorn having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected were after renewing the covenant received to full communion with the consent of the brethren, and his child baptized.

The same day Mrs. Elizabeth Higginson daughter of Mr. John Higginson Second having bene examined renewed her covenant with God and the church.

Feb. 1 Jonathan Eager having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected, renewed his Covenant with God and the church and was received to full communion the brethren consenting.

8 Elizabeth Ingols late of Lyn now resident in Salem, desired to be baptized and having bene guilty of fornication, made a very poenitent confession of her sin before all the congregation, showing how God had convinced of her horrible sin against the 7th Commandment and what contrition she had undergone for her sin and what hope she had received that God would pardon for Christs sake, was baptized.

1713

March 29 Susanna Daniel propounded in order to full communion.

Susanna Daniel having nothing objected against her renewed her covenant with God and the church and

April 5 was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.

The same day James Mackmillion who in the time of his Absence was baptized and received to full communion in one of the dissenting churches of which Mr. Dolittle was of late pastor now Mr. Daniel Wilcolk¹ Enterd into covenant with God and the church here and was received into full communion with the consent of the brethren.

26 Mary Lansford wife of Elias Lansford, formerly Mary Eagar, having bene Guilty of the sin of fornication, being with child by him who is now her husband, before she was married to him, and for that reason had bene put by the Sacrament, and ad-

¹Daniel Wilcox (?-1733) succeeded Thomas Doolittle (1632?-1707) as minister of a Dissenting Chapel in Mugwell (now Monkswells) Street in London which was first erected in 1672. Cf. *Dictionary of National Biography*, V, 1141 ff.

monisht by the teacher of the church to repent and to bring forth fruit meet for repentance. She presented a very poenitent confession of her sin with the aggravation of it and made earnest supplication to God for forgiveness of her Sin and praying for reconciliation with the church, and promising through the grace of Christ to be more watchful against temptation to such like sins for the future, she was restored to the churches favor and communion again. The church also praying God to forgive her.

May 3 The brethren and Sisters living in the district presented their petition to the church for liberty to become a church of themselves they and their children which petition was read after Sacrament but no consent given to it at that time, but desired for some time of consideration; the copy of the petition is in the next page.

[129]

Salem, April 27, 1713.

To the Reverend Mr. Nicholas Noyes Teacher of the church in Salem and to the church of Christ there —

Honorable Reverend and beloved whereas it hath pleased our gracious God to smile upon our Endeavors for the erecting of an house for the carrying on the Publick worship of God, and settling a minister amongst us, and we being called by divine providence (as we apprehend) to settle a particular church according to the Gospel under the ministry of the Reverend Mr. Benjamin Prescott.

Our Humble request to yourselves is that you will please to dismiss us and our children with your approbation and Blessing to be a church of ourselves, and untill we are so, with the consent and approbation of the Elders and Messengers of the churches that shall assist at the ordination of the Reverend Mr. Prescott to continue members of Salem Church, and as there shall be occasion assist and help us, especially by your prayers unto the God of all grace, that in so great an affair we may be directed and assisted

to procede in all things according to the will of God, into whom be glory in the church by Jesus Christ, through out all ages world without End.

Your unworthy brethren and Sisters living within the bounds of the middle district in Salem.

Hanna King	Hanna Foster
Judah Mackentire	Abigail French
Elizabeth Nurse	Elizabeth Gyles
Sarah Robinson	Elizabeth Goldthwait
Ales Shafflin	Hanna Golthwait
Hanna Small	Debora Goold
Hanna Southwick	Elizabeth King
Mary Tomkins	Samuel Gardiner
Elizabeth Tomkins	Samuel Goldthwait Senior
Elizabeth Verry	Eliezer Giles
Jemima Verry	Abraham Pierce
Sarah Waters	John Foster
Elizabeth Waters	John Felton
Susanna Daniel	David Foster
Martha Adams	Abel Gardiner
Elizabeth Cook	John Gardiner
Sarah Gardiner	Samuel Goldthwait
Elizabeth Gardiner	William King
Isabel Perse	Richard Waters
Hanna Felton	Robert Pease

On May 19th notice was given for a church meeting at the Teachers house on May 22 at 4 in the afternoon to consider of the petition of our brethren and sisters living in the district and give answer to it when and where the church met and agitated that matter, but nothing was agreed upon that meeting but that the Answer to the petition should be further defered and considered of about a month long and that at the meeting then to be. The vacansy in the Deacons office by reason of the death of Mr. Gerrish¹ one of our Deacons should be considerd how it might be supplied.

¹Deacon Benjamin Gerrish had died April 24, 1713, at the age of sixty-one. He was a merchant, clerk of the court and collector of the port.

- May 24 Abel Robinson propounded in order to Baptizm.
- May 31 Elizabeth wife of Mathew Barton and Ruth, relict of William Loader were propounded in order to full communion and Lydia Cook propounded in order to Baptizm.
- June 7th. Elizabeth wife of Mathew Barton and Ruth relict of William Loader having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against either of them, they both renewed their covenant with God and the church and were both received to full communion, with the consent of the brethren.
- 14 Abel Robinson and Lydia Cook having both bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against them they entered into covenant and were both baptized, and Abel Robinson had his child baptized the same day.
- 21 Notice was given for a church meeting at the Teachers house on June 25th at 4 in the afternoon to give answer to the petition of our brethren and sisters in the district, and to nominate one in order to fill up the vacancy in the Deacons office.
- 25 The brethren of the church met at the Teachers house, for the ends above said, and then and there the church agreed that the following Answer should be given to the petition of our brethren and sisters in the District, which petition is before recorded.
- The church having received a petition from our brethren and sisters living in the district wherein they desire a dismissal from us for themselves and their children in order to be a church of themselves. The church giveth in Answer as followeth, That although we can not praise or justify our brethrens proceeding so and so far as they have done in order to be a church of themselves without advising with or using means to obtain the consent of the church they belonged to; yet at the request of our Brethren and Sisters and for peace sake, we permit them and their children to become a church of themselves provided they have the approbation and consent of the Elders and Messengers of some other churches in communion with

us that shall assist at their church Gathering, and ordaining them a pastor. And untill they have so done, they continue members of this church. And so we commit them to the grace of God in Christ Jesus, praying that they may have divine direction and Assistance in the great work they are upon, and that they may become an Holy and orderly and peaceable church, and that the Lord would adde to them of such as are within their own limits many such as shall be saved.

The abovesaid Answer was twice, distinctly read to the Brethren of the church before it was voted, and then consented to by the vote of the church nemine contradicente.¹

At the same meeting Captain Simon Willard was Nominated, to supply the vacancy in the Deacons office, and to secur therein by way probation for some time, provided he qualify himselfe for it, by becoming a member of this church, he having hitherto only had communion with us, by virtue of letters of commendation from the church of Christ in Ipswich.²

[130]

June 28

Mr. James Simons, Mr. Joseph Orn, Hebsibah wife of Samuel Leech, and Abel Robbinson, and his wife Elizabeth were propounded in order to full communion with the church.

July 5th

Mr. James Simons, Mr. Joseph Orn Senior, Hepsiba the wife of Samuel Leech, and Abel Robbinson, and Elizabeth his wife, they having submitted to examina-

¹The Middle Precinct Parish was set off by vote of the General Court on November 10, 1710 and on September 23, 1713 Benjamin Prescott (1687-1777) was settled as the first minister. He resigned in November, 1756. Cf. Perley III, 388-392.

²Deacon Simon Willard (1649-1731) was a weaver and clothier who came to Salem from Ipswich in 1681. He was a brother of the Reverend Samuel Willard (1639/40-1707), minister, Old South Church, Boston, 1676-1707; vice-president, Harvard College, 1701-1707.

tion, and bene propounded and nothing objected against either of them, were as children of this church, and Baptized in it upon their renewing their covenant with God, and the church received to full communion, with the consent of the brethren. The same day also before sacrament Captain Simon Willard and his wife, having hitherto partaken with this church only by virtue of letters of Recommendation from the church at Ipswich now became members of this church by Entering into Covenant with God and this church.

The same day Captain Willard having signified his consent to serve as a Deacon in a way of probation, becoming a member of this church in order to comply with the desire of the church to serve in the Deacons office by way of probation. He entered upon it and served at the Lords Table.

- 12 Kesia wife of Francis Proctor and Elizabeth Pinson were propounded in order to Baptizm.

The same day Charles, Mr. B. Mastons Negro man entered into Covenant with God and came under the Government and watch of the church and was baptized, having bene examined and propounded one month and nothing objected against him.

- 26 Elizabeth Pinson having bene examined and propounded, and nothing objected to against him Entered into Covenant with God and came under the Government and watch of the church and was baptized.

The same day Mrs. Anne Phippen and Elizabeth Verry Junior were propounded in order to full communion.

- August 2 Mrs. Anne Phippen and Elizabeth Verry Junior having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against either of them renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.

- 16 Kezia the wife of Francis Proctor having bene examined and propounded and nothing objected against her Entered into Covenant with God and came

- under the Government and watch of the church and was baptized.
- Octob. 4 Mary Marston daughter of John Marston junior deceased a child of this church after examination and propounding, Renewed her covenant with God, and the church and was received to full communion with the consent of the brethren.
- 11 Mrs. Susanna Sewal, Mrs. Jane Sewal and Mrs. Mehitabel Sewal and Mrs. Margaret Gidny after examination renewed their covenant with God and the church.
- Nov. 9 Mary and Elizabeth Herbert renewed their covenant with God personally after examination.
- Decemb. 6 Mrs. Maston relict of Captain Manasseh Maston after examination and propounding Entered into Covenant with God and the church and was received to Ful communion with the consent of the brethren.
- Janua. 14 a publick fast was observed by order of the Governor and Council occasioned by the fevers and meazles and great scarcity of bread Corn.
- 22 At a church meeting at the Teachers house, Colonel Higginson and Colonell Brown were chosen and desired to reckon with Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish relict of Deacon Benjamin Gerrish and to Compare and Settle accounts with her in behalf of the Church.
- Feb. 7 Mehitabel wife of Ebenezer Felton propounded in order to Baptizm.
Mehitabel Felton after examination and propounding entered into Covenant with God and the church and was baptized, and her child.
The same day Abigail Walk after examination renewed her covenant with God and the church.
- 28 Mrs. Sarah Boudich personally owned the Covenant.
- March 1714.
- March 7 Mrs. Elizabeth Higginson after examination and propounding and nothing objected renewed her covenant personally with God and the church and was received to full communion with the church, the

Brethren consenting. After the Sacrament the church chose and desired Colonel John Higginson, Mr. Daniel Epes and Deacon Willard to go along with the Teacher of the Church to wait upon the Reverend Mr. George Corwin and to signify to him that the Church did choose and call him to the office of the ministry in this church desiring that he might be ordained a pastor of this church as soon as might be with conveniency in the Spring of the year, and to present him with the church votes relating to that matter and pray his Acceptance which they accordingly did the day following. The parish also having before this Time given their concurrence with the votes of the church and also voted what encouragement they would give him for his support in the work of the ministry here, and toward his ordination and desired William Hurst Esquire and Josiah Wolcot Esquire and Captain Walter Price Mr. John Higginson Junior and Captain William Pickerin to wait upon the Reverend Mr. George Corwin to signify to him their concurrence with the church in choosing and calling him to the offer of the ministry and to present him with the votes of the Parish relating to that matter and to pray his acceptance and to joyn with those that should be chosen by the church to present him with the church call and choice of him as above. The church did accordingly desire the before named Gentleman to go with those chosen by the parish and wait upon the Reverend Mr. Corwin to this end and accordingly they did and prayed his acceptance and the []¹ both of the churches choice and call and also of the parishes concurrence and promise a speedy answer.

[131]

At a meeting of the Church of Christ at Salem in the first parrish there, held at the teachers house on January 22th 1713/14 the Deacons having given timely notice to the Bretheren of the church of the Said meeting appointed by the Teacher in Order to

¹Seven words illegible.

Consider and agree and determine what the Church would do relating to the Choosing calling setting and ordaining the Reverend Mr. George Corwin to the worke of the ministry here.

1. the Church did then and there by the voate of lifting up the hand signifie that they did consent agre and determine as followeth viz. that forasmuch as they had had Severall years Experience of the Grace and Giffts and Ministeriale qualifications of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin as well as his Orthodoxy in Doctrine and unblameable conversation, they did choose and call him to the office of the ministry in this Church, desiring that he might be ordained a pastor of this Church, as Sone as might be with conveniency in the Spring of the yeare ensuing provided that they had the concurance of the inhabitants of the parrish with them and that the church and said inhabitants did Setle upon him such a mainetenance as would be Sutable and Sufficient and Should be to his good Satisfaction.
2. the Church did desire the teacher to signifie to the Selectmen the above said voate and to desire of them that they would apoint a parrish metting of the inhabitants of this parrish qualified for voating according to law whether of the Church or of the parrish to desire that they would give their Concurance with the said voat and that they would promote his ordination and settle a sutable Sallery for the Said Reverend Mr. George Corwine, and that they would choose some of the parish to joyne with those that shall be chosen by the Church to make Sutable aplication to said Mr. Corwine for his consent to the Call both of the Church and parrish.

The above written 2 votes were written, and distinctly read, 3 times once, and time given for the considering of the contents of them, and liberty given to every one of the church to object, if they saw cause, and none objecting. The two votes above-said, were put to vote severally, and both were un-animously agreed to, and determined by the lifting

The Records of the First Church in Salem 233

up of the hand, Nemine contradicente, and when the negative was voted not one man lifted up his hand, as witnesseth Nicholas Noyes, Teacher of the Church.

1714.

- March 7 Nathaniel Pike was propounded in order to Baptizm.
21 Nathaniel Pike enterd into Covenant with God and the church and was baptizd.
28 Priscilla Stacy after examination personally ownd the Covenant.

At a Meeting of the Freeholders and other Inhabitants of the Town of Salem, belonging to the First parish in said Town, duely qualifiyed according to Law for Voating, Legally warned, and Assembled at the Usual place.

February 22, 1713/14.

- Voated: Colonel John Higginson Esquire Chosen Moderator.
Voated: That this parish doth concur with the Late Act of the Church, Refering to the farther Calling and Settling the Reverend Mr. George Curwin in the work of the Ministry here and that his Ordination as an officer in said Church be promoted, and brought forward as soon as may be with Convenience.
Voated: That the Inhabitants of this parish do grant unto the said Mr. George Corwin for his Encouragement and maintenance a Salary of Ninety pounds Per Anno in passable Mony, or Bills of Credit of this Province, if he accepts of Ordination, and being Settled as a Minister of the Gospel in this parish — Which Sum of Ninety pounds shall be raised on the Inhabitants, by a rate or Tax, equally laid, and porportioned by the Assessors, annually chosen and appointed by the Parish for making the Ministers rates etc. The same to be paid in Annually to the Town Treasurer for the time being; Or to such person or persons as the Assessors aforesaid shall appoint annually to receive the same; And He or They to pay it in to the said Mr. George Curwin — But if the said Mr. George Curwin desires that the present Voluntary Weekly

Contribution may be continued for one year, or Longer time, and will accept of what shall be so given in full satisfaction for his Salary during the time the Contribution is continued; then the parish doth Consent and Agree to it. And if the Contribution shall fall short of the Yearly Salary granted by the parish as aforesaid; Or any unforeseen Inconveniency occur thereby; Upon timely notice thereof given to the Assessors of the Parish by Some Officer of the Church, that then the aforesaid Contribution shall cease, and the aforesaid Tax granted by the Parish shall be made by the said Assessors for the Years following or the time to come.

Voated: That William Hirst and Josiah Wolcott Esquires Mr. John Higginson Junior, Captain William Pickering and Walter Price are Chosen and desired to go to the Reverend Mr. George Curwin, in Conjunction with those the Church shall chose to acquaint him with the Voates of the said Parish, and to know whether He will accept of the same.

Voated: That if the Reverend Mr. George Curwin do accept of the aforesaid Call of the Church and Parish in order to Settlement, That then the Church are desired to chose some suitable person or persons to

[132] Provide all things Necessary for carrying on his Ordination when the same shall be brought forward; and they lay the charge of the same before the Assessors aforesaid in order to their raising the same on the Inhabitants of this parish at the time of making the Ministers Rates etc. All which were Unanimously voated; This is a true Copy of the Parish Voates in this Affair, as they are Recorded on the Parish Book.

The Answer to the Preceding Call of the Church and Parish.

To the Reverend Mr. Nicolas Noyes,
And the First Church in Salem.

Salem. 15th March 1713/14.

Honorable Reverend and Much Respected:

Having taken into Consideration your notes relating to my Settlement in the Work of the Ministry

among you, offered me by the Gentlemen you chose for that purpose; and particularly observing your Unanimity therein; I Esteem it a Call of God to me, and thereupon look upon myself bound to Accept it; Which I herein declare that I do: And much the rather in that hereby I shall be Associated with a Person of such Wisdom and Experience as Your Aged and Faithful Teacher and my Reverend Father in the work of the Gospel; with whom I can with greatest readiness joyn, and to whose Conduct submit in the Management of the Important affairs of Christs Kingdome among you.

Thus Thanking you for the Expressions of your Respect to me; And asking your constant prayers for me, That I may be an Instrument of promoting the Kingdome of Our Lord Jesus in this place. That we may be mutual comforts and Blessings in this World, and at last may meet together at the right hand of our Redeemer in the Day of Accounts, I Remain,

Your Hearty Friend and Servant in the
Work of the Gospel.

George Curwin.

[*Half page blank.*]

[133]

April 4

After Sacrament, the Reverend Mr. George Corwins Answer to the church in calling of him to the office of a pastor in this church, wherein he signified his consent to their call and at the same time a meeting of the Brethren of the church at the Teachers house was appointed to be on Tuesday following at 3 of the clock in the afternoon.

- 6 At the church meeting at the Teachers house, the church appointed that the ordination of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin should be on Wednesday the 12th of May next ensuing, and signified their desire that provision should be made at the houses of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin and of Partman,¹ for

¹Probably Deliverance Parkman who died in 1715. See cut of house in Perley III, 65.

the entertaining of the elders and messengers of the churches that should be sent to and such others as is usual in such cases. At the same meeting the church determined to send letters to the North Church in Boston, and to the church in Boston of which the Reverend Mr. Colman is Pastor¹ and to the church in the Body of the Town of Ipswich and to the church in Beverly and to the church in Wenham and to the church in Marblehead, and to the church in Salem Village, to desire the presence and Assistance of their Elders and that those churches would please to send messengers with their Elders that things may be carried on in the ordination of the Reverend Mr. Corwins regularly, and with the consent of the Churches. At the same meeting the church chose and desired Deacon Willard, Mr. Francis Willougbe and Captain Ausgood, and Josia Wolcot Esquire and Mr. John Higginson Junior were desired and chosen by the church to joyn with the other three that the 5 together or the major part of them would make provision for Entertaining the elders and messengers of the churches and such others as is usual in such cases, at the above mentiond houses, leaving it to their prudence to make a suitable and comely preparation for the end aforesaid and to desire of Colonel Samuel Brown to supply them with mony on the credit of the Church and parish to defray the charges of the abovesaid preparation, he having promised the church that he would supply them with mony for that occasion.

11 Mr. Benjamin Gerrish, Mary wife of Philip English Junior, and Mary Felt after examination personally owned the covenant they were entered into in infancy and renewed it with God and the church.

25 Sarah wife of William Ropes was propounded in order to full communion the same day Robert Stone personally owned the Covenant and had his child baptized.

May 2 Sarah Ropes wife of William Ropes before the Sacrament renewed her Covenant with God and the

¹Brattle Street Church, Benjamin Colman, Pastor.

Church and was received to full communion with the consent of the Brethren. After Sacrament the necessity of altering the day appointed for the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin was considered, the 13 of May being appointed by the Governor and Council to be a day of Publick fasting and prayer and the ordination of the Reverend Mr. George Corwin was appointed to be on the 19th day of May. It was also desired by the teacher that in that day appointed for fasting and prayer humble and fervant prayer, might be made to God for his blessing on his church and people here, and that God would be pleased to bless and prosper us in the intended ordination and that God would in great mercy to his church and people here make the Reverend Mr. George Corwin a successful instrument of his Glory and of the best good of his church and people here in converting many sinners to God and in his edifying and comforting his saints and people in the most holy faith, there had bene a day on purpose set apart for it, had not there bene so many publick days necessary in that month, wherein the people are so busie because of the seed time.

At the same the church desired their teacher to procede in the management of the affairs of the ordination on the day appointed and to give the Charge to the Reverend Mr. George Corwin at his Ordination.

May 19 The Reverend Mr. George Corwin was ordained a Pastor of this church. The Teacher gave him the charge, Dr. Cotton Mather gave him the Right hand of Fellowship. The Elders and messengers of the North Church in Boston, and of the Church in Brattle Street in Boston and of the First Church in Ipswich and of the Church in Beverly and of the Church of Marblehead, and of the Church at Wenham and of the Church at Salem Village, most, if not all of the Elders layed on hands. Dr. Mather began with prayer Mr. Corwin preacht on 2 Corinthians 2.16 the last clause of the text. Mr. Gerrish made the concluding prayer, Mr. Corwin pronounced
30 the blessing.

- John Ropes Senior Mrs. Elizabeth Epes and Mary Ropes were propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- June 6 John Ropes Senior Mrs. Elizabeth Epes and Mary Ropes having bene examined propounded and nothing objected against either of them they personally renewed the covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion the brethren of the church consenting.
- 20 Elizabeth and Sarah Simons were propounded in order to Baptizm.
- 27 Mary Star, widow, and her daughter Mary, wife of James Mackmilion and Elizabeth Orms were propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- July 4th Mary Star and her daughter Mary Mackmillion and Elizabeth Ormes having had nothing objected against either of them renewed their covenant with God and the church and were received to full communion the Brethren of the Church consenting.
- 11 Elizabeth and Sarah Simons entered into covenant with God and the church and were baptized having bene examined and nothing objected against them. The Same week Samuel and Mary Osgood personally renewed their covenant with God and the church.
- August 1 Mary wife of William Becket Junior after examination personally renewed her covenant with God and the church.
- 18 Susanna wife of Clement English after examination personally owned the covenant with God and the church and had her child baptizd.
- 29 William Becket junior personally owned the covenant with God and the church he having bene first examined and had his child baptizd.
The same day Sarah wife of Jonathan Bly was propounded in order to full communion with the church.
- [134]
- Sept. 5 Sarah the wife of Jonathan Bly having been propounded and Nothing being Objected against her,

was admitted to Full Comunion, Renewing the Covenant — The Brethren consenting.

The same day after the Sacrament, It was proposed by the Elders That those persons that were Baptisd in other Countrys should be admitted to Full Comunion (in ordinary cases) as the Children of our own Church and of the other Churches in Comunion with us in this Country i.e. without being obliged to make relations — To remove all appearances of partiality which might be a stumbling block to such as are well disposed — It was proposed farther whether the church would procede now to determine the matter; or leave it to farther consideration; And they chose to determine it at this time; Accordingly being put to Voate, It was agreed to Nemine Contradicente by lifting up the hand.

- Oct. 31 The widdow Mary Murrey was propounded in order to full communion.
- Nov. 7 She was received to full Comunion, with the consent of Brethren, entering into Covenant with God and the Church.
- Dec. 26 Hannah Bethel the Wife of Richard Bethel was propounded in order to full Communion.
- Jan. 2 She was admitted to full Communion with the Consent of the Brethren, she entering into Covenant with God and the Church.
- 16 Susanna the wife of John Becket Junior, and Mary the Wife of James Hopper, were propounded in order to Baptizm.
- 30 John Beckett Junior personally renewed his Covenant with God, and the Church having been Examind and had his Children Baptised — Att the Same time Susanna his Wife having been Examind, and propounded entered into Covenant with God and the Church and was Baptised.

James Hooper, and his Wife having been guilty of Fornication made a publick confession of their Sin. He as guilty of the breach of the Covenant, having been Baptised at Age, was thereupon reconciled to the Church and Renewed his Covenant.

She entered into Covenant and Baptised.

Mr. Obadiah Eyers and Mr. John Swinnerton were propounded in order to Full Comunion.

- Feb. 6 Mr. Obadiah Eyers and Mr. John Swinnerton having been Examined, and propounded, and nothing objected against them, renewed the Covenant and were admitted to full Communion, with the consent of the Brethren.

Mr. Joseph Douglas and his Wife were propounded in order to Baptism, and Full Communion.

- 20 Mr. Joseph Douglas and his Wife having been Examined and propounded, and Nothing being objected against them, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and were Baptised and admitted to full Communion, with the consent of the Bretheren after Sermon.

The Widow Priscilla Hilliard was propounded in order to Baptism, and coming to Ful Comunion.

1715

- March 6 The Widow Priscilla Hilliard having been Examined, and Propounded and Nothing being objected against her, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised and Admitted to full Comunion, Before Sacrament, with the consent of the Bretheren.

Elizabeth Marston the Daughter of Thomas Marston deceased was propounded in order to Baptism.

- 13 Sarah the Wife of Michael Driver was propounded in order to Baptism.

- 27 The Wife of Daniel Keyton was propounded in order to Full Comunion.

- April 3 She having been Examined, Propounded and nothing objected against her, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was admitted to full Comunion, with the consent of the Bretheren.

William Bartol, and Richard Ropes were propounded in order to Baptism.

- 17 William Bartol and Richard Ropes having been Examined and propounded, and nothing objected en-

tered into Covenant with God and the Church and were Baptised.

May 8 William Buttolph was propounded in order to Baptism.

22 Having been examined and propounded and nothing objected entred into Covenant with God, and the Church and was Baptised.

June 5 James and Mercy Douglas Children of Mr. Joseph Douglas were propounded in order to Baptism.

Having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against them, they entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and were Baptised.

26 Nathaniel Phippen and his wife Margaret the Wife of Ephraim Skerry and Elizabeth Marston the Daughter of Thomas Marston Deceased, propounded in order to Full Comunion.

Mary the Wife of John Meacham propounded in order to Baptism.

[135]

July 3 Nathaniel Phippen and Wife, Margaret the Wife of Ephraim Skerry, and Elizabeth Marston having been examined, propounded, and nothing objected against them, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and were admitted to Full Comunion with the consent of the Church.

10 Mary Meacham the Wife of John Meacham, having been propounded Examined and nothing objected against him, entred into Covenant with God, and the Church and was Baptised.

31 Malichy Foot, Samuel Ropes, and his Wife Lydia and Hannah Neal, the Daughter of Joseph Neal deceased were propounded in order to full Comunion.

Aug 7 Having been examined, propounded, and nothing objected against them, entred into Covenant with God, and the Church and were received to full Comunion with the consent of the Church.

14 Martha the Wife of Nathaniel Silsby Junior having been examined personally renewed her Covenant, and had her Child baptised.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- 28 Hannah Derby the Wife of Samuel Derby having been Baptised and two of her Children at Southhold on Long Island, renewed her Covenant here, and had her other Child Baptized.
- Martha the Wife of John Legroe having for several years neglected to bring her Children to be Baptised, upon renewing the Covenant had them Baptised.
- Sept 11 Margaret the Wife of Thomas Beadle was propounded in order to Baptisme.
- 25 Having been Examined, propounded and nothing objected against her entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised, and her Child.
- Mr. Richard Elvins was propounded in order to being Admitted to Full Comunion.
- Elizabeth the Widow of Joseph Beadle was propounded in order to Baptism.
- Oct 2 Mr. Richard Elvins having Examined, propounded and nothing Objected against him, entred into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was admitted to Full Comunion.
- 9 Warwick Palfry was propounded in order to Baptism, and Full Comunion.
- Elizabeth Beadle, before named having been examined, propounded, and nothing Objected against her, Entred into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised with her Children.
- 23 Warwick Palfry, having been examined, propounded, and nothing objected against him, entred into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised, and Admitted to full Comunion.
- 30 Benjamin Ives was propounded in order to full Comunion. Lydia Cook was propounded in order to Baptism, and Full Comunion.
- Nov. 6 Benjamin Ives having been examined, and propounded and nothing objected against him, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was received to full Comunion.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 243

- 13 Lydia Cook having been examined, and propounded and nothing objected against her entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised and admitted to Full Comunion.
- 27 John Holyman, and Mrs. Elizabeth Hunt were propounded in order to full Comunion.
The Reverend Mr. Joseph Green pastor of the Church at the Village dyed 26th Instant, to the great loss of the Church of God, and was exedingly Lamented.¹
- Nov. 4 John Holyman and Mrs. Elizabeth Hunt having been examined, propounded and nothing objected against them, entered into Covenant with God and the Church and were both admitted to Full Comunion.
- 28 The Reverend Mr. Chipman² was ordained pastor of the North Church at Royale side, which was also gathered the same Day, with the Assistance of the Elders, with the Messengers from the Church, in Conjunction with others.³
- 25 Sarah the Wife of Richard Elvins was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- Jan. 1 Having been Examined, propounded and nothing objected against her, She entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was admitted to full Comunion.
- 8th Mary Dean the Daughter of Thomas Dean deceased was propounded in order to Baptism.
- 22d Having been examined propounded and nothing objected against her, She entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised.
- 29th Margaret the Wife of Thomas Beadle was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- Feby 5 She having been Examined, propounded, and nothing objected against her renewed her Covenant

¹Joseph Green (1675-1715), Harvard College, 1720; minister, Danvers (Salem Village), 1697-1715. The date of death on his gravestone is December 6, 1715.

²John Chipman (1691-1775), Harvard College 1711; minister, Second Church, Beverly, 1715-1775.

³This entry was crowded in later.

with God, and the Church, and was admitted into full Comunion.

12th Jonathan Webb was propounded in order to Baptisme, and full Comunion, and his Wife in order to Baptism.

19th Lydia Karkett Junior was propounded in order to Baptism.

[136]

Feby 26th

Mehetabel the Wife of Samuel King, Susanna the Widow of John Marston, Junior and Hannah the Wife of Richard Willard, were propounded in order to full Comunion.

Jonathan Web, and his Wife Priscilla, having been examined, propounded, and nothing Objected against them entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and were Baptised, and He Admitted to Full Communion.

Isaac Williams Junior, and Sarah Archer the Dauter of Benjamin Archer deceased were propounded in order to Baptism.

1716

March 4

Mehetabel the Wife of Samuel King, Susanna the Widow of John Marston and Hannah the Wife of Richard Willard, having been examined, propounded, and nothing objected against them, renewed their Covenant with God, and the Church, and were admitted to full Comunion.

Lydia Karkett Junior having been examined, propounded, and Nothing objected against her, Entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was Baptised and Admitted to full Comunion.

Elizabeth Westgate the Daughter of the Widow Westgate was propounded in order to Baptisme.

11 Isaac Williams Junior, and Sarah Archer forenamed having been examined, propounded and nothing objected against them, Entered into Covenant with God and the Church, and were Baptized.

- 18 Elizabeth Westgate, having been examined, propounded and nothing objected against her, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised.
- 25 John Mazury Junior propounded in order to Baptism. Mary Stacy the Widow of William Stacy Junior was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- April 1 She having been examined and propounded and nothing Objected against her, renewed into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was admitted to full Comunion.
- John Mazury having been examined, propounded and nothing Objected against him, entered into Covenant with God, the Church and was Baptised. His Wife Kezia also a Child of the Church in
- 25 Beverly, renewed her Covenant at the same time. The Reverend Mr. Edward Holyoke¹ was Ordained pastor of the New Church in Marblehead which was the same day gathered, by the Assistance of the Elders and Messengers from this Church in Conjunction with others.
- 29 Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish the Daughter of Deacon Gerrish deceased was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- [*Anna*]² Knap the Wife of Isaac Knap a Child of the Church in Cambridge, renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church, and had one of her Children Baptised.
- May 6th Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against her, She renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church, and was admitted to full Comunion.
- Mr. Joseph Hathorn; Mary and Elizabeth Collins Children of this Church, having been examined personally renewed the Covenant, and Mr. Hathorn had his Child Baptised.

¹Edward Holyoke (1689-1769), Harvard College, 1705; minister, Second Church in Marblehead, 1716-1737; president, Harvard College, 1737-1769.

²Cf. Perley III, 376.

- 20th Mary the Wife of Thomas Driver, Dinah the Wife of Joshua Wytherile, and Lydia the Wife of Joseph Henfeild, all Children of this Church, having been Examined personally renewed the Covenant with God, and the Church, and the last had her Children Baptised.
- 27th Dorcas the Wife of Steven Chapman, having been Examined renewed her Covenant personally with God and the Church, and had her youngest Child Baptised.
- May 23rd The Reverend Mr. William Cooper¹ was ordained Assistant to the Reverend Mr. Colman, with the Assistance of one of the Elders and Messengers from the Church.
- June 24th Hannah the Wife of Robert Neal having been Examined, renewed her Covenant with God and the Church, and had her Child Baptised.
- July 8th Mary the Daughter of James Symond, Junior deceased, was propounded in order to Baptism.
- 15th Mary, the Wife of Joseph Flint a Child of the Church in Charlstown, renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church and had her Children Baptised. Sarah the Wife of Philemon Saunders, a Child of this Church having been Examined renewed her Covenant with God and the Church, and had her Child Baptised.
- 22 Mary the Dauter of James Symonds Junior deceased having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against her, Entered into Covenant with God and the Church and was Baptised.
- 25th The Reverend Mr. John Barnard² was Ordained Assistant to the Reverend Mr. Cheever in the First Church in Marblehead with the Assistance of the Elders and Messengers from this Church.
- [137]

¹William Cooper (1694-1743), Harvard College, 1712; minister, Brattle Street Church, Boston, 1715-1743.

²John Barnard (1681-1770), Harvard College, 1700; assistant minister, Brattle Street Church, Boston, 1705; minister, First Church, Marblehead, 1715-1770.

August 5th Joseph Neal a Member of a Presbyterian Church in New Castle in Pensilvania owned the Covenant with us, and was admitted here.

Hannah Abrahams being with Child in the time of her Widowhood by him that was after her Husband, was therefor suspended, But having often signify'd her Repentance, and desires to be restored to her former Church Relation, and the only that hindred it being the perversness of her Husband, who would not suffer her to make a confession, least they should be presented — The pastors of this Church having often dealt with her; in the time of her last sickness, she resolved if God should spare her life, that she would brake through all difficultys; which was Notified to the Church, that she might dye in their favour.

26 Mrs. Mary Butler was propounded in order to Full Comunion with the Church.

Sept 2nd She having been examind, and propounded and nothing objected against her, renewed her Covenant with God and the Church, and was admitted to Full Comunion.

Octob 28th Mr. Bartholomew Putnam and his Wife were propounded in order to full Comunion with the Church.

Nov. 4 Having been examind and propounded, and nothing objected against them renewed there Covenant with God, and the Church and were admitted into full Comunion.

The same day a Letter from our Neighbours in Manchester was read to the Church, wherein they signifyed their desires to the Elders and Church that they would assist them on the 7th Instant in Gathering into a Church State, and in Ordaining the Reverend Mr. Ames Cheevers¹ to the office of a Pastor among them; And there were chosen as Messengers from the Church Daniel Epes Esquire, Steven Sewal Esquire Mr. Samuel Ruck, and Captain Thomas Barton — Accordingly on the Day appointed the

¹Ames Cheever (1686-1756), Harvard College, 1707; minister, Manchester, 1716-1743.

- Work was Christianly, and peacably carried on to the Satisfaction of the Elders and Messengers.
- 25th Mrs. Jane and Mrs. Mehetabel Sewall were propounded in order to full Comunion.
- Decr 2 Having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against them renewed their Covenant with God and the Church and were admitted into full Comunion.
- 6th This day was Observed the Annual Thanksgiving for the Mercys of the Year past, And the Reverend Mr. Noyes preacht, from 65 Psalms 11.
- 30th Mary the Daughter of our Brother Samuel Howard was propounded in order to Full Comunion. Martha Mazury, Alias Dutch was propounded in order to Baptisme.
- Jany 6th Mary Howard above mentioned having been Examined and propounded, and nothing Objected against her, renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church, and was admitted to full Comunion.
- 13th Martha Mazury abovenamed having been Examined and propounded, and nothing Objected against her, she Entered into Covenant with God and the Church and was Baptised.
- 20th Edward Norrice a Child of this Church having been Examined renewed his Covenant with God, and the Church and had his Child baptised.
- 27th Martha the Wife of Samuel Pope was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- Febry 3d Having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against her, renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church, and was admitted to full Comunion.
- 27th Mrs. Jane Willard the Wife of Mr. Josiah Willard was propounded in order to full Comunion.
- 1717
- March 3rd Mrs. Jane Willard the Wife of Mr. Josiah Willard having been examined, propounded and nothing Ob-

jected against Her, renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church and was Admitted to full Communion.

10th Mary Foxcroft was propounded in order to Baptism.

17th Mary the Wife of John Bullock a Child of the Church in Reading, renewed her Covenant with God and the Church and had her Child Baptised.

24th Mary Foxcroft having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against her, entered into Covenant with God and the Church and was Baptised.

31st Samuel West Senior, Henry West, Samuel West Junior, and Mary his Wife, were propounded in order to full Communion.

Hannah, the Wife of Isaac Hacker was propounded in order to Baptism.

April 4th This day being appointed by the publick Authority for fasting, and prayer throughout this province to seek the fruites of Heaven []¹ accordingly Observed.

[138]

April 7th Samuel West Senior, Henry West, Samuel West Junior, and Mary his Wife, having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against any of them, They renewed their Covenant with God, and the Church, and were admitted to full Communion.

14th Hannah the Wife of Isaac Hacker having been examined and propounded, and nothing Objected against her, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was Baptised.

28th Benjamin Phippen having been examined, personally renewed his Covenant with God, and the Church and had his Child Baptised.

May 19th Elizabeth Ford formerly Elizabeth Collier Junior, having been left of God to dishonour the profession which she had personally made, by falling into the

¹Three or four words illegible.

Sin of fornication with him who is now her husband, was publickly admonished therefor, and suspended from having the Ordinance of Baptism administered to her Child 'til she shale make satisfaction therefor.

June 2 After the Lords Supper Margaret Hartwel, formerly Tomkins was with the Consent of the Church dismiss to the Church at Concord.

Att the same time was read a Letter from the Church in the Village desiring the presence and Assistance of the Elders and Messengers from the Church at the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Peter Clark;¹ And there were chosen to attend the Pastors, Our worthy Brothers Daniel Epes and Steven Sewall Esquire and Deacon Simon Willard. Daniel Bacon Senior was propounded to full Communion.

5th The Reverend Mr. Peter Clark was ordained Pastor of the Church in Salem Village, where things were comfortably carryd on.

23rd Daniel Bacon Senior having been examined, and propounded, and nothing objected against him, after having made a penitent Confession of the very Offensive miscarriages of his former conversation, to the Satisfaction of the Church, renewed his Covenant with God, and the Church and was admitted to full Communion.

30th John Brown, the Son of Bartholomew Brown deceased and Mary Collins, the Dautor of John Collins were propounded in order to full Communion.

July 7th Having been examined and propounded and nothing Objected against them they renewed their Covenant with God, and the Church and were admitted to full Communion.

Eunice Pope the Dauter of Samuel Pope was propounded in order to Baptisme.

11th This Day was observd as a Day of Prayer, and Fasting throughout this province upon Account of the Extreme drought.

¹Peter Clark (1693/4-1768), Harvard College, 1712; minister, Danvers, 1716-1768.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 251

- 21st Eunice Pope having been Examined and propounded and nothing objected against Her, entered into Covenant with God, and the Church, and was Baptised. Jemima the Wife of Jonathan Ashby a Child of this Church renewed her Baptismal engagement.
- 28th Sarah Punchard was propounded in order to full Communion.
Rebecca Frost, a Dauter of John Frosts, was propounded in order to Baptism.
- Aug. 5th Sarah Punchard having been Examined and propounded and nothing Objected against Her, She renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church and was received to full Communion.
- 11 Rebecca Frost having been examined and propounded, and nothing objected against Her, She entered into Covenant with God, and the Church and was Baptised.
Joseph Grafton a Child of this Church renewed his Baptismal engagements.
- 25 Mary the Wife of John Sympson was propounded in order to full Communion.
- Sept. 1st Having been examined and propounded and nothing objected against her, she renewed her Covenant with God, and the Church and was admitted to full Communion.
- 8 Elizabeth the Wife of Samuel Elson a Child of the Church in Chebacco, renewed her Baptismal Engagements and had her Child Baptised.
- Oct. 6th Wiliam Cash Junior was propounded in order to Baptisme.
- 20 Having been Examined, and propounded and nothing objected against him, He entered into Covenant with God and the Church, and was Baptised.
- 27 Mrs. Hannah Beadle the Widow of Samuel Beadle deceased and Elizabeth the Wife of Nathaniel Black.
Having been examined and Propounded and nothing Objected against them, renewed their Covenant with God and the Church, and were received to full Communion.

Nov. 28 Now the Provincial Thanksgiving was observed.
The Reverend Mr. John Barnard¹ Preached.

This month Mercy the Wife of Thomas Cole having been examined and propounded Entered into Covenant with God, and this Church and was Baptised.

Dec. 11 Mr. Benjamin Marston, son of Mr. Benjamin Marston, having been examined and propounded and nothing Objected against him renewed his Covenant with God and the Church, and was Admitted to full Communion. This by the Reverend Mr. Noyes, Deceased.

[139]

The Reverend
Mr. George Curwin's
Death and
character.

On November 23d 1717.

Died the Reverend Mr. George Curwin, In the 35th year of his Age, and the fourth year of his Ordained Ministry in this Church.

He was highly Esteemed in his Life, and very deservedly Lamented att his Death; having been very Eminent for his early improvements in Learning and Piety, his Singular Abilitys, and great Labours; his remarkable Zeal and Faithfulness in the Service of his Master. A Great Benefactor to our Poor. The Reverend Mr. Noyes his Life, was much bound up in him.

The Reverend
Mr. Nicholas Noyes,
his Death
and Character.

On December 13th, 1717.

Died the Very Reverend and Famous Mr. Nicholas Noyes, Near 70 Years of Age, and in the 35th Year of his Ordained Ministry in this Church.

He was extraordinarily Accomplished for the Work of the Ministry, whereunto he was called; and wherein he found mercy to be Faithfull; and was made a rich, Extensive, and long continued Blessing.

Considering his Superiour Genius, his Pregnant Witt, Strong Memory, Solid Judgement, his Great Acquisition in humane Learning and knowledge, his Conversation among men, especially with his Friends, so very Pleasant, Entertaining, and Profitable; his Uncommon Attainments in the Study of Divinity;

¹Minister, Marblehead, 1715-1770.

his Eminent Sanctity, Gravity and Virtue, his Serious, Learned, and Pious Performances in the Pulpit, his more than Ordinary Skill in the Propheticall Parts of Scripture, his Wisdom and Usefulness in humane Affairs, and his Constant Sollicitude for the Publick Good.

It is no Wonder, that Salem and the Adjacent Parts of the Country, as also the Churches, University and People of New England, Justly Esteem him as a Principal Part of their Glory.

He was Born att Newbury, 22d December 1647.
And died a Bachelour.

Those Characters were Drawn by Persons well Acquainted with these Reverend Persons Deceased and who did them but Justice, and were Published in the Publick News Letters in Boston.

Now follows an Account of the resettlement of the Ministry in this Church. Also an Account of Church Meetings, and the Votes in them passed, and Agreed to be recorded; Church Admonitions and Censures, and Absolutions. The Confessions made and offered by such as have committed scandalous Sins. Fasts and Thanksgivings, Provincial and Private, with the Contributions thereon. Ordinations in this Church; or in other Churches, which this Church is invited to Assist in.

Councils, here in this Church, or in other Churches, to which this Church is invited to Repair and Assist.

[140]

A Church Meeting
Warned in Order to
their choice of
a Pastor.

Whereas it has pleased God in his Sovereignty to bereave the first Church of Salem of Their Pastor and Teacher, and left them destitute of Ministeriall help, and also to lay his hand upon the Deacons of the Church who are at present sick and not capable of Acting. It's therefore Thought Necessary that there be a meeting of the Members of the said Church To Consider of and proceed on Proper Methods for the calling of a Ministers¹ for the said Church and Con-

¹Text is definitely plural but *minister* is apparently intended.

gregation. Pursuant thereunto. we the Subscribers whose names are underwritten do desire and Request Daniel Epes, Esquire That on Sabbath day next Immediately after the worship of God is Ended in the afternoon he doth give notice unto the brethren of said Church, That they do meet together at the Meeting house in Salem on Monday the 27th day of this instant January at Ten of the clock in the forenoon for the Ends aforesaid.

John Higginson
 Samuel Browne
 Benjamin Lynde
 Stephen Sewall
 William Gedney
 Peter Osgood
 James Lindall
 Benjamin Pickman
 Timothy Lindall
 Thomas Barton

Salem January 16th, 1717/18.

Lords day January 19, 1717/18.

Pursuant to the within Request and desire of the Church Members within named, and others. I have notified the brethren of the Church to meet Together on the 27th of This Instant Month of January at the Meeting house at Ten of the clock in the forenoon, for the Ends within mentioned. Which I performed, by reading The within Notification on the Lords day after the publick worship was ended in the afternoon.

Daniel Epes.

Jany. 27th At a meeting of the first Church in Salem according to the above Notification.

The Church Voted: The Ministers both being Dead and the Deacons¹ both sick and not able to be present. The Church proceeded to chuse a moderator, Accordingly John Higginson Esquire was chosen Moderator for the Meeting.

It being put to vote whether the Church would pro-

¹John Marston and Simon Willard.

ceed to the Choyce of a Minister for the Church and congregation. It was voted unanimously on the affirmative.

Voted: That Daniel Epes Esquire is chosen to Record in the Church book The aforesaid notification and the Return — as also the Votes and Transactions of this Meeting.

Voted: That the Church do proceed to chuse a Minister by the Usual sign of holding up their hands.

Voted: Nemine Contradicente, That the Church do make choyce of Mister Samuel Fisk¹ to be their Minister for this Church and Parish.

Voted: That Daniel Epes and Stephen Sewall Esquire and Captain Peter Osgood are appointed a Committee to wait upon Mr. Samuel Fisk and acquaint him with the choyce of the Church and to desire him to continue preaching to us, and this congregation, till the Parish Meeting be called and over.

Voted: That Daniel Epes, Stephen Sewall Esquire and Captain Peter Osgood are appointed a Committee to attend the Parish Committee and acquaint them with the Churches choyce of Mr. Samuel Fisk for their Minister and desire the said Committee to call a Parish Meeting in order to give their concurrence with the Churches choyce of Mr. Samuel Fisk as soon as may be with conveniency.

A motion being made by Colonel Browne and others of the Members that some neighboring Minister may be obtained for the Administering the Sacrament the first Sabbath in March next Ensuing — which the members of the Church Unanimously consented unto.

Then the Meeting was Ended with prayer and Thanksgiving by Mr. Prescott for the Unanimity and good agreement of this Church in this present meeting in so great a Concernment.

¹Samuel Fisk (1689-1770), Harvard College, 1708; minister, First Church, Salem, 1718-1735; Third Church, Salem, 1735-1745. Benjamin Lynde records in his diary that there were “near forty of the members present.” *Lynde Diaries*, p. 4.

The Concurrence of
the Parish.

Att a Meeting of the Inhabitants of the First Parish
in Salem Legally Assembled February 17th 1717/8.

Voted: That this Parish doth Concurr, with the late Act of
the Church, referring to the Calling and Choosing
the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk, to the Work and
Office of the Ministry here.

One hundred
pounds settlement

Voted: That this Parish do Grant and Give Unto the Said
Mr. Samuel Fisk, for his Support and Maintainance
the Summ of One Hundred and Thirty Pounds per
Annum, in Pasable Mony or Bills of Creditt of this
Province, if he Accepts of Ordination, And being
Setled a Minister of the Gospel in this Parish, and
During his continuance, as our Minister.

Voted: That this Parish do Grant and Give unto the Said
Mr. Samuel Fisk, towards his Settlement the Sum
One hundred pounds; Or provide A Ministry House,
or Dwelling for him.

[141]

Voted: That Daniel Epes, Josiah Wolcott, Stephen Sewall
and Captain Brown Esquires and Captain Peter Os-
good and Captain William Bowditch are Chosen a
Committee, and are desired, to wait on the Reverend
Mr. Samuel Fisk, and Acquaint him with the Votes
of this Parish, and pray his continuance with us, and
Accept our Call of him.

All the Votes of this Day Nemine Contradicente,
A True Copy on record in the first Parish in Salem.
Salem February 17th, 1717/8 Attest,

Thomas Barton Parish Clerk

Mr. Fisk's Answer
to his Call.

Mr. Fisk's Answer to the Preceeding Call of the
Church and Parish.

To The Church and Inhabitants of the First Parish
in Salem.

Gentlemen:

It is some time since, you were pleased to choose
and Invite me, to the Office of a Pastor with You;
Your respect to me wherein, I thankfully Acknowl-

edge. And now having Addressed Almighty God for his gracious direction in so Important an Affair of my Life and Serviceableness — And having considered, the weight which Your Unanimity bears, together with the good provision you have made for my temporal subsistence (for which I heartily thank you) I have Concluded to Accept of Your Call. I do therefore Devote myself to and by divine leave and help shall Improve myself in, the Ministry of the Gospel among you. Exspecting you will Readily Support me as the Gospel requires; And (as no doubt you will See it your interest and comfort) in convenient time, Provide (as hath been usual with you) Assistance in the Ministerial Work.

So Earnestly desiring your continual United prayers to God for me, that I may Obtain Grace and Mercy to be Faithfull and Successfull.

I subscribe My Self
Your Servant for Jesus's Sake
Samuel Fisk

March 29th, 1718.

A contribution
voted Mr. Fisk
about his Salary.

Att a meeting of the Inhabitants of the First Parish
in Salem, legally Assembled,
April 10th, 1718.

Voted: That there be a free Contribution on the Sabbath
Days, to be Given to the Reverend Mr. Fisk; and to
be Continued for him, Only So long, as he shall carry
on the whole Work of the Ministry in this Place; As
a farther Encouragement to him and that the said
contribution begin, on the first Sabbath in May
next; also an 100£ more for Settlement if Mr. Fisk
chooseth to Settle himself.

A true Copy, On record in the first Parish in Salem.

Salem April 10th, 1718. Attest,

William Bowditch,
Parish Clerk

Sir—

A Church meeting
Desired in order
to Ordination.

We being Some of the Members of the first Church of Christ in Salem, do desire you, on the next Lords day to notify the Members of the Church, that there be a Church-Meeting, att the Town-House, on the Monday following, att two of the Clock in the afternoon; to Consider, what time may be Suitable, for the Ordination of our Pastor, the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk, and to do what may be proper for Accomplishing the same —

Salem September 4th, 1718. John Higginson
Samuel Brown
Stephen Sewall
Wiliam Gidney

To Daniel Epes Esquire

[142]

The Church
Meeting
Warned.

Pursuant to the within request and desire of the Church Members above named and others: I have Notified the Brethren of the Church, to Meet together, att the Town house, on the eighth day of this instant Month of September; Att two of the Clock in the Afternoon, for the Ends within mentioned; which I performed on the Lords day after the Administration of the Sacrament was Ended.

Daniel Epes

The Church
Mett.

Att A Meeting of the first Church in Salem.
Sepr. 8th 1718 duly Warned —

Voted: John Higginson Esquire Chosen Moderator.

Voted: That Mr. Daniel Epes is desired to Enter in the Church Book the Parish vote on February 17th 1717/8 — relating to their concurrence with the church, in Choosing the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk for our Pastor and his Acceptance thereof, and the Notification of this Church Meeting and Also to Enter the Votes made this Day.

Voted: That the Eighth day of October Next is Appointed for the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk.

Voted: That the Church will call in the Help and Assistance of the Elders and Messengers of the following

Churches, viz. The first church in Ipswich, The Church in Wenham, The first Church in Beverly, The fourth Church in Boston, The first Church in Marblehead, The Church in Salem Village, The Church in the Precinct in Salem: To Assist att the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk.

Voted: That John Higginson Esquire Daniel Epes Esquire and Deacon John Marston, are chosen a Committee to write unto and Notify, the Severall Churches abovenamed.

And to desire the Reverend Mr. Joseph Gerrish, or the Reverend Mr. John Rogers, or the Reverend Mr. Benjamin Colman, or the Reverend Mr. Thomas Blowers, or Either of them, which they shall see meet and can prevail with, to give the Reverend Mr. Fisk his Charge att his Ordination.

Voted: That Mr. Epes and Deacon Marston do Enquire and take a List of the names of all the children that have been Baptised. Since the Death of the Reverend Mr. George Curwin.

A Copy of the Letter Sent by this first church in Salem, To invite the Churches; aforenamed, to Assist, att the Ordination of Mr. Fisk, in this Parish.

The Churches
Letters to
Severll Churches to Assist
att Mr. Fisk's
Ordination.

The First Church of Christ in Salem.

To the first church of Christ in Ipswich,
Sendeth, Greeting.

Reverend and Beloved, in our Lord Jesus Christ.

It having pleased the Sovereign God, after he had in the close of the last year, Called to himself — our Reverend and Dear Pastors, Mr. Nicholas Noyes and Mr. George Curwin, to bring to our help, the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk; whose ministerial Qualifications and Labours, we have been so Satisfyed in, as Unanimously to Call him to the Office of a Pastor over us; Having the Unanimous concurrence of our Neighbours, the Inhabitants of this Parish herein: And it having pleased God to Incline the heart of the Reverend Mr. Fisk, to Accept of the Call, we have

given him. We have thought fitt to Appoint Wednesday the Eighth day of October next Insuing as a Suitable time for his Ordination to that Office. These therefore are to Request the Presence and Assistance of Your Reverend Pastors and Messengers on that Day in that Affair; having likewise sent Letters of this Import to Other Churches on this Occasion; Hoping this office of Communion may tend to our Mutuall Edification and the Strengthening our holy Fellowship.

Thus Commending you to the Grace of God in our Lord Jesus Christ and Asking your continual prayers to God for us.

We Rest

Your Brethren and Servants

John Higginson	} In the Name of the Church
Daniel Epes	
John Marston	

Salem, September¹

[143]

1718.

October 8th,

Mr. Fisk now
Ordained Pastor.

On the Eighth of October 1718.

The Reverend Elders and Messengers of the Churches, which were Invited, Assembled in Council, att Salem — in pursuance of their Invitation — And The Reverend Mr. Thomas Blowers Opened the Publick Service by Prayer. The Reverend Mr. Benjamin Colman Preached on 2. Corinthians 4. 5. an Excellent Sermon to the vast Assembly — After Sermon Mr. Fisk prayed: Then the Reverend Mr. Gerrish Prayed and Gave the Charge, the Reverends Mr. John Rogers and Mr. Benjamin Colman and Mr. Thomas Blowers Imposing hands with him: Next — The Reverend Mr. John Rogers Gave the

¹This is obviously a form letter sent to the seven churches mentioned above. It is interesting to note that the First, Second and Third churches in Boston were passed over in favor of the somewhat more liberal Fourth (*i.e.*, Brattle Street) Church.

right-hand of Fellowship to the Ordained Pastor in the name of the Reverend Elders present: After which, the fourth part of the Hundred and Eighteenth Psalm was sung and the Pastor Pronounced the Blessing: 2 Corinthians 2 Chapter 16th Verse and 12 chapter 9th Verse.

On this Ordination Day, the Assembly Mett att the New Church, which was now almost perfectly finished: A Vast and Beautifull, yet Grave House it is. It was began to be raised on May 21st 1718, and it was completely raised, May 24th 1718. The Congregation first Mett to Worship God in it on July 13th 1718. No Hurt was Sustained either in Pulling down the old-house, or Raising the New one. Laus Deo Salvatori!

This is the Third House Erected for the Publick Worship of God, on the Same Spot of Land, on which the first Church was Built in this Town and which was the first in the Province.¹

1718

Oct. 25th George Dean was Propounded to the Church in Order to Baptism.

Having been Examined, and professed repentance of the Sin of fornication, which he had committed, and nothing being Objected against him, Entered into Covenant with God, in the church, and was Baptised. Hannah, the Wife of George Dean, having been guilty of the Sin of Fornication, with him the said George Dean; and having signified to the Pastor on her Death Bed her repentance of that Sin and her desire to be reconciled to the Church, of which she was a child; It was proposed now by the Pastor to the church to think charitably of her, who had manifested repentance, and would have reconciled herself to the church, had not Mr. Noyes and Mr. Curwin Died so suddenly, or if she had lived to the opportun-

¹An interesting description of this meetinghouse may be found in G. L. Streeter, "Salem before the Revolution." *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, XXXII, 84-85.

A New Church
or House Built
for the Publick
Worship of God

George Dean's
Confession

ity her husband hath had; Accordingly the Church voted to receive her to their Charity.¹

Nov. 23 The Pastor, after the Publick Worship was Concluded, Acquainted the Brethren of the Church, that he had received a Paper Subscribed by Severall of the Brethren and Sisters of this Church, living in the Eastern part of this Place, (now by this Parish made a Distinct Precinct) wherein their request to be Dismissed and recommended from this Church; which Paper was now read by the Pastor; and is as followeth:

Salem, November 14th, 1718.

The Request of the Brethren belonging to the East Meeting House to be dismissed and recommended in order to their being Constituted a Distinct Church.

To the Reverend Mr. Samuel Fisk, Pastor of the first Church in Salem, And to the Church —

Honored Reverend and Beloved:

Whereas, all of Us the Subscribers have been for some time, Under Covenant Obligations to this Church, and whereas now Divine Providence opens a way for our Embodying into a Church State ourselves, under the Pastoral Care of the Reverend Mr. Robert Stanton,² whom we design, to have ordained for that Purpose, as soon as conveniently may be.

And although some few of Us have failed in our Duty, in our former proceedings, We pray it may be Overlooked and Passed by.

And we humbly and heartily request of you, that you would be pleased so to release us from our Covenant Obligations, as that we with our Children may have your free Consent to Embody, into a Church by Ourselves, and may be by you recommended to the Pastoral Care of our Intended Pastor, Mr. Stanton.

Voted

¹She had died on September 7, 1718, aged 24 years (gravestone, Charter Street Cemetery). Cf. Perley III, 21.

²Robert Stanton (1689-1727), Harvard College, 1712; minister, Second (East) Church, Salem, 1719-1727.

[144]

1718

And we Entreat we may have the Benefit of the Sacrament with you, untill our Church is Settled; and as there shall be Occasion, that you will Assist and help us, especially by your prayers Unto the God of all Grace, that in so great an Affair, We may be Directed, and Assisted, to Proceed, in all things, according to the Will of God, Unto whom be Glory in the Churches by Jesus Christ throughout all Ages, Amen.

Martha Willard	Elizabeth Gerrish	Christopher Babbidge
Hannah Willard	Hannah Pickering	Simon Willard
Mary Prince	Mercy Swinnerton	Jonathan Webb
Abigail Andrew	Elizabeth Barton	Richard Prince
Jane Willard	Dorothy Neal	Benjamin Ives
Sarah Hardy	Priscilla Hilliard	Joseph Hardy
Silence Rogers	Abigail Punchard	Daniel Rogers
Elizabeth Bush	Sarah Ward	Malachi Foot
Elizabeth Dean	Martha Pope	Josiah Willard
Margarett Beadle	Abigail Foot	John Browne
Mary Murrey	Abilgail Foot Junior	
Deborah Masters	Mary Foot	
Mary Collins, Junior	Mary Collins	

And whereas, I Simon Willard have served this Church in the Office of a Deacon, I pray now to be Excused.

S. W.

A Church Meeting Appointed.

In order to the mature considering and Answering this request A Church Meeting was Agreed and Appointed to be on December 15th 1718, att the meeting house att two of the clock in the afternoon; also to Consider of and Choose a Deacon or Deacons.

December 11th Thanksgiving and Contribution:

The Provincial Thanksgiving was Observed and kept; when also a Contribution (having been recommended by a Brief from the Governour for the propagating the Gospell) was accordingly made, by this Congregation. Twenty Six Pounds, two Shillings was Contributed, and was Paid to Judge Sewal one of the Committee, Appointed by the Government to

Dispose of the Mony now Contributed through the Province. Now also Two pounds was Contributed for the Poor of this Parish. The Pastor Preached.

£26.2.0.

£2.0.0.

Dec. 15 Salem, Monday December 15, 1718. att 2 Clock. P. Meridian

The Church
Mett

Att a Meeting of the First Church att the Meeting House.

After Humble Prayer to Almighty God, and reading the above request etc. Then

Voted: That Colonel Higginson Colonel Brown and Mr. Timothy Lindall be a Committee to Adjust the Accounts of Deacon Simon Willard, and to receive what of the Churches Goods are in his hands; and to Discharge him if they find he renders a Just Account to them of what he hath received and done as a Deacon of this Church.

Voted: That the abovesaid Committee do render an Account of their doing, herein to this Church att their next Meeting.

Voted: That the Church do Meet in this place on Thursday December 25th, Instant att 2 Clock P. Meridian. Further to Consider, of the request of our Brethren etc. in the Eastern District, to be Dismissed and recommended from this Church, in order to their being Constituted a Distinct Church. As also to receive the Accounts of the abovesaid Committee. Also to consider of our Present Method of Supporting the Charge of the Lords Supper, and whether it be not more Convenient to Contribute, After each Communion, to Support the Charge of It. Also what may properly be done towards the carrying on of a Lecture every other week in this Place.

Also to Enquire if there [*be any*] person or persons of this Church, that are under church Censure or that have committed []¹ Sins that so they be informed of and a due course may be taken with []¹

¹Manuscript torn. One to three words lost in each line.

[145]
1718

Deacon Osgood Chosen Voted: That this Church do proceed to the Choice of a Deacon.

Voted: That our Brother Peter Osgood is Chosen a Deacon in this Church, Nemine contradicente.

Voted: That the abovesaid Committee record, in this Book the Churches Goods, with the weight of the Plate¹ Then Prayer Concluded the present Meeting.

Salem Thuresday December 25th, 1718. att 2

Dec. 25 Clock Post Meridian.

The Church Mett

After Humble Prayer to Almighty God. Then

Voted: That the Accounts of Deacon Simon Willard, Adjusted by the Committee be Accepted according to the report of the said Committee.

Deacon Willard dismissed from his Office Voted: That Deacon Simon Willard be dismissed from the service of this Church as a Deacon according to his Desire, with thanks for his good Service.

Voted: That the Request of Such of the Brethren and Sisters, who Dwell on the Eastern Side of the line sett by this First Parish to the Inhabitants of the Eastern Part of this Parish who have built a House for Publick Worship; be Granted and to Such only; and The Pastor is Desired to Give it to them in the following Words:

Att a Meeting of the First Church in Salem on December 25th 1718, being Thuresday, P.M.

An Answer to the request of the Brethren and Sisters of this Church, who Dwell in the Eastern Part of this Town.

Whereas our Neighbours who Dwell in the Eastern Part of this Town have Erected a House for the Publick Worship of God, and the first Parish, hath Granted them a Separate District for the Support of the Ministry among them. And whereas they have hereupon Called a Learned, Orthodox and Pious Minister to Dispense the Gospel to them and

¹Cf. pp. 337-338, below.

A Dismission and recomendation to the Brethren and Sisters with Their Children who Dwale in the Eastern Precinct.

in order to Settlement and Ordination among them. Altho' we cannot but bear due Testimony against the Irregular Proceedings of some of the said Brethren, in their managements of that Affair of building a house for a Separate Assembly, contrary to the Usage and Proceedings of other Brethren formerly belonging to this Church in the Gathering of a Church; and Contrary to Good Order. Yet for Peace Sake, considering that those of our said Brethren who requested dismissal, and who have been Guilty, have confessed their faults, and desired that it might be Overlooked. And We being Ready to Encourage the Work of the Gospell among Us in this Town Do Dismiss our said Brethren and Sisters with their children who Dwell to the eastward of the said line, from this Church (so as that they attend Communion and Church Order with Us, till their Pastor is Ordained) and recomend them, to the care of the Reverend Mr. Robert Stanton, whom they intend to have ordained their Pastor.

Voted: That the Brethren of this Church will privately speedily consider of Some proper Method to Revive a Lecture in this place, and when they are prepared a Number of them shall repair to the Pastor and pray him to Cale a Church Meeting farther to prosecute the vote passed in the last Church Meeting, concerning the Lecture.¹

Deacon Osgood
his Acceptance
of his choice

Our Brother Peter Osgood now Manifested his Acceptance, of the Office of Deacon in this Church in a Decent Humble free manner.

A Contribution to be
Asked after Sacrament
henceforward

Voted:

That, henceforward, after Each Communion (saving the next ensuing) The Box be Carried by the Deacons to each Communicant (Males and Females) in order to their Contribution for the Support of the Lords Table, And this Contribution is to Continue during this Churches pleasure.

¹Mr. Fisk appears to have made this entry at a later date. Much controversy was to arise over the authenticity of this vote and the circumstances under which it was recorded. See Introduction.

Voted: That Deacon Osgood, do receive att the hands of the Committee aforesaid, the Severall Writings, Monys, Plate etc. belonging to the Church, which they have received of Deacon Simon Willard, also that he do keep all the Churches Utensills.

All those votes passed Nemine Contradicente.

N.B. No informations were given concerning any members under church censure, or who live in Scandalous Sins, att this Church Meeting.¹

This Church Meeting was Concluded with Thanks and Prayer.

1719

April 2 A General Fast observed.

5th There was communicated to the Church a Letter, from the Brethren in the Eastern Parish in this Town, who some time since Embodied into a particular Church by Fasting and Prayer and Signing a Covenant present therewith.

Salem East Church
Gathered and their
Pastor Ordained.

The Reverend Mr. Thomas Blowers of Beverly and the Pastor of this Church who Assisted those Brethren requesting the presence and Assistance of the Pastor and Messengers of this Church in the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Robert Stanton, on Wednesday the 8th, Instant and the Church Delegated Deacon Marston, and Colonel John Higginson and Colonel Samuel Brown for that Service.

8th The Reverend Mr. Robert Stanton was Ordained the Pastor and Delegates being present

June 14th The Pastor after Exercise signified to the Brethren of the Church the []² of Elizabeth Pierce to be by this church recommended to the communion of the First Church in []³ which was accordingly consented to.

[146]

July 26 The Pastor did now after Evening Worship Stay the Brethren of the Church and communicated to them

¹This entry was added later by Mr. Fisk.

²Manuscript torn. The word may be "petition."

³Manuscript torn, the first three letters are *New*.

A Letter from the church in Wenham to this Church to Assist in Council.

a Letter he had Received from the Church of Christ in Wenham, which Invited the presence and Assistance, of the Pastor and delegates of this Church, in Council with other Churches to Judge, of the Processe of that Church with an Offender — William Rogers — who is suspended by the said Church and is not reconciled to the Church. After reading the said Letter —

The Pastor putt it to vote, whether they would proceed upon the said Letter, and choose and send Delegates — it was voted unanimously in the Affirmative. Then — It was putt to vote, whether they would Desire and choose their Brethren Deacon Osgood, Colonel Samuel Brown, Mr. Daniel Epps, to represent them in the said Council and Accompany the Pastor which was voted in the Affirmative — Accordingly —

July 29th

A Councill
att Wenham

The Pastor and Delegates of this Church, Mett att Wenham and Joyned in Councill with the Pastors and Messengers of the First Church in Boston, and the Fourth Church in Boston, and the First Church in Beverly; after prayer, the Councill formed themselves and Chose the Reverend Mr. Benjamin Wadsworth Moderator And the Pastor of this Church Clerk, and after some time sent to Mr. William Rogers to Appear before the Councill att the Meeting House — He sent word that before he sent an Answer he would take advice, viz. of the Pastors and Delegates which, it seems Mr. Wise had called this Day, to a private house, to second his admonition to the Church of Wenham, for male-administration in suspending Mr. William Rogers; Upon receiving this word The Councill went to the Meeting house and after the Moderator had prayed he Declared to the Assembly the cause and occasion of their present meeting in Councill, and then Desired the Reverend Mr. Gerrish to bring forward his cause, which he did; offering and reading the Charge against the Said William Rogers and the evidences to Prove it: and after hearing the objections offered by

three Brethren of the Church against the Evidence, and their Evasion on the behalf of the said William Rogers, and the Reply of the Pastor, and the Cloud of Witnesses in the Church, to testify and Assert what the Pastor replied; The Councill Adjourned from the Publick, Considered the case in Private — and in their Result, Justified the whole Processe of the Church in Wenham — and their neglect and Disregard of the Second Church in Ipswich in what they had done to Acquit Mr. Rogers and Advised Solemnly and in the name of God the said Rogers to humble himself before God, to Fly to the blood of Christ, and reconcile himself to the Church; This result was Read in the Meeting house in the Audience of the Assembly (which was now very large) by the foresaid Clerk of the Councill, then Mr. Colman Prayed and Gave the Blessing — And the Councill was Dissolved, after It had ordered Mr. Rogers (though he appeared not att the Councill, nor sent them any Answer) should have a Copy of this result.¹

¹The Wenham Church suspended William Rogers on January 31, 1716/7, whereupon he appealed to the Second Church in Ipswich, which, in turn, on July 16, 1719, convened an Ecclesiastical Council to redress the wrong. The issues are not clear but the Ipswich Church was convinced that “the said Church seems to us either obstinately bent upon a design to subvert the ancient Constitution of these Churches, or through the prevalency of some temptation are rushing upon their own Confusion.” The Council declared that “Mr. Rogers has not given any just offence to the said Church in Wenham” but further counseled him “that he suppress all hard resentments toward his Pastor and brethren notwithstanding the unkindness and injustice he has met from them.” A copy of the minutes of the Council was given to the wife of Mr. Gerrish, the pastor, since he refused to accept them or communicate the recommendations to the church. Mr. Gerrish died in January 1719/20 at the age of seventy. “The Church found their position a bar to obtaining a pastor, and, at last, voted to restore Rogers and revoke their action in his case.” Dexter MSS., “Ecclesiastical Councils, No. 89.”

Oct. 18th The Pastor after Exercise Stayed the Church, and Signified to the Brethren the Desire of Susannah the Wife of Mr. John Howe (who Dwelleth now in Marlborough) to be recommended to the Church there, which was Accordingly Consented to.

Sister How
recommended

Oct. 29th A Generall Thanksgiving was Ordered by the Government, and Observed here accordingly — The Pastor Preached — £7:6:0 was by contribution Collected for the Poor.

Jan. 24th The Pastor, after Evening Worship was concluded Stayed the Brethren of the Church and Communicated to them the desire of Sarah the Wife of Miles Ward to be recommended to the Eastern Church in this town; and it being considered by the Church, that her Husband, had purchased a Seat in the Eastern Church Meeting House, and was taken into the Eastern Precinct by the line Sett by the Generall Court, it was voted that she should be recommended according to her desire.

Sister Ward
recommended

A Letter from the New North Church in Boston to this Church, concerning the Instalm. of the Reverend Mr. Peter Thatcher

Now also was Communicated a Letter sent from the New North Church in Boston to this church which Invited the presence and Assistance of the Pastor and messengers of this Church In the Installment of the Reverend Mr. Peter Thatcher lately Pastor of Weymouth in the Pastorall Office in the said New North Church; as also a Brief Representation of the Grievances of some of the Brethren, of the said N. N. Church, and some of the Congregation was communicated to this Church, that so the state of the said N. N. Church, might be well Understood by our Brethren which papers being read. It was voted that this church would send their Messengers to Meet the Pastors and Messengers of five other churches, on the 27 of this Instant January, to Consider, whether it might be proper to Countenance, and Concurr with the said N. N. Church in their Intended Proceeding on said Day. It was voted also, that our Brethren Colonel Samuel Brown, Judge Lynde, Mr. Epes, Mr. Timothy Lindall, and Deacon Osgood, are desired and Empowered to represent this Church on Said Day and Joyn with the abovesaid Churches, if they think it Convenient.

These votes passed Nemine Contradicente.

Accordingly on —

Jan. 27 The Pastor and two Messengers of this Church Mett att Boston, and finding that there were att most but two Churches which were sent to by the said New North Church convened: It was Judged by the said Pastor and Messengers to be most Agreeable to the above votes that this church should not Act on this Occasion — the Majority of our Messengers from the Church and the Majority of the Churches Invited, not appearing. Accordingly, the Pastor and Messengers abovesaid Informed the Churches Convened that they Could not Enter into Councill and then Informed the Pastor and Brethren of the New North Church thereof, and also Exhorted the Dissenting Brethren of the New North Church and Congregation to putt on a Spirit of Meekness, humility, and Condesention and to Act as becometh Men, and to have their Speech and behaviour as becometh holinese, Laying aside all Anger, wrath, malice, guile and evill Speaking as becometh Saints.¹

1720

March 31 A generall Fast was Observed. The Pastor Preached. Now £5.2.10 was Collected by Contribution.

A Confession:

Now Anne Wife of Nathaniel Woodbridge Confessed, the Sin of Fornication, which she had heretofore committed but not with her present Husband. Now the Pastor proposed a Case to the Church which was Stayed after Evening Worship, for that End. Vizt: Whether they could se reason to think well of

¹The calling of Mr. Thatcher to the New North Church was the occasion of great controversy. He had been settled at Weymouth in 1707 and his removal to a more affluent parish in Boston was viewed as self-seeking on his part and unethical on the part of the Boston Church. The church itself was divided on the matter and the minority withdrew to form the New Brick or "Revenge" Church. Thatcher gradually won his way into the esteem of his contemporaries and served the Boston Church until his death on February 26, 1738/9. Cf. Sibley, IV, 308.

Sept. 11 the Administration of Baptism to Mary Cook of this Parish who had such a Wasting Consumption as that She was not Able, Either to Go or be carryed into Gods House, and was earnestly Desiring to Enter into Covenant and be Baptized — the Pastor proposed for the facilitating this Affair. That a
 [147] Number of the Brethren Deputed by the Church should be present to represent the Church in Admitting her to Church Estate, and to be Witnesses of her Baptism — also the Pastor preached a sermon leading to and clearing up such an Administration. This Case it was Pleaded was new, and some of the Brethren desired to Consider of it, till the next Lords Day, accordingly it was referred to that proposed time, now also the Pastor propounded her Desire then to Covenant and be Baptised.

Sept. 18 The Pastor, according to the Above Method proposed the Case, Severall of the Brethren Declared themselves Satisfyed, so as that they could see their way clear to Proceed — the Pastor Instanced in a Person who about seven years since, in our Brother Keysar's Dwelling house, renewed her Baptismal Covenant by the Ministry of the Reverend Mr. Noyes, and Mr. Corwin who was Present with him and many other of the Church whom Mr. Noyes called in Occasionally for that Affair — the Person was Sarah Gilloway who was very ill, and was about being carryed out of Town to seek relief and healing if it might be had; hence the Pastor Argued that there was an Instance much more doubtfull than the case he proposed, for Mr. Noyes never asked the sense of the Church nor so much as propounded her Desires to renew her Covenant, nor were there any Members appointed by the Church to represent them in that matter, and yet this Church never showed any Dissatisfaction in this Management.

An Account of
 the Widow Mary
 Cook, her private
 Baptism

Aged:
 70 years

Severall Persons were Moving to proceed to vote in the case proposed. Accordingly the Pastor putt it to vote in the Affirmative vizt: whether they could think well and approve of such an Administration and carryed — Generally if not Unanimously.

Then the Pastor desired the Church to Nominate certain Persons of their Body to represent them in this Affair, which some of the Brethren complied with and Mentioned severall, who were putt to vote and it was voted Unanimously, these should represent the Church.

Then the Pastor, and one of the Deacons vizt. Peter Osgood, with the Appointed Brethren, Went to the Dwelling house of the said Mary Cook, Informed her of their design, and the Pastor attended the Usual form of Admission and in propounding the Covenant to her in the Article of repentance inserted a clause of Confession and penitence, in regard of her having so long and while in a state of health neglected taking upon her the Baptismall Engagements to which with the rest of the Covenant She Answered audibly, Yea, tho' nigh to Death, and much Unable to Speak; Upon which she was received into Christ's fold, and was Baptised.

Leading to this was Prayer: She Expressed her great thanks for what God had thus Done for her soul. A considerable Number of the Church and of the Congregation were Present att the Administration.

Oct. 23
A Letter from Lynn
about Ordination

After Evening Worship was in publick performed the Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church, and Communicated to them a Letter sent from the First Church in Lynn; Inviting the Presence and Assistance of the Pastor and Messengers from this Church, in the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Nathaniel Henschman¹ as their Pastor and it was hereupon —

Voted: That this Church would send their Messengers with their Pastor, on this Occasion — accordingly

Voted: That our Brethren Deacon Peter Osgood, and Mr. Daniel Epes and Major Stephen Sewall; do company with the Pastor, and represent this Church as in said Letter, from said Church in Lynn, it is Desired.

¹Nathaniel Henschman (1699-1761), Harvard College, 1717; minister, Lynn, 1720-1761.

- Oct. 27 A Publick Thanksgiving was observed by Order of the Government. Now was Collected up a Contribution for the Poor. £13:2:10.
- Nov. 2 This is the Day Sett apart for the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. Nathaniel Henchman as Pastor of the Church of Christ in Lynn, but the Pastor being very Ill and the Weather Exceedingly Stormy he could not go nor did any of the Appointed Brethren go — the Weather being so very Stormy and they Aged Persons mostly. Neverthelesse the First Church in Reading and the two Presbyterian Churches in Marblehead were Present att Lynn, and separated the Said Reverend Person to the Pastorall Office, on said Day.
- Lynn Ordination by Reading Church and the two Churches in Marblehead:
- The First Church in Beverly and the Church in the Middle Precinct in Salem, were prevented going to Lynn, by the Storm, as well as this Church, so there were Just half the Churches sent to, present and Assisting.
- Nov. 20th Now Rebecca, Wife of James Grinslett, Confessed the Sin of Fornication (which she had formerly committed with her said Husband) in order to her renewal of Covenant in this Church, She having been Baptized in her infancy, in the Church att Reading.
- A Confession of Rebecca Grinslett
- 1721
- April 20 A Generall Fast was Observed by Order of the Government. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor. £7:7:0.
- April 23 The Pastor, after Divine service was performed, Stayed the Brethren of the Church, and proposed to them the desire of our Sister Mary Waters, the wife of Ezekiel Waters (who dwelleth in the Eastern Parish in this Towne) to be recommended to the Communion of the Eastern Church in this Towne; and be Dismissed from this Church to that, which was by the usual sign of Silence, consented to by the Brethren.
- Sister Mary Waters recommended:
- July 2 Now Susannah Prettice confessed her Error and rashness in partaking of the Elements of the Lords Supper last Communion Day, before she was admitted thereto — she had been propounded and
- Susannah Prittice, her Acknowledgment and Acceptance:

nothing was Objected Against her — and she thought the Pastor forgot to call her forth before Sacrament to Admitt her and so she thought she had better Communicate then not, though she Omitted her Duty, in not coming down to the Pastor, on the Saturday before, as she was by him ordered to do, which she forgott, and so she was not Admitted by him.

The Church Accepted her Acknowledgment, and received her to their Communion, as she had before this Entered into Covenant and was Baptized in the Church of Christ in the Village in this Town, and so had a Manifest right to our Communion.

[148]

July 13th

By Order of the Civill Government on —

A Generall Fast was observed here as well as throughout the Province — on the Account of the Small-Pox, which is, and Spreadeth in Boston, and threateneth the whole Land. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor. £5:5:9.¹

16th

Our Brother
Nathaniel Thomas's
recommendation.

After Evening worship in Publick was performed the Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church and Signified to them the Desire of Nathaniel Thomas — a member of this Church who now dwelleth in Plymouth and is Setled there, to be Recommended and Dismissed, to the Church of Christ, in said Plymouth, which the Church Consented to.

Aug. 23
A Town Fast in
Salem on our Lecture
Day on Acct. of
Excessive Unseason-
able Rain.

A Day of Fasting and Prayer was Observed and kept in the First Parish in this Town. It was propounded on Lordsday evening, by the Pastors to the four congregations in town to meet in this Parish on this Occasion and Joynly to Offer up fervent and humble prayers to Almighty God — on the Account of the late Excessive rain we have had whereby the hands of Men have been Sealed Up, and the

¹After a twenty-year respite a smallpox epidemic broke out in Boston in 1721; nearly six thousand persons were seized by the disease in Boston within the year and of that number nearly one thousand died. Cf. Justin Winsor, *The Memorial History of Boston*, Boston, 1881, II, 52.

fruitts of the Earth, and the treasures of the Sea (the fish) have been greatly Wasted and Indamaged that God will be graciously pleased, to give us fair weather, after the rain, to preserve the remains of the blessings of Goodnesse. And prayers were offered to God on these Accounts, also for the Land, for Great Brittain and the Church of God. Mr. Clark and Mr. Stanton Preached and Mr. Prescott and the Pastor prayed.

There was a very Great Assembly, the foul weather, partly Occasioning and causing it. We had no Contribution (as it is our Custom on such days to have) because we had part of Severall Assemblys in the Town and so could not tell how to distribute it, had we Collected it.

1721

Oct. 26th A Generall Thanksgiving was Observed by Order of the Civil Government.

Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor £13:13:9

1722

April 15th

Mary Gray her
Confession

Now Mary Gray — widow of Benjamin Gray, made a Publick Confession of her repeated Scandalous violations of the Seventh Commandment, with one person and Another, in Order to her Entering into Covenant with God in this Church; which Confession of hers was Accepted and herself Admitted into Church State, that Baptism might be Administered to her Self and Children.

April 19th

A 'Generall Fast, was observed by Order of the Government, here and through the Province.

Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor £11:3:0.

August 9th

A Generall Fast, was observed by the Order of the Government through the Province, on the Account of the Disturbances in the Eastern parts, by the Indians and on other Accounts.

There was now Collected by a Contribution for the Poor £6:14:4.

Nov. 8th A Publick Thanksgiving was Observed by the Order of the Government When there was Collected for the Poor by a Contribution £20:0:0.

[149]

1723
March 14 A General Fast Appointed by the Order of the Government was observed here. Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor £7:10:0.

Oct. 17th A Generall Fast — Appointed by the Civil Governmentment was Observed here — there was now Collected by a Contribution for the Poor £10:0:0.

Nov. 28th A Generall Thanksgiving Appointed by the Civil Government was Observed by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish, Nineteen Pound — ten Shillings and four pence.

£19:10:4.

Dec. 1st The Pastor after Evening Service was Concluded Stayed the Brethren of the Church and Communicated to them a Letter he had Received from the Second Church in Reading Inviting the presence and Assistance of the Pastor and Messengers of this Church in Council with Six other Churches to hear and Determine Matters of Difference Arisen between the Pastor and the Church and nine Brethren of that Church.

A Letter from the 2d. Church in Reading to this Church to Assist in Council.

The Pastor Putt it to vote in this Church Whether This Church would proceed upon the said Letter and Choose and Send Delegates And this was Voted in the Affirmative.

Then — It was putt to vote whether they would Desire and Choose their Brethren Deacon Peter Osgood and James Lindall to Accompany the Pastor and Represent them in the said Council.

And this was Voted in the Affirmative.

Now Also —

Our Brother Elvins and his wife Dismissed.

The Pastor Signified to the Church the Desire of our Brother Richard Elvins and our Sister Sarah Elvins his wife now Dwelling in the Eastern Parish in this Town to be Recommended and Dismissed to the Church in that Parish which request This Church consented to.

278 The Records of the First Church in Salem

also our Brother
Hayward and his
Wife Dismissed.

Also — some time after this our Brother Samuel Howard and Mary his wife were recommended and Dismissed to the Second Church in Reading.

Dec 3d The Pastor and Delegates of this Church Mett att the Second Parish in Reading and Joyned in Council with the Pastors and Delegates of Six other Churches. The Churches before they formed themselves into Council (by Choosing a Moderator) Resolved, that Unlesse the Pastor and Church, and also the Aggrieved Brethren the second Church in Reading would first Resolve and bind themselves by verbal Promise — to be Determined by the Result of this Council — That the Severall Elders and Messengers convened on this Occasion, would Return to their Severall Places of Abode; this was Resolved Nemine Contradicente and Accordingly proposed to the Partys Concerned who Severally consented thereto. Then The Elders and Delegates present formed themselves mor compleatly into a Council, by Choosing with an Unanimous Vote The Reverend Mr. Thomas Cheevor Moderator. Upon which the Council went into the Church and after the Moderator had Prayed, he called upon the Aggrieved Brethren to Bring forth their Allegations against their Pastor which was done and they were Read by the Moderator Publickly throughout, and then the First Article was read and, the Accusers required to give in their Evidence and Proof, which they did, after which the Pastor as he was called to do Made his Defence of himself and the Church gave full Evidence of his Innocence; then two of the Aggrieved Brethren withdrew their hand from the Paper Given into their Pastor, which contained their allegations against him. And said they had Agreed with their Pastor which he Confirmed — so they were Dismissed. After their Dismission, the rest of the Articles were read and proceeded upon, as in the first till all were Discussed, On which the Council adjourned to Mr. Putnams and there the Council voted upon the severall Charges advanced and the defence and an-

swers made to them with []¹ Deliberation the Deacons and Delegates beginning first to Speak and offer their Judgment. There was a result Drawn out of these votes which with the votes were Unanimously voted and Passed in the Council. Then forms of []² were drawn for the Aggrieved Brethren to sign and offer to the Injured Pastor and Church and Those again being []³ by the Aggrieved and being Accepted by the Pastor and the Church — Their Differences were thus Adjusted and all Partys being Exhorted to Live in Love and Peace — The Council Determined to Go into the Publick []⁴ which they did and the Reverend Mr. Barnard of Marblehead, having been Chosen Clerk of the Council Read the Result and then the 133 Psalm was Sung, after which the Reverend Mr. Hancock prayed and then the Moderator publickly Dissolved the Council.⁵

¹*Great* (?), manuscript torn.

²One word partially lost.

³*Signed* (?), manuscript torn.

⁴One word lost.

⁵The issues in this case are obscure. Mr. Putnam seems to have been a hardworking parish minister whose salary his congregation found difficult to raise. In 1722, he was "represented to be in great straits." Inadequate support led to tensions and on April 17, 1723, he appealed to the Bradford Association of Ministers for advice on "how to manage a Controversy between some of his church members." Laying the matter before the church proved fruitless and on December 3, 1723, an Ecclesiastical Council was convened which found the charges against him "groundless and unjust," although he "did use some sharpness, as to the extent of speech . . . which though he had great Provocation, yet had better have been let alone." Deacon Thomas Taylor and Captain Thomas Briant seem to have been the leaders of the opposition. The Council failed to restore peace but a second council two years later apparently restored harmony for Mr. Putnam continued to serve the church until his death on June 20, 1759. Cf. Sibley VI, 211-212. "Ecclesiastical Councils, No. 100," Dexter MSS.

God grant them to live in Peace therefore the
God of peace be with their Spirit.

[150]

1724

March 26 A General Fast Appointed by the Civil Government
was Observed here and through the Province. Now
there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor
Eleven Pound, two Shilings.

£11:2:0.

Nov. 5 A Publick Thanksgiving Appointed by the Civil
Government was Observed here — And there was
Collected by a Publick Contribution for the Poor of
this Church and Parish.

Seventeen Pound, Seven Shilings, and Six Pence.
£17:11:6.

1725

March 7 Margaret Skerry, having Long
Absented her Self from the Lords Table by reason of
a Melancholy and Doubting Spirit, which prevailed
upon her — this Day returned to our Com-
munion — in some Comfortable Manner. The Lord
Strengthen and Confirm her and Continue to Com-
for her.

Margarett Skerry
Dismissed.

Now also att her desire, she was recommended and
Dismissed to the Church in the Eastern Parish where
she Dwells — by the Consent of this Church, after
the Sacrament of the Holy Supper was Administered.

April 1 A General Fast. Appointed by the Civil Govern-
ment, was Observed here and through the Province.
Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the
Poor Thirteen Pound, one Shiling.

£13:1:0.

Oct. 28 A Publick Thanksgiving Appointed by the Civil Gov-
ernment was Observed here and there was collected
by a publick Contribution for the poor of this Church
and Parish Twenty five Pounds.

£25:0:0.

Octob. 31 Att the conclusion of the Evening Service, The
 Letter from 2d. Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church, and Com-
 Church Reading to municated to them a Letter he had Received from
 this Church to The Second Church in Reading, Inviting the pre-
 Assist Council sence and Assistance of the Pastor and Messengers
 of this Church in Council with nine other Churches,
 to Give Judgement and Advice in reference to the
 Administration of the said Church by way of Cen-
 sure upon Six of the Brethren thereof Upon which
 The Pastor putt it to vote, whether this Church
 would Proceed, upon the said Letter and Choose
 and Send Delegates which was voted in the Affirma-
 tive. Then it was putt to vote whether the Church
 did Desire and choose their Brethren Deacon Peter
 Osgood, Judge Lynde, James Lindall, and Thomas
 Barton, to Accompany the Pastor, and represent the
 Church, in the said Council which also was voted
 in the Affirmative.

1725 Accordingly

Nov. 2 The Pastor and Delegates of This Church — Mett
 and joyned with the Elders and Messengers of the
 other Nine Churches (Except one Pastor Mr. Fox¹
 who was sick) vizt. the 3d and 4th Churches in
 Salem, the 1st in Marblehead — the 2d in Beverly
 the 1st, 4th, and 5th in Boston — the Church in
 Woburn whose Pastor was Sick — and the Church
 in Weston — in all 10 Churches.

The Moderator was The Reverend Mr. Benjamin
 Colman.

The Clerks were The Reverend Messrs. Barnard
 and Williams. After an adjournment from the
 House of the Reverend Mr. Daniel Putnam where
 the Council formed themselves — to the Church
 and a long publick hearing of the Cause and Debates
 on all sides. The Council again adjourned to the
 Pastors House, where the case was proposed, consid-
 ered and Debated all night, after day light — and,
 Nothing being as yet perfected, a Motion was made

¹John Fox (1678-1756), Harvard College, 1698; settled
 Woburn, 1703-1756.

to the Pastor and his Church and the censured aggrieved brethren — whether themselves could not agree to Issue their cause — this Motion was made by some private members of the Council — and the Motion took and Issued in an Agreement made, consented to, signed, interchanged — and Delivered by Each Party — and accepted, and the Censured Brethren were restored upon it, and, the Council, with the Consent of Mr. Putnam, his Church and the Censured Brethren — voted to Burn all papers committed to them on this cause as also the Private minutes of the scribes and others, and then, the Severall Members of this Council returned to their respective Dwellings, and thus Dissolved this Council.
Amen.

[151]

1726

March 22

A paper Intituled a Resolve, was Read att a Meeting of this First Parish in Salem, as it was before read to the Church and Congregation, on the Lordsday July 15th 1725 by Deacon Peter Osgood, both which Publick Readings thereof, was expresly ordered by the Generall Court or Assembly of this Province.

The Resolve for the Memorableness of it is here Recorded — vizt.

Att a Great and Generall Court or Assembly for his Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, begun and held att Boston, upon Wednesday, May 26th, 1725.

The Following Resolve passed both Houses, and was consented to by his Honour the Lieutenant Governour, vizt:

Upon Serious consideration of the great distresses that many of the Ministers of the Gospel within this Province, labour Under with respect to their Support or Maintenance, their Salary being generally paid in the Publick Bills of Creditt of this Province; altho' Many of the Ministers Contracted with their People, in the time when Silver Money passed in

Payment; and the Necessarys of Life, such as cloathing, provisions, together with Labour and other things, now demand so much more of the Bills of Creditt, than heretofore.

Resolved. That it is the Indispensable duty of the Severall Towns, Precincts, and Parishes of this Province to make such Additions to the Salaries or Maintenance of their Respective Ministers, as may honourably Support and Encourage them in their work, and therein to have regard, as well to the time of the contract between the Minister and People, and the specie therein Mentioned; as to the great and growing difference in the value of the Bills of Creditt, from what they have sometimes been. And This Court do therefore most earnestly recommend, the Speedy and cheerfull practice of this duty, to the Severall Congregations, and Religious Assemblys, within this Province; and that This Resolve be publickly Read, on the Next Lordsday, after the receipt hereof in the Afternoon, before the Congregation be Dismissed. And att the Anniversary Meeting of the Several Towns, or Precincts, in the Province, in the Month of March next. —

By order of the Great and General Court or Assembly.

Josiah Willard.
Secretary.

Vera Copia, Exam. and comp.

March 24 A Generall Fast, appointed by the Civill Government was Observed here and through the Province. Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor, Nineteen Pounds, Six Shilings, and four pence and half peny. £19:6:4½

Nov. 10 A Publick Thanksgiving Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here and through the Province. Now was collected, by a Contribution, for the Poor Twenty Pounds, Nine Shilings, and Ten Pence.

£20:9:10

[152]

1727

March 30 A Generall Fast Appointed by the Civil Government, was observed here and through the Province. Now there was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Flock. Nineteen Pound, one shiling and Nine Pence.

£19:1:9.

Ordination att
Ipswich First Church

Oct. 15 After Evening Service, the Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church and Read to them a Letter from the First Church of Christ in Ipswich Inviting the Pastor and Messengers of this Church to assist in the Ordination of Mr. Nathaneel Rogers a Colleague Pastor to his Father, the Reverend Mr. John Rogers, in that Church.¹ Then — two votes were called viz.

1. That this Church will send their Messengers as Desired, on the Specified Occasion.
2. That our Brethren, Deacon Peter Osgood, Samuel Brown, Benjamin Lynde Senior, James Lindall and Thomas Barton do represent this Church, on the Abovesaid Ocasioin.

Both Voted in the Affirmative.

Oct. 18 The Pastor, and two of the Messengers abovenamed (the other three being providentially hindred) went to Ipswich — and there Mett the Elders and Messengers of Severall other Churches, which Convened Upon the Same Account and Ordained Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, Colleague Pastor with his Father the Reverend Mr. John Rogers. The Lord made them both very Great Blessings. A Publick Meeting was held in the Afternoon of this Day, (being Saturday) in the House of God, partly on Account of the Sudden and we fear Unnaturall Death of our Sister Hannah Moses a Member of this Church for Many years past also partly on Account of a terrible Earthquake which was on Lordsday night last — at half an hour after Ten; Both Parishes Mett on this occasion and

Nov. 4
Publick Meeting
on account of the
Earthquake

¹Nathaniel Rogers (1701-1775), Harvard College, 1721; settled Ipswich, 1726-1775.

there was a vast assembly. The Pastor preached from 1. Peter 4. 17. 18. The Lord hear us!

- Nov. 9 A Generall Thanksgiving was observed here and through the Province, by the Order of the Civil Government. The Eastern Parish in this Town mett with us, this Day.

Now there was collected by a Contribution for the Poor, Thirty one Pounds, Seven Shilings, of which Fourty Shilings — was particularly directed to one Single Person.

£31:7:0

Now Six Pounds was putt into the hands of the Deacons in the Lower Parish, who Joyned with us in Contribution — to be Distributed to the Poor of that Church and Parish.

- Dec. 21 A Publick Fast, was Appointed by the Civil Government on Account of the late Surprising and Dreadfull Earthquake, which happened on the night between the 29th and 30th Days of October last past, about half an hour after ten-clock, and which lasted, that is the first shock, about 6 Minutes, att least in this Town, and which was followed by many others during that night — and afterwards; Especially in the Northern Parts of this Province till this time. This Extended as we have been informed as far as Pensilvania Southwards, and how far Northwards we cannot tell, only we are informed as far as any of our Northeast Settlements reach.¹ This Day was observed by us, and the Eastern Parish in this Town who Joyned with us. Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor. Twenty one Pounds, Seven Shilings and Nine Pence.

£21:7:9.

¹The shock seems to have been the most violent at Newbury and about the mouth of the Merrimack River “The extent of this shock seems to have been from the Kennebeck to the Delaware, although in both of these places the shock was slight. It was felt by vessels at sea off the coast, and also at the extreme western settlements, but its true extent northward and southeast we have no means of knowing.” W. T. Brigham, *Historical Notes on the Earthquakes of New England*, Boston, 1871, p. 6.

It is to be Observed that a Fifth Part of the Contribution is Given to the Deacons, in the Lower Parish which Mett and Joyned with us in Contribution to be Distributed, to the Poor of that Parish and Church.

[153]

1728

March 21 A Publick Fast was observed here, and through the Province by the Appointment of the Civil Government. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Flock. Twenty Pound, Eight Shilings, and one Peny.

£20:8:1.

May 12 After Evening Service was Concluded the Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church, and Communicated to them. Three Letters, vizt.

1. One from the Brethren of the Eastern Church in this Town, Praying the Presence and Assistance of the Pastor and such Messengers of this Church, as it should think fitt to Send on this Occasion which is to attend and Assist the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. William Jenison¹ as Pastor of that Flock and Parish, May 22 Inst. Upon reading which, the Pastor putt it to vote,

Voted: Whether this Church, would comply with this Invitation, voted in the Affirmative — Again

Voted: Whether this Church would send our Brethren Samuel Brown Deacon Osgood, Thomas Barton, James Lindall, John Nutting, and Samuel Ruck to represent them on this occasion. Voted in the Affirmative.

2. The Next Letter was from the Pastor² and Church in Sandwich, Inviting the Pastor and one Messenger

¹William Jennison (1706/7-1750), Harvard College, 1724; settled East (Second) Church, Salem, 1728-1736.

²Benjamin Fessenden (1701-1746), Harvard College, 1718; settled Sandwich, 1722-1746. He fell under a "Matter of Scandal" which resulted in several ecclesiastical councils from 1726 to 1734 when he finally presented a confession. Cf. Sibley, VI, 244-245.

of this Church, to Joyn with Those of other Churches in Council — there on May 15th inst. The Pastor informed the Brethren of this Church, himself could not go as he had told the Pastor of that Church — that the other Pastors in this neighbourhood had wrote to the said Pastor and Church, they could not attend them for Severall reasons and the other Party in said church had not Joyned in Calling this Council upon which, it was voted by this Church that they should not send any Messenger on this Occasion.

3. The Third and Last Letter was from the Reverend Mr. Daniel Greenleaf¹ Pastor of the West Church in Yarmouth, Inviting the Pastor and one Messenger of this Church to Joyn in Council with those of other Churches there on May 22d Inst. to Judge of Matters relating to himself and his Church and Parish — The Pastor informed the Brethren of this Church himself could not go; there was but one Party called this Council — the Pastors in this Neighbourhood had sent Mr. Greenleaf word they could not now come, and this is the Day of the Ordination below. Upon all which, It was voted by this Church — that they should not send any Messenger on this Occasion. These cases were Pityed but we could not help them att least now — Since not all Partys agreed to call in help. Then the Brethren of this Church were Dismissed.

May 22
 Ordination of
 Mr. Jenison

The Pastor and some of the Messengers chosen, Went down to the Place appointed for Meeting in the Eastern Parish in this Town where they Mett the Elders and Messengers of Several other Churches, which convened upon the Same Account and ordained Mr. William Jenison, Pastor of the Eastern Church and Parish in this Town. The Lord make him and

¹Daniel Greenleaf (1679/80-1763), Harvard College, 1699; schoolmaster, Portsmouth, New Hampshire, 1701-1703; settled Isles of Shoals, 1705-1706, Yarmouth, 1708-1726; resided in Boston, 1727-1763. The controversy seems to have arisen over non-payment of his salary since the Ecclesiastical Council "bore an honorable Testimony to his Worth." Cf. Sibley IV, 472-476.

his People Mutually very Great Blessings. Mr. Clark preached, Mr. Blower gave the Charge, Mr. Barnard gave the right hand of Fellowship, and the Pastor of this Church prayed.

June 2
Recommendation of
Severall Members
of this Church

The Request of the following Members of this Church vizt. John Beckett and Susannah his Wife, Elizabeth, wife of Malachy Foot; Lydia, wife of William Murray; Sarah, wife of Elias Lowwater; The widows, Elizabeth Tapleigh; Jane Turner; and Kezia Mazury; Mary, Daughter of Jacob Manning; Mary Daughter of Stephen Daniel; Hannah Daughter of the Widow Masters; and Margaret Daughter of Thomas Beadle; to be Recommended to the Pastoral Care and Brotherly Watch and Communion, of the Church in the Eastern Parish in this Town, was Moved after Communion to the Church and Granted, the Request of Martha wife of Nathaniel Silsby; and Anstis wife of John Crowningshield, Members of this Church, to be recommended to the Pastoral Care, and Brotherly Watch, and Communion of the Church in the Eastern Parish in this Town, was moved to this Church, after Communion, and Granted to them.

To the Eastern
Church in this Town
July 7th

[154]
1728

Sept. 1
Warwick Palfry and
Wife and another
Recommended

The Request of Warwick Palfry, and Elizabeth his Wife, and of John Crowell Members of this Church, to be recommended to the Pastoral Care, and Brotherly Watch and communion of the Church in the Eastern Parish in this Town; was Moved to the Church after Communion, and Granted to them.

Nov 7

A Generall Thanksgiving, being Appointed by the Civil Government was Observed, here and through the Land, now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor. Twenty three Pounds, Eight Shilings, and Six pence — whereof fourty Shilings, was directed by the Contributor thereof, to be Distributed to the Poor in the Eastern Parish.

£23:8:6.

1729

March 20 A Publick Fast Appointed by the Civil Government was Observed here and through the Province. Now was collected by this Parish — for the Poor — Twenty three Pounds, Seventeen Shilings and Ten pence.

£23:17:10.

Nov 17 After the publick Worship was ended, the Pastor Stayed the Brethren of the Church and Propounded to them, that they would meet publickly in this house, on the 6th of August next, to give thanks to God, for his great goodnese — in bringing our fathers hither, and Planting them as a Church and continuing it till this time, on which Sixth day of August next one hundred years will be accomplished and the Second Commenced. The Church now desired to Speak their mind for or against it as they Inclined, but one Spake who was for it the rest now silent, when therefore I told I shuld, because it was our Custom, take as consenting — I suppose they were all for it, by what I had heard, for I had propounded this matter (not only to the neiboring Pastors, who much approved it, which I told this Church) but to the people in private conversation, so that they had some Expectation of this publick proposal.

August 3 I propounded publickly to the Congregation what the Church had Agreed as above, and prayed their presence and Assistance, on the Said Day. also att this time the Eastern Church and Parish in this Town were present.

1729

August 6 In pursuance of the above vote of the Church, The Church and Parish in considerable Number, with all the Neighbouring Pastors, of this Association, And, some Number of the Neiboring Congregations mett att the first Church in this Town — att Eleven Clock A.M.

This Churches
first Century's
Jubilee.

The Publick, Worship began, with Singing the 122d, Psalm then, the Reverend Mr. John Barnard (Pastor of the first Church in Marblehead) Made a very excellent and adapted prayer upon which the 107th Psalm, the three first Stanzas in it were sung.

Next the Pastor of this Church preached on the 78 Psalm, the first seven verses, after which was sung the 44th Psalm the 1, 2, 6, and 7th verses after which the Reverend Mr. Benjamin Prescott, Pastor of the third Church, in this Town prayed — short but full. Next we sang as a proper close, the 100th Psalm, the long meeter — in the close the Pastor Pronounced the Blesing. The Lord Accept the offering of thanks we have made. Amen.

1729

August 31st

After the Publick Service was Ended, The Pastor Stayed the Church and Propounded to the Brethren that they would take into their Consideration the Request of the Church of Christ in Stonham that the Pastor and Messengers of this Church in Salem would meet att Stonham on Wednesday the tenth day of September next Ensuing the Date of their Letter, And Joyn with the Elders and Messengers of other Churches in the Ordination of the

[155] Reverend James Osgood,¹ Elected by that Church and Town to be their Pastor.

The Letter was read to the Church by the Pastor. After which the Pastor first propounded the desire of the said James Osgood, our Brother, to be recommended by Us to the said Church in Stonham and Especially to the Churches to be Convened for his Ordination, to the Gospel Ministry and In Compliance with the said desire, the Said James Osgood our Brother be recommended as above. Then

Voted: That this Church, Do Comply with the desire of the Said Church in Stonham, and send their Messengers on this Occasion. Also

Voted That this Church, Do Comply with the desire of the Said Church in Stonham, and send their Messengers on this Occasion. Also

Voted That our Brethren Deacon Peter Osgood and John Nutting, represent this Church on the Same Occasion.

Sept. 10 The Pastor and Delegates of this Church went to Stonham where they mett the Elders and Messengers

¹James Osgood (1705-1745), Harvard College, 1724; settled in Stoneham, 1729-1746. He was the son of Deacon Peter Osgood of the First Church in Salem.

The Reverend
Mr. James Osgood's
Ordination att
Stonham.

of five other Churches, viz: The Third Church in this Town — the first and second Churches in Reading, the Church in Charlestown, and the Church in Malden; after the Council was formed and the Reverend Mr. Richard Brown the Pastor of the first Church in Reading was Chosen Moderator, Inquiry was made into the Steps The Town and Church in Stonham had taken towards a Settlement of the Gospel Ministry among them, and it was found they had Acted regularly; After which Mr. James Osgood's Recommendation from this Church was Read and much Approved —

Then the foresaid Mr. Brown was Chosen by the Council to give the Charge, all the Elders present to Assist in Laying on their hands; Next the Pastor of this Church was Chosen to Give the Right hand of Fellowship; Mr. Prescott of this Town preached. Mr. Emerson of Malden, made the first prayer, Mr. Abbot of Charlestown made the prayer after Sermon — Mr. Osgood named and read the Psalm, and closed all with pronouncing the Blessing. No objection against our proceedings were made either in private or publick. God Blese the Pastor and little Flock.

Nov. 13 A Publick Thanksgiving, being Appointed by the Civil Government, was observed here, and through this Province. Now there was Collected by a Contribution of this first Parish in Salem, for its poor Twenty Seven Pounds, Seven Shilings, and four pence. £27:7:4.

Dec. 7 After we had Sung an Hymn at the Lords Table, The Pastor communicated to the Church a Letter, from the First Church in Beverly, Inviting the Presence, and Assistance of the Pastor and Delegates of this Church, on the 10th Inst. in the Ordination of Mr. Joseph Champney,¹ their Pastor Elect.

Voted: That this Church will send their Delegates on this Occasion.

¹James Champney (1704-1773), Harvard College, 1721; settled in Beverly, 1729-1773.

Voted: That our Brethren, Deacon Peter Osgood and Thomas Barton, represent this Church, and accompany the Pastor, in the Said Ordination att Beverly.

10 The Pastor and Delegates of this Church Went to Beverly, where They Mett the Elders and Messengers of Eight other Churches, vizt. The other three Churches in this Town, The First Church in Marblehead. (The Second Church there, came not, for the Pastor thereof, was not free to Act upon his Letter of Invitation.)

[156]

1729

Dec. 10 The Second Church in Beverly, the Church in Wenham, the Church in Manchester, and the Church in Cambridge.

Ordination in the first church in Beverly:

The Council was formed, and the Reverend Mr. John Barnard, Pastor of the first church in Marblehead was Chosen Moderator; after which due Inquiry was made into the Steps taken towards the businesse of the Day, which being found regular The Council Determined to Go into the Church in which it was appointed — That the Pastor of this Church Should make the publick prayer, The Reverend Mr. Appleton of Cambridge, Preached. The Reverend Mr. Barnard Gave the Charge, with whom the Reverend Mr. Cheever of Manchester, Mr. Appleton, Mr. Chipman and the Pastor of this Church Joyned in the Imposition of hands. The Reverend Mr. Chipman Gave the Right hand of Fellowship to the Reverend Mr. Joseph Champney, who was thus ordained Pastor; He Named and Read the Psalm and Pronounced the Blessing.

The Lord Give the Blessing to the Pastor and Flock.

1730

April 2 A publick Fast was observed here and through this Province by order of the Civil Government. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor. Twenty Two Pounds, four Shilings, and three pence. £22:4:3.

Nov. 12 A Publick Thanksgiving was Observed here, and through the Province. Now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Parish Thirty two Pounds, thirteen Shilings and Eight Pence.
£32:13.8.

1731

March 25 A Generall Fast was Observed here and through the Province, by Order of the Civil Government. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Flock, Twenty Six Pounds, Nineteen Shilings and one Peny.
£26:19:1.

Paul Langden
and Wife

April 4 After Communion this day Paul Langden and Mary his Wife, (being Removed to Hopkinton) att their Desire, were recommended and Dismissed to the Pastorall Care and Communion of the Church in that Town.

August 15 After Evening Service, was Performed, The Pastor Desired the Church to Stay, that he might communicate to them a Letter from the Pastor and Brethren of the Second Church in Lynn,¹ Signifying they Are Inclined, and have Consented to a Separation, If a Council May advise thereto. Wherefore they Desired that the Pastor of this Church and a Delegate from it may Meet the Pastors and Delegates of Some other Churches on the 19th Inst. to Advise them in said Affair Agreeably.

A Letter from the
Second Church in
Lynn

[157]

1731

August 15 After the Letter was Read, It was Putt to vote vizt. Whether, This Church would Accept this Invitation

¹The Second Church of Lynn, later the First Church of Lynnfield, was gathered on August 17, 1720. In 1737 petitioners from the First and Second Churches of Lynn were permitted to hold separate worship but the Third Church (later First Congregational Parish of Saugus) was not authorized until 1749. Cf. H. F. Worthey, *An Inventory of Records of the Particular (Congregational) Churches of Massachusetts*, Cambridge, 1970, pp. 333-338; 561-562.

so far, as to Chuse and Send a Delegate on this Occasion; If It Did, It was Desired they would Signify their Minds, by Lifting Up their Right hands, but a few hands were Uplifted. Then the Pastor Acquainted the Church of the Reasonableness of their fully Declaring themselves, and also the Duty of fellowship of Churches and observed the Difficultys, which possibly might arise from a refusal to Afford Assistance and finding no one person Spoke either for or Against, Complying with the Letter, he putt it in the negative, when a very few hands were lifted up.

Upon the whole, the Pastor Declared as far as he Could Observe, not a Majority of Hands were held up in the Affirmative, tho' but a very few in the Negative, therefore he Declared he could proceed no farther and told the Brethren, that having nothing farther to Offer, they were Dismissed.

Oct. 3 Samuel Woodwell's
Dismission

After Communion this Day, Samuel Woodwell, (being removed to Hopkinton) Att his Desire, was Recommended to the Pastoral Care, and Communion of the Church in that Town.

Oct. 28

A Publick Thanksgiving was Observed here, and through the Province, Now there was collected by a Contribution, for the Poor of this Parish, Thirty Two Pounds, Seven Shilings and ten pence.
£32:7:10.

1732.

April 6th

A General Fast was Appointed by the Government, to be Observed through the Province; and Accordingly was observed here. Now there was collected for the Poor of this Parish and Flock Twenty Two Pounds, and Eighteen Shilings.
£22:18:0.

Oct. 26

A Publick Thanksgiving being Appointed by the Government, was Observed here this Day. Now there was Collected by Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Twenty one Pounds, Thirteen Shilings, and three pence.

A Considerable Number of the People were Absent.

£21:13:3.

Jan. 7 After we had Sung an Hymn att the Lords Table, A Letter from the Church in Wenham for the Ordination of Mr. John Warren the Pastor Communicated to the Brethren a Letter from the Church of Christ in Wenham Inviting the Presence and Assistance of the Pastor, and Delegates of this Church on the 10th Inst. in the Ordination of Mr. John Warren¹ their Pastor Elect, on which this Church Passed two Votes.

Voted: That this Church Complyeth with the Desire of the Church in Wenham, and will send their Messengers on this Occasion.

Voted: That our Brethren Deacon Peter Osgood, Benjamin Lynde Senior, and Thomas Barton do represent this Church, and Accompany the Pastor att the abovesaid Ordination.

[158]

1732

Jany. 10th The Pastor and Delegates of this Church went to Wenham where they mett Six other Churches, And all the Pastors of them were Present, but the Reverend Mr. John Chipman, Pastor of the Second Church in Beverly, (who was Lame so as to be Unable to go abroad on this Occasion.)

The other Churches were the First, Second, Third, in Salem, the First and Third in Ipswich and the First in Beverly. The Councill was Formed, when the Reverend Mr. John Rogers Elder Pastor of the First Church in Ipswich was Chosen Moderator. After which Due Inquiry was made Into the Steps taken by the Church and Congregation in Wenham towards the Settlement of Mr. John Warren their Pastor Elect, which being found regular, and his answer to their Invitation Exhibited and Approved. Upon the Churches Motion and Desire that the Councill would Proceed. they Determined to Go

¹John Warren (1704-1749), Harvard College, 1725; settled in Wenham, 1733-1749.

The Ordination
of the Reverend
Mr. John Warren att
Wenham.

into the Church, in which the Reverend Mr. Benjamin Prescott, began with Prayer, The Reverend Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth Preached, the Reverend Mr. John Rogers Gave the Charge, with whom the Reverend Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth, Benjamin Prescott, Peter Clark, Nathanael Rogers, and the Pastor of this Church Joyned in the Imposition of Hands and Prayer. Then the Pastor of this Church Gave the Right Hand of Fellowship to the Reverend Mr. John Warren, Now Ordained, who named the Psalm and Pronounced the Blessing.

The Good Lord Give the Blessing to the Pastor and Flock.

1733

March 29

A Generall Fast being Appointed by the Civil Government was observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Parish and Flock Sixteen Pounds and Five Pence.

£16:0:5.

April 29

Benjamin Lamberts
Confession

After Sermon P.M. our Brother Benjamin Lambert Publickly before the Church and Congregation Acknowledged his Violation of the Seventh Commandment, on Account of the Fornication he Committed with her who now is his Wife, Appearing in the Birth of his Child about four Months after Marriage. Against his confession, which was written and read, and subscribed by his own hand no objection was made — Upon which Baptism was administered to his Child.

Nov. 22

A Publick Thanksgiving was observed here and Throughout the Province, by order of the Civil Government. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Fourteen Pounds, Nineteen Shilings, and Six Pence.

£14:19:6.

1733/4

Jan. 6

Sarah Wife of
Miles Ward Senior
Recommended &c.

After Communion, Sarah the Wife of Miles Ward Senior Dwelling in the Eastern Parish, (where she Usually attends the Publick Worship of God) att her Desire, was recommended and Dismissed to the

Pastoral Care of Communion of the Church in the said Eastern Parish in this Town.

Now also after Evening Service was over the Desire of Sarah the Wife of John Ewels formerly Sarah Lambert who had, att Boston where she has Dwelt for severall years past, Committed the Sin of Fornication with him, who now is her Husband, was propounded, that by Confession of that Her Sin, publickly, She might be restored to this Church.

Sarah Ewels
Confession

Jan. 13 The Said Sarah Ewel Presented herself Before the Church and Congregation, after Sermon in the Afternoon, and her Confession was Publickly read as she had brought it written and Signed by Her — And no Objection being made Against It or Her, She was Received to the Charity and Communion of this Church.

[159]

1734

April 4 A Generall Fast being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here, and through the Province. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Parish and Flock Eleven Pounds, one Shiling and Six Pence.

£11:1:6.

Brother Swinnerton's
Recommendation

July 7 After Communion, our Brother John Swinnerton and Margarette his Wife, with Mercy, their Daughter, who Dwell att Boston, and are like to Continue there, were, att their Request, Recommended and Dismissed to the Pastorall care and Communion of the Third Church in Boston.

Oct. 7 A Publick Thanksgiving was by the Order of the Civil Government Observed, and through the Province. Now was collected here, by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church, and Parish Twenty two Pounds, Twelve Shilings and Ten Pence. The Lord be Praised who has raised our Charity. May it yet Abundantly Increase.

£22:12:10.

Dec 1 After Communion this Day, The Pastor Propounded to the Brethren of this Church whether this Church would think it Suitable to Sett apart a Day this Week for Fasting and Prayer, for the Revivall of Religion in the World and this Land and This Neighbourhood and Especially on Account of the Circumstances of this Society. He Informed them that the Neighbouring Pastors, Some of them had Agreed to keep such a Day If their People would Joyn with them therein — And Accordingly In some Congregations They had kept religiously Such a Day. And He believed were ready to Joyn with us, and Give us their Assistance. If we thought proper to Imitate Their Example. He Desired that next Wednesday night be observed for this purpose, if they Thought it convenient, And that the Brethren would speak their minds. Upon which Deacon Osgood and Severall others said they believed it would be Pleasing to God and Acceptable To This Church and People to Observe Such a Day here, and on Wednesday Next, Desiring the Pastor would Putt it to vote. Accordingly The Pastor Putt it Thus.

Question

Brethren, If it be your Desire, That Wednesday next be Sett apart by this Church For Fasting and Prayer to God, on Account of the revival of Living Religion, which is Dying in the World and this Land and Neighbourhood, and Especially on Account of the Circumstances of this Society and that I may Desire the Congregation (after afternoon Service) to be Present and Joyn with you in the said Day. Be Pleased to Signify it by the sign of Lifting Up Your Right Hand. Accordingly It was voted

Voted: By the Brethrens Lifting Up their Right Hand, As it Appeared Universally. The Pastor according to the Above vote informed the Congregation of the Churches vote and Desire and Prayed their Countenance, Company and Assistance.

Dec. 4th This Day was Observed as Agreed above A. M. Mr. Warren Prayed. The Pastor Preached from 80 Psalm 14 and closed with Prayer and Asking the

Divine Blessing and P. M. Mr. Champney Prayed, and Mr. Clark Preached from 32 Jeremiah 39. An Excellent Sermon and closed with Prayer. We sang the 85 Psalm and So to the End. Mr. Clark Asked the Blessing on the Day. A Fair Warm Day tho' Stormy in the Night. A Great Concourse of People from the Neighbourhood, and a vast Assembly.

Mr. Chipman was Ill, as was Mr. Wigglesworth of which they Sent us word and that their hearts were with Us, Asking a Blessing on this Day and Desiring our Remembrance of them in our Prayers.

[160]

1735

March 27 A Generall Fast being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed through the Province now there was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Parish and Flock Fourteen Pounds, Ten Shilings & Six Pence.

£14:10:6.

Nov. 13 A Publick Thanksgiving, was Appointed to be Observed Throughout the Province, by the Civil Government, and was observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church, and Parish Thirteen Pounds, Seven Shilings, and Nine Pence.

£13:7:9.

Jan. 8 A Generall Fast being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here, and through the Province on Account of the Sore Sicknesse in the Land. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish. Eleven Pounds, Thirteen Shilings and Nine Pence.

£11:13:9.

1736

April 1 A General Fast, Being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here, and through the Province, Now was Collected, by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Ten Pounds, Four Shilings, and Eight Pence.

£10:4:8.

- April 4 Paul Raymond, and Tabitha his Wife, having been Removed to Bedford was Recommended, and Dismissed to the Church in Bedford, after Communion This Day.
- Nov. 11 A Publick Thanksgiving was Appointed to be Observed, throughout the Province, by the Civil Government, and was observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Fourteen Pounds, Six Shilings and Ten Pence.
£14:6:10.
- 1737
March 31 A General Fast Being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here, and through the Province, Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor, of this Church and Parish Twelve Pounds.
£12:0:0.
- Nov. 17 A Publick Thanksgiving being Appointed by the Civil Government was Observed here and Through the Province, Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Eighteen Pounds, Thirteen Shilings and Eight Pence.
£18:13:8. [161]
- 1738
April 13 A General Fast, being Appointed by the Civil Government, was observed here and through the Province. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Seventeen Pounds, Three Shilings.
£17:3:0.
- Aug. 27 Eunice the Wife of Henry Coffin, Acknowledged her Violation of the Seventh Commandment In the too Early Birth of their Child after their Marriage, and hereupon. She was now recieved to the Charity and Communion of the Church.
- Nov. 23 A Publick Thanksgiving was Appointed to be observed throughout the Province, by the Civil Government, and was observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution, for the Poor of this Church and Parish Eighteen Pounds, Three Shilings.
£18:3:0.

1739

March 29 A General Fast being Appointed by the Civil Government was observed here, and through the Province, Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish.

£13:7:11.

Nov. 29 A Publick Thanksgiving, was Appointed to be Observed Throughout the Province, by the Civil Government And was Observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish.

£15:0:0.

1740

March 27 A General Fast, being Appointed by the Civil Government, was Observed here and through the Province, Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Twelve Pounds, Three Shilings, and five Pence.

£12:3:5.

30 Sarah Shattuck Confessed the Sin of Fornication which was Accepted by the Church and her Child was Baptised.

Nov. 13 A Publick Thanksgiving, was Appointed by the Civil Government to be observed thro' the Province, which was observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor, of this Church and Parish Fifteen Pounds, Four Shilings and Six Pence.

£15:4:6.

[162]

1740

Feb. 26 A General Fast on Account of the Warr Between Great Brittain and Spain was Appointed by the Civil Government and Observed here, and thro' the Province. As it is Appointed to be thro' Great Brittain. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Thirteen Pounds, Seventeen Shilings, and Seven Pence.

£13:17:7.

1741

April 23 A General Fast was Appointed by the Civil Government and Observed Here and Through the Province. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Fifteen Pounds, Six Shilings and Two Pence.

£15:6:2.

Nov. 12 A Publick Thanksgiving was Appointed by the Civil Government to be Observed throughout this Province, and Accordingly Observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Nineteen Pounds.

£19.

1742

April 8 A General Fast was Appointed by the Civil Government And Observed here and thro' the Province. Now was collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish Seventeen Pounds.

£17.

Nov. 11 A Publick Thanksgiving was Appointed by the Civil Government, to be Observed thro' the Province, which Accordingly was Observed here. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish £ —.

Ebenezer Felton and Jehoadan his Wife, having Sometime past Removed with their Family to a Place called New Salem, where there is a Prospect of a Church's being Gathered, Sent their Desire to be Dismissed from this Church In Order to their Joyning with Members of other Churches in Gathering a Church. Accordingly, The Pastor of this Church, Staying the Church, They were Recommended, for the End Abovesaid.

[163]

1743

March 24 A General Fast was observed here, and through the Province, Being Appointed by the Civil Government. Now was Collected by a Contribution for the Poor of this Church and Parish [£—].

Oct. 2d Deborah Goodale, Widow of Isaac Goodale, Deceased And Rebecca, Wife of Jeremiah Meachum. Both Being Some Years Since Removed to a Place called New Salem, where a Church Is Gathered, and a Pastor Setled,¹ Att their Desire, (Manifested In Writing) were Recommended, to the Said Church in New Salem.

[*Remainder of page blank*]

[*Pages 164-199 blank*]

¹Samuel Kendall (1708-1792), Harvard College, 1731; settled in New Salem, 1742-1792.

304 The Records of the First Church in Salem

[200]

A Continuation of the Record of Baptism Performed by Samuel Fisk Pastor,
In The First Church in Salem. The Last Baptism being Performed on The
21 of Sept. 1740. Page 74.¹

1740

Oct. 5	<i>m</i>	Samuel of <i>Samuel</i> ² Fisk, Pastor <i>Anna</i>	8	<i>f</i>	Bethia of Jonathan Archer Junior <i>Abigail</i>
12	<i>m</i>	William of <i>Daniel</i> Needham <i>Isabella</i>	29	<i>m</i>	Nathaniel of <i>Abijah</i> Estes <i>Mary</i>
19	<i>f</i>	Margarett of <i>James</i> Cook <i>Rachel</i>	Apr. 19	<i>f</i>	Rachel Bates, Adult
	<i>f</i>	Mary of Robert Peal <i>Mary</i>		<i>m</i>	Ebenezer of <i>Samuel</i> Symonds <i>Susannah</i>
Nov. 2	<i>m</i>	Gedney of Nathl. King <i>Mary</i>	May 10	<i>m</i>	David of <i>Benjamin</i> Gillingham, deceased <i>Elizabeth</i>
16	<i>m</i>	Samuel of Jonathan Pease <i>Sarah</i>	24	<i>f</i>	Mary of Tobias Davis Junior <i>Lydia</i>
23	<i>m</i>	Benjamin of <i>Daniel</i> King <i>Elizabeth</i>	31	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>John</i> Emerton <i>Mary</i>
	<i>f</i>	Elizabeth of Nathl. Archer <i>Hannah</i>		<i>f</i>	Elizabeth Thomas Vinning Junior <i>Sarah</i>
Dec. 7	<i>f</i>	Mary of <i>Samuel</i> Clemons <i>Elizabeth</i>	June 13	[]	of William Odle [] of Tobias Davis Junior <i>Lydia</i>
	<i>f</i>	Sarah of <i>John</i> Cloutman			
	<i>f</i>	Mary <i>Sarah</i>			
Jan. 4	<i>f</i>	Sarah of <i>Joseph</i> Pickering <i>Sarah</i>	28	<i>m</i>	William of <i>Jeffry</i> Lang <i>Hannah</i>
Feb. 8	<i>f</i>	Hannah of William Pickering <i>Eunice</i>		<i>m</i>	Gabriel of Edmund Munnion <i>Mercy</i>
22	<i>m</i>	Charles of <i>Charles</i> King Junior <i>Sarah</i>	July 18	<i>f</i>	Mary Mazury, Adult
	<i>f</i>	Lydia of <i>Joseph</i> Brown Junior <i>Lydia</i>		<i>m</i>	John of <i>Samuel</i> Cook <i>Abigail</i>
			26	<i>m</i> ³	Sarah of Samuel Oakman <i>Rebecca</i>
			Aug. 23	<i>m</i>	Michael of Joseph Pitman <i>Elizabeth</i>
			Sept. 6	<i>f</i>	Elizabeth of William Davis, deceased <i>Elizabeth</i>
				<i>f</i>	Sarah of Philip Landers <i>Mary</i>
				<i>f</i>	Elizabeth of <i>John</i> Mugford <i>Mary</i>

[1740]

40 were baptised

1741

Mar. 1	<i>f</i>	Mary of Benjamin Glover <i>Susanna</i>
	<i>f</i>	Elizabeth of John Webb Junior <i>Ammi</i>

¹I.e., p. 83 of present text.²Italics indicates a church member.³Obviously an error.

- 13 *f* Hannah of *Peter* Cheever
Sarah
- Oct. 4 *f* Mary of John Leach Junior
Anna
- [201]
 1741
- Oct 11 *m* Nathaniel of David Glover
Sarah
- 18 *m* John of *John* Cloutman
Sarah
- 25 *m* Jonathan of *Joseph* Glover
Mary
- Nov. 1 *f* Hannah of *Jonathan* Ashby
Mary
- 8 *m* Nathaniel of *Obadiah* Mors
Elizabeth
- m* George of Edmund Symmes
Sarah
- 15 *f* Elizabeth of *Samuel* Symonds Junior
f Sarah *Mary*
f Mary of *George* Cummins
m George *Mary*
- Dec. 13 *f* Margaret of *John* White
Desire
- Jan. 3 *m* Benjamin of *Benjamin* Symonds
Hannah
- 10 *m* John of Thomas Morong
Jemima
- m* Henry of Francis Grant
Mary
- 17 *m* Ebenezer of John Carrill
Provided
- 31 *m* Samuel of *Samuel* Symonds Junior
Mary
- Feb. 7 *f* Mehitabel of *Charles* King Junior
Sarah
- 28 *f* Margaret of Robert Peal
Mary
- [1741] 41 were baptised
- 1742
- Mar. 28 *f* Jane of George Cummins
Mary
- Apr. 4 *f* Esther Ruck, Adult
 18 *f* Mehitabel of *Robert* Smith
Mary
- f* Sarah of Michael Moor
f Mary *Sarah*
- Apr. 25 *f* Lois of *Timothy* Pickering Twins
f Eunice *Mary*
- May 16 *m* Daniel of Jonas Adams
Sarah
- m* Roger of Roger Peal
Hannah
- 23 *m* George of Benjamin Cook
Elizabeth
- f* Rachel of Joseph Henderson
Elizabeth
- June 6 *f* Susanna Tewksbury, Adult
 20 *m* Joseph of Joseph Beadle
Lydia
- July 4 *f* Margaret of Samuel Masury Junior
Mary
- Aug. 1 *f* Hannah of John Punched Junior
Hannah
- 8 *m* Abraham of William Gale
Elizabeth
- 15 *f* Mercy of John Marston, Adult
Mercy
 And their Younger Children
m John
m Zechariah
m Benjamin
m Joseph
f Mary } of Mary¹ Rich
f Hannah }
m Edward of Joseph Cook, Third
Rachel
- Sept. 5 *m* Joseph of Joseph Cook Junior
Eunice

¹She was probably Mary Upton, born in Salem September 28, 1705, who married Thomas Rich of Wilmington, November 24, 1735. She may not have been a member of the Salem Church in 1742.

- m* Ephraim of *Francis* Skerry
Hannah
- 12 *m* Edward of *Jeffery* Lang
Hannah
- 19 *m* Jonathan of *Benjamin* Symonds
Hannah
- 26 *f* Mary of *Nathl.* King
Mary
- f* Mary of Jonathan Pease
Sarah
- m* James of *Jonathan* Tewksbury
Mary
- Oct. 3 *m* Nathaniel of *Nathaniel* Yell
Elizabeth
- [202]
1742
- Oct. 17 *m* Benjamin } Ebenezer Peal
m Ebenezer } of *Hannah*
m Ebenezer of James Cook
Rachel
- f* Rachel of Daniel King
Elizabeth
- 24 *f* Sarah of *Samuel* Fisk, Pastor
Anna
- Nov. 14 *m* George of *Nathl.* Archer
Hannah
- Dec. 12 *m* Andrew of *Ebenezer* Stephens
Mary
- Jan. 16 *m* Thomas of Andrew Millet
Ruth
- f* Sarah of Thomas Vinning Junior
Sarah
- 23 *f* Elizabeth } of John Bullock Junior
m John }
f Mary } *Elizabeth*
- 31 *m* Samuel of *Nathl.* Pike
Abigail
- Feb. 6 *f* Elizabeth, Wife of Edward
Gillam
m Stephen of John Mills
Elizabeth
- 27 *m* Benjamin of *Joseph* Pickering
Sarah
- [1742] 48 were baptised
- 1743
- Mar. 13 *f* Elizabeth, Wife of
Benjamin Orne,
and their Daughters
f Sarah and
f Elizabeth Adult
also their son
m Benjamin, a Minor
- 20 *m* Jonathan of Benjamin Felt
Abigail
- 27 *m* Peter of Benjamin Glover
Susanna
- f* Mary of Joseph Pitman
Elizabeth
- Apr. 17 *f* Jane of Tobias Davis Junior
Lydia
- f* Hannah of Ebenezer Peal
Hannah
- Apr. 17 *m* Jeremiah of John Emerton
Mary
- May 15 *f* Sarah of *Ahijah* Estes
Mary
- June 5 *f* Margaret of *Peter* Cheever
Sarah
- 12 *f* Abigail of William Pickering
Eunice
- f* Rebecca of Robert Allin
Rebecca
- f* Widow Mary Callum
Baptised in her own House, She
being not Able to go to the House
of God, by reason of a Consump-
tive Sicknesse two years Past and
earnestly Desirous of Baptism.
- July 10 *f* Sarah of George Cummins
Mary
- 17 *m* Benjamin of *Jonathan* Ashby
Mary
- Aug. 14 *f* Elizabeth Wife of Joseph Kemp-
ton
f Hannah Wife of David Smith
And their Son and Child
m David
- Sept. 11 *f* Elizabeth of Joseph Henderson
Elizabeth

- | | | | | |
|---------|----------|---|---------|--|
| | <i>f</i> | Abigail of Robert Peal
<i>Mary</i> | [203] | |
| 18 | <i>f</i> | Hannah of John Leach Junior
<i>Anna</i> | 1744 | |
| Oct. 2 | <i>f</i> | Susannah of Abraham Ruee
<i>Mary</i> | May 6 | <i>m</i> John of <i>Samuel</i> Fisk, Pastor
<i>Anna</i>
Baptised by the Reverend Nathan
Bucknam ² Pastor of Medway In
the First Church in Salem. |
| 9 | <i>m</i> | John of John Webb Junior
<i>Ammi</i> | | |
| 30 | <i>f</i> | Abigail of Nathaniel Yell
<i>Elizabeth</i> | Aug. 14 | <i>f</i> Sarah of <i>Charles</i> King Junior
<i>Sarah</i> |
| Nov. 13 | <i>m</i> | Samuel of <i>Joseph</i> Glover
<i>Mary</i> | | |
| 20 | <i>m</i> | John of <i>William</i> Deadman
<i>Hannah</i> | 1748 | |
| | | Baptised by the Reverend Mr.
James Diman. ¹ In the fourth
Church in Salem. | July 17 | <i>m</i> Joseph of <i>Samuel</i> Fisk, Pastor
<i>f</i> Elizabeth <i>Anna</i>
Baptised by the Reverend Peter
Clark In his Own Church in
Salem Village which is the Second
Church in Salem. |
| [1743] | | 28 were baptised | | |

[Remainder of page blank]

[Pages 204-239 blank]

¹James Diman (1707-1788), Harvard College, 1730; minister, Second Church in Salem, 1737-1788.

²Nathan Bucknam (1703-1795), Harvard College, 1721; minister, First Church in Medway (now Millis), 1724-1795.

[240]

1718.

Here Followeth a Catalogue of the Names of Such Persons which have Entered into Covenant with God in the Church or renewed their Baptismal Covenant: But Generally have not had light sufficient att present, to come to the Lords Supper but through their Scruples are as yet hindred: beginning November 2, 1718.

The Names here recorded may be found in the Alphabet in the beginning of this Book.¹

These Persons were first propounded to the Church and Examined.

1718

Nov. 2 George Dean Entered into covenant with God, in this Church.

Dec. 28th Paul Langden Renewed his Covenant with God, proceeded to Communion.
Abigail Peal Entred into Covenant with God and was Baptised.

Jan. 25 Elizabeth Woodwell Entred into Covenant with God and was Baptised.
Elizabeth Darby renewed Covenant with God.

1718. No. 5

1719

March 1st Elizabeth Ruck Daughter of Samuel Ruck, Adult renewed Covenant.
Mary Wife of John Cole renewed Covenant.

March 8th Mary Wife of Tobias Davis, renewed Covenant and had her children Baptised.

June 7th *Susannah* Wife of Henry West renewed Covenant.

July 5th *Mary* Wife of Thomas Sluman Entered into Covenant.

July 26 *Elizabeth* Wife of John Tailor Entered into Covenant.

Oct. 4th Abigail Elkins Widow of Henry Elkins Deceased.

18th Samuel Woodwel of this Church.

Nov. 22 Elizabeth A Negro Woman Servant of Mr. Lindall.

Dec. 6 Jonathan Woodwell renewed Covenant.

¹Unfortunately this Alphabet has long since been lost.

- Jan. 17 Joanna Wife of James Norrice renewed Covenant.
 1719 No. 11
- 1720.
- Mar. 13 Sarah Phippen renewed Covenant.
 27 Ruth Ruck renewed Covenant.
- June 12 John Archer Entered into Covenant.
- July 3 Mary Atkinson Wife of Theodore Atkinson Entered Covenant, Baptised.
 John Symonds Entered Covenant and his Wife.
 Sarah Symonds renewed Covenant and his Son.
 Samuel Symonds Entered Covenant.
- Aug. 14 Joshua Hicks Baptised att Boston South Church, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- Sept. 11 Elizabeth Wife of John Chapman Entered Covenant
 Anne Wife of Nathaniel Woodbridge renewed Covenant with God in this church, when also she confessed her Sin of Fornication, which she had formerly committed att Gloucester (while resident att that, her native place) but with another person than her present Husband.
- Sept. 18 Mary Cook Entered into Covenant and this in her own Dwelling House, where she was Baptised, a Number of the Brethren of the Church being present the reason of this was that she was not able to Appear in Publick being Sick nigh unto Death.
- Nov. 20 Elizabeth Symonds renewed Baptismal Covenant Baptised att Ipswich.
 John Gavet, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
 Rebecca Wife of James Grinslett Renewed Baptismal Covenant. Baptised att Reading.
- Jan. 8 Sarah Best Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
 15 William Mackay renewed Covenant.
- 1720, No. 17.
- [241]
- 1721
- April 30 Elizabeth Wife of Joseph Ropes Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

310 The Records of the First Church in Salem

- July 9 Elizabeth Wife of Peter Silver renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- 16 Rebecca — Negro Woman Servant of Sister Pickman Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- Sept. 3 Joseph Ropes Entered Covenant and was Baptised. Sarah Wife of Robert Williams renewed Covenant.
- 17 Ann, Wife of Benjamin Cox, Entered Covenant and was Baptised, She and Hers.¹
Mary Mackmallon Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- Oct. 1 Sarah Wife of Daniel Bacon Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Sarah Bartol Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Remember Wife of Edward Norrice Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Elizabeth Wife of Jonathan Williams renewed Covenant and Had his Child Baptised.
- 22 Hannah Cook, Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Margarett Wife of Joseph Cook Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Margarett Daughter of Benjamin Cox Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- Nov. 19 Elizabeth Waters, renewed the Baptismal Covenant.
- Dec. 10 Ichabod Plaistead, renewed the Baptismal Covenant, was Baptised att Portsmouth in Piscataqua and Sarah Plaistead, his wife renewed the Baptismal Covenant.
1721. No. 17.
- 1722
- April 15 Mary Gray Widow of Benjamin Gray Entered into Covenant and was Baptised, herself and Children.
Isaac, Negro man Servant of Sister Kitchin Entered into Covenant and was Baptised.
- Sepr. 2 Mary Wife of Stephen Doick Renewed her Baptismal Covenant and had her Child Baptised.
- December Samuel Mackmallon Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

¹Text plainly reads *hers*; perhaps refers to her child.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 311

Jan'y. 20th James Grant renewed his Baptismal Dedication and had his Child Baptised.

1722 No. 5.

1723

March 10th Mary Williams was Baptised Entered Covenant.
Mary Pike was Baptised Entered Covenant.

17 George Willis Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Elizabeth Wife of John Devoreux renewed Baptismal Covenant.

31 Mary Wife of Samuel Symonds Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

April 14 Elizabeth Wife of William Gale renewed Baptismal Covenant.

Sep. 1 James Marston Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

29 Nathaneel Ropes renewed Baptismal Covenant.

1723 No. 8

1724

March 8 John Mugford renewed Baptismal Covenant was Baptised att Newfoundland.

April 5 Joshua Ward renewed Baptismal Covenant.
Jane wife of William Luscomb renewed Baptismal Covenant was Baptised att Newfoundland.
Abial Norrice renewed Baptismal Covenant.

May 3 Ruth, Widow of Benjamin Phippen renewed Baptismal Covenant.

1724 No. 5.

[242]

May 16 Robert Gray Junior Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

June 20 Mary Higginson, Daughter of Sister Batters, renewed Baptismal Covenant.

Margaret wife of Bonfield Felt Baptised att Newton in Ireland, renewed Baptismal Covenant.

July 4 Mary Wife of Richard Dowse Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- July 18 Mary Beans Daughter of Joshua Beans, Adult Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- August 8 John Ropes Junior Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- Sept. 12 Joseph Cook Junior son of John Cook, deceased Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- 26 Samuel Odel son of Benjamin Odel Entered Covenant and was Baptised being adult.
- Nov. 28th Elizabeth Marston, Daughter of William Marston deceased, and Elizabeth his Wife, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- Dec. 5 Bethiah Bickford, Daughter of John Bickford, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- Jan. 30 James and Sarah Odel children of Benjamin Odel Entered Covenant and were Baptised, both being Adult.
- Feb. 6 Hannah, wife of Benjamin Ropes, renewed Baptismal Covenant, Sarah Gale, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- 20 Mary Darling Adult Daughter of Daniel Darling, Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- 1725, No. 15.
1726
- April 24 Eunice Bowditch, Adult, Daughter of William Bowditch renewed Baptismal Covenant.
Mary Sibley, Adult Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- May 22 Anne, Wife of Edmund Gale Baptised att Beverly, renewed Baptismal Covenant.
Mary, Wife of John Luscomb Baptised att Boston renewed Baptismal Covenant.
- Sep. 4 Sarah Wife of John Mackarter Entered Covenant and was Baptised and her Child.
- 25 Mary, Wife of Robert Marshall renewed Baptismal Covenant and was Baptised, att Boston, had now her Children Baptised.
- Nov. 13 Joseph Bowditch and Elizabeth his Wife, } both renewed
Margarett, Wife of John Hill renewed Baptismal } Baptismal Covenant
Covenant.

Dec. 4 Abigail Wife of Benjamin Allin renewed Baptismal Covenant and Engagements: She also Confessed the Sin of Fornication which she had Committed with him who is now her Husband Benjamin Allin, Praying Pardon of God, and asking the forgiveness of this People.

Jan. 1 James Osgood renewed Baptismal Covenant and Engagements.

1726, No. 11

1727

March 5 Abigail Wife of Benjamin Beadle Entered Covenant and was Baptised, and her 4 Children.
Lydia Hill renewed Baptismal Covenant.

June 11 Thomas Willis, Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

August 20 Desire, Wife of John White Entered Covenant and was Baptised.

[243]

August 20 Martha and Benjamin Odle
Mary Daughters Adult, of Sarah
Entered Covenant and were Baptised.

Sept. 3 Margaret Daughter of Thomas Beadle renewed Baptismal Covenant.

<p>Dec. 3 Hannah Wife of Charles Hooper Lois, Wife of Thomas Bright Patience Daughter of Sister Philips Mary Daughter of Jacob Manning Mary Daughter of Brother John Gyles Rachel Phippen Mary Daughter of Richard Pike Ebenezer Felton and Jehodan his Wife renewed Baptismal Covenant and had their children Baptised. Hannah Wife of Ephraim Ingolls and Margaret Daughter of Sister Kaiton both renewed Baptismal Covenant Joseph Glover Adult also Elizabeth Wife of Francis Richardson both Entered Covenant and were Baptised.</p>	<p>} These Seven with two others who had before renewed their Baptismal Engagements also came to the Lords Table.</p>
---	---

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- 17 Hannah wife of Benjamin Hathorn renewed Covenant.
 Mary, Wife of Zachary Birchmore Entered Covenant was Baptised and her Child.
 Margaret Stone, Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- 31 Samuel Field. }
 John Symonds Junior } All these Entered
 Jane, Wife of Samuel Aborne Junior } Covenant and
 Abigail Daughter of Samuel Pope } were Baptised.
 Anne Daughter of Widow Willis }
 Priscilla Wife of John Symonds Junior
 Robert Smith, and } These renewed Baptismal Covenant
 Mary his Wife, } and had their Children Baptised.
 Lydia Begoe, }
 James Gibson, }
 Sarah Daughter of Brother James Lindall, }
 Hannah Daughter of Nathaniel Higginson Deceased } These Renewed
 Hannah Daughter of Brother Nathaniel Osgood } Baptismal
 Hannah and } Daughters of Sister Hannah Pickering } Covenant
 Elizabeth }
 Mary Daughter of Sister Elkins Junior
 Isabella Daughter of Widow Armstrong
- Jan 14 Joseph Pierpont son of the late Reverend Mr. Pierpont¹ of Reading, Baptised there renewed Baptismal Covenant.
 Ibruck Hacker. } These Three Entered
 Ruth Wife of Andrew Millett } Covenant
 Sarah Datten } and were Baptised.
- 25 Preserved Wife of Isaac Stileman } Both renewed
 Eunice Daughter of John Collins } Baptismal vow.
- [244]
 Feb. 4 Edward Norrice } These took upon themselves
 Abigail } the Engagements and Bonds
 Hannah } of Baptism which they received
 Susannah } in Infancy and came also to
 Daughters of } the Lords Table.
 John Pratt }

¹Jonathan Pierpont (1665-1709), Harvard College, 1685; settled in Reading, 1689-1709.

- 11 Daniel Bacon, Junior } Both took on themselves
 and his Sister } the Engagements of Baptism
 Sarah Bacon } which they Received in Infancy.
- Hannah Daughter of Nathaniel Silsby } Both Entered into Covenant
 and Mary Daughter of William Brown } and were Baptised.

1727. 56

1728

March 3 Benjamin Son of Ebenezer Lambert Deceased.

Elizabeth, Wife of George Bickford } These took on themselves
 Lydia Wife of William Murray } the Bonds of Baptism
 Esther, Daughter of John Cabot } which they received in
 } Infancy.

Daniel Cheevers
 Sarah Daughter of the Widow Purchase } These Entered into
 Hannan Daughter of Manasseh Marston Deceased } Covenant and were
 Abigail Wife of Thomas Davis } Baptised.
 Titus, Negro Servant of John Turner }

17th John Son of Brother John Giles
 Abigail Wife of George Peal Junior } Entered
 Sarah Daughter of Brother Nathaniel Osgood } Covenant
 Elizabeth Wife of Samuel Foot Junior } and were
 Mary Daughter of Stephen Daniel } Baptised.
 Hannah Formerly called Phillis — a
 free negro woman }

31st Joshua Mackmallon } Entered Covenant
 Stephen Daniel Junior } and was Baptised.

Sarah Wife of Elias Lowwater came
 to the Lords Table also.

Margarett Wife of Stephen } Both took on themselves
 Daniel Junior } the obligations of
Elizabeth Daughter of John } Baptism which they
 Smith Junior } received in their
 } Infancy.

April 28 Samuel King } These Three Entered Covenant
 Jonathan } and were Baptised and the
 and } First of them Ingaged to attend
Joseph Peal } the Lords Table.

- June 3 Susannah wife of John Gray took on herself the obligation of her Infant Baptism and had her Children Baptised.
- 23 James Stone Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
Sarah his wife took on herself the obligation of her Infant Baptism and their children were Baptised.
Samuel Aborne, took on himself the obligation of his Infant Baptism and had his children Baptised.
Mercy Aborne took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- July 14 Benjamin Hearon Entered Covenant and was Baptised — he was born and Educated of Parents who were Quakers.
- 21 Edmund Symms took on himself the Obligation of Baptism, which he received in his Infancy.
- Aug. 11 Sarah Wife of James Marston Baptised in the first Church in Ipswich and
Mary Daughter of Widow Hannah Cook, both these took on themselves the Engagements of their Infant Baptism.
- [245]
- Sep. 22 Margaret Wife of Robert Gray took on herself the Engagements of her Infant Baptism.
- Nov 17 Charles Hooper and } Both Entred into Covenant
Mary Wife of David Griffis } with God and were Baptised.
Abigail Wife of Benjamin Felt took on herself the Bonds of Infant Baptism.
- Dec. 15 Elizabeth Higginson Daughter of Sister Batters and
Lydia Daughter of Joseph Henfield,
Both took on themselves the Obligations of their Infant Baptism.
- Jan. 5 Susannah Wife of Benjamin Glover took on herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism.
- 1728 No. 39.
- 1729
- March 9 Mary } Daughters of John Shattuck, Adult Entered
Sarah } Covenant and were Baptised.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 317

- 31 *Eunice* Daughter of the Widow Mary Lambert took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- April 20 Widow Margarett Devoreux } Both took on themselves the
Mary Daughter of John Tailer } Obligations of their Infant Baptism.
- May 4 Lydia Daughter of Richard Palmer } Entered into Covenant
Rachel Daughter of Edward Britton } and were Baptised
- Sept. 28 *Abigail* Wife of Wills Morton took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Jan. 11 Sarah Wife of Clement Henley } Both took on themselves
Susannah Daughter of Clement } the Obligation of their
English } Infant Baptism.

1729

10 were received.

1730

- March 1 Tamizond Modgey and } Entered into Covenant
Deborah Wife of George Hacker } and were Baptised.
- April 5 Jonathan Gardner Baptised in this Church.
Ruth Daughter of Benjamin Houghton Baptised in the Village. Both took on themselves the Obligation of Infant Baptism.
- 26 Eunice Wife of Benjamin Brown took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- June 7 *Mercy* Daughter of Brother John Swinnerton Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and came to Communion.
- July 5 Deliverance Wife of Joseph Ellison Baptised in the First Church in Gloucester Took on herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism.
- Aug. 25 Seeth, Daughter of Sister Mary Lambert Took on herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism.
- Dec. 6 Thomas Demeritt a Negro man servant of our Sister Mary Lindall.
- Jan. 3 Bethiah Daughter of George Hacker Took on herself the Covenant and was Baptised.
- Feb. 28 Provided Wife of John Carryl Entered into Covenant and was Baptised, and her Child.

1730

11 were received.

1731

- July 4 Tabitha, Wife of Jonathan Glover Junior took on herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism.
- Aug. 1 Edward Kitchen and Both took on themselves the Obligation
Frick his Wife, — of their Infant Baptism.

[246]

- Nov. 7 Benjamin Goodhue, a Child of the first Church in Ipswich,
Martha his Wife, a Child of this Church Both took on themselves, the Obligation of their Infant Baptism.
- Abigail, Wife of Thomas Gilpin, Entered Into Covenant with God in this Church, was Baptised and her Child.

1731

6 were received.

1732

- March 5 Benjamin Gillingham } Both Took on themselves the
and } Obligation of their Infant Bap-
Elizabeth, his Wife, } tism, and had Baptism for their
Child.
- att the same time They confessed the sin of fornication, Committed Each with the other and asked forgiveness of God and this Church.
- April 30 Abigail, Wife of John Seas, Baptised att Topsfield, Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Aug. 6 Sarah and Took on themselves the Obligation
Elizabeth Price of their Infant Baptism.
- Oct. 8 Benjamin Pickman, who was Baptised att Boston Took on himself the Obligation of his Infant Baptism.

1732

6 were received.

1733

- April 1 Christian Wife of Arthur Stokes Took on herSelf the obligations of her Minor Baptism, and had Baptism Administered to her Children when she Ac-

knowledged her Offence in the too Early Birth of her first Child, after marriage.

July 29 Elizabeth, Wife of Samuel Reeves, who was Baptised in the First Church in Gloucester, Took on her Self the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

Dec. 16 Eleazer Moses Took on himself the Obligation of his Infant Baptism and Mary his wife Entered into Covenant, and was Baptised, and their Child.

Feb. 17 Sarah, Wife of Thomas Ropes Took on Herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism.

[1733]

5 were received.

1734

Jan. 12 Abigail Wife of John Elkins Took on her Self the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

Feb. 9 James Cook and Rachel his wife } Both Took on themselves the Obligation of their Infant Baptism, att which time They Acknowledged their Offence in the too early Birth of their first Child which was some few months after their Marriage.

[1734]

3 were received.

1735

Sept. 7 Mary, Wife of Samuel Cheever, Entered into Covenant and was Baptised, as was their Child Also.

28 Hannah, Daughter of Ephraim Skerry, Took on her Self the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

[1735]

2 were received

1736

March 21 Hannah, Wife of Nathaneel Archer, and Margaret, Wife of Edward Dimond } Both took on themselves the Obligation of their Minor Baptism.

April 11 Elizabeth, Wife of Benjamin Cook, Took on her Self the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

Esther Trask } Both Entered into Covenant with God
Mary Page } in this Church and were Baptised.

May 9 Lydia, Daughter of Jeremiah Neal, Took on her Self the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

[247]

1736

- May 9 Hannah, Wife of John Battin who was Baptised in the First Church in Ipswich, Made Confession and took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism, and her child was Baptised.
- 30 Sarah Wife of Brother John Mackmallon, and Lydia, their Daughter, Both Entered into Covenant with God in this Church and were Baptised.
- June 6 Elizabeth, Wife of Joseph Henderson, } Both took on
Abiel, Wife of Benjamin Burton, } themselves the
} Obligation of
} their Infant
} Baptism.
- July 11 Mary, Wife of Richard Crispin Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Nov. 14 Sarah Daughter of John Kempton Entered Into Covenant and was Baptised.
- Dec. 26 Mary, Wife of Robert Peal who was Baptised in the First Church in Marblehead and
Sarah Daughter of Brother Samuel Ruck
Mary Daughter of Deacon James Ruck
Took on themselves the Obligation of Their Infant Baptism.
- Abiel Marston, Entered into Covenant with God in this Church, and was Baptised.
- Jan. 23 Margaret, Wife of Clement English Entered into Covenant, and was Baptised.

[1736]

12 were received.

1737

- April 3 Anna Gerrish, Took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Aug. 14 Joseph Pickering Entered Covenant with God in this Church and was Baptised.
Sarah, his Wife, took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Sep. 18 Abigail, Wife of Samuel Cook Entered Covenant with God in this Church and was Baptised.
- Dec. 11 Widow Elizabeth Bray Entered into Covenant with God in this church was Baptised and her Child.

- Jan. 29 Hannah Wife of Joseph Roberts, Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Feb. 19 Edward Cocks, Entered into Covenant with God in This Church, and was Baptised.

[1737]

7 were received.

1738

- May 7 Ann, Wife of John Leach Junior Took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- July 2 Rebecca, Wife of Samuel Oakman Took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and satisfied the Church for her Sin in the too Early Birth of her Child after Marriage, her child was Baptised now.
- Lydia Pease Entered Into Covenant with God in this Church and was Baptised.
- 9 Elizabeth, Wife of John Short Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism, and her Children Baptised.
- July 30 Joseph Orne Junior Being sick with a Consumption nigh to Death, Entered Into Covenant with God, in this Church, and was Baptised In the Dwelling House of his Uncle Joseph Orne who Educated him Publickly, from his Youth Up. This Is the Dwelling House where the First Church Mett and worshipped God for Several Lordsdays, after It was (with Its Pastor) driven together from the Publick Meeting House, on Lordsday April 27th 1735.¹ The desire of this Young Gentleman was Earnest to the Most Publick Profession and Baptism, but finding himself Decayed and Despairing Utterly of such an Opportunity, was Desirous of Baptism att home. I Propounded his desire after Morning Divine Service was over to the Church, whom I stayed for the Purpose when the Church After Due Deliberation on the Necessity of the Case, and Its formes, Votes and Practice, of this Nature, Unanimously voted a Com-

¹This is the only reference in these records to the dismissal of Mr. Fisk from The First Church. He, in fact, retained the church book and made entries therein relative to his new society until 1744. Cf. Introduction.

plyance with his request and that Baptism Might be Administered to him Either after Evening Service this Day, or on the Morrow, as his Condition would Allow, Since Publick Baptism In Gods House, which the Church Ever Prefers, could not be Had In the present Instance.

[1738]

5 were received.

[248]

1739

- May 6 Margaret Daughter of Thomas Gold Entered into Covenant with God in this Church and was Baptised.
- Oct. 7 Elizabeth, Wife of John Mills Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism, Confessed her Sin of Fornication, before her Marriage and had her Children Baptised.
- Nov. 4 Hannah, Wife of William Deadman Baptised in the Second Church in Ipswich — Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Jan. 6 Mary, Wife of John Stevens Baptised in the Church in Portsmouth in Piscataqua, Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and Confessed her fault in the too Early Birth of her Child after Marriage. And now had her other Twin Children Baptised.
- 13 Hannah, Wife of Edward Britton Junior Entered Into Covenant, with God in this Church, Confessed her fault in the too Early Birth of her Child after Marriage, and was Baptised and her Children.
- Feb. 10 William Deadman Entered Into Covenant with God In this Church and was Baptised.
- Mary, Wife of Jonathan Ashby } Took on themselves
and Jemimah Wife of } the Obligation of
Thomas Morong } their Infant Baptism.
- March 23 Hannah Wife of Roger Peal } Both took on them-
and Elizabeth Wife of } selves the Obligation of
William Davis } Baptism which they Re-
} ceived in their Minority.
- April 20 Susannah Orne Entered into Covenant with God in this Church and was Baptised.

[1739]

8 were received.

1740

The Records of the First Church in Salem 323

- May 18 Joshua Witherel Junior Took on himself the Obligation of his Infant Baptism.
- June 29 Susannah, Wife of Joseph Hood Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and made her Confession.
- Sarah Paul and Sarah Wife of Benjamin Reeves, } Both took on them the Said Obligation
- Nov. 16 Sarah, Wife of Jonathan Pease Baptised in the First Church in Newbury. Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- Dec. 7 John Cloutman } Took on themselves the Obligation of
and } their Infant Baptism and had Their
Sarah his Wife } Child Baptised.
- Feb. 1 Ammi, Wife of John Webb Junior Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

[1740]

11 were received.

1741

- March 29 Rebecca Phippen Took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- April 19 Rachel Bates Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- May 3 Jonathan Ashby, Took on himself the Obligation of his Infant Baptism.
- June 18 Mary Daughter of James Mazury Entered Into Covenant and was Baptised.
- Nov. 15 Samuel Simonds Junior } All These Took on them Selves
and Mary his Wife, } the Obligation of their Infant
Baptism.
- Mary, Wife of George Cummins Baptised in the First Church In Marblehead.

[249]

- Jan. 3 Benjamin Symonds } Both Took on themselves the
and } Obligation of their Infant Baptism,
Hannah his Wife, } And Their Child was Baptised.

[1741]

9 were received.

1742

- March 28 Jane Cummins, Baptised in the Second Church in Marblehead, Took on HerSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- April 4 Esther Ruck Adult Entered Covenant and was Baptised.
- 18 Sarah Daughter of James Marston Took on herself the Bonds of her Infant Baptism.
- May 2 *Sarah* Daughter of Robert Marshall Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism.
- June 6 *Susannah*, Daughter of *Jonathan Tewksbury* Entered Covenant and was Baptised
- July 25 Francis Skerry and } Both Took on Themselves the
Hannah, his Wife, } Obligation of their Infant
Baptism.
- Aug. 15 Mercy Wife of John Marston Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism, And her Elder Daughter,
Mercy about fourteen Years of Age, Publickly owned the Covenant.
- Oct. 3 Elizabeth Yell Wife of Nathaniel Yell Baptised in the Second Church in Marblehead, Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism, and had their Child Baptised.
- 17 Hannah Wife of Ebenezer Peal Baptised In the Church in the village in this Town, Took on herself the Obligations, of her Infant Baptism, and had their Children Baptised.
- Dec. 12 Ebenezer Stevens, who was Baptised in the First Church in Beverly Took on Himself the obligations of his Infant Baptism.
- Jan. 23 *Elizabeth*, Wife of John Bullock Junior Took on herself the Obligation of Baptism which she received in her Infancy and their Children were Baptised and Satisfyed the Church.
- Feb. 6 *Elizabeth* Wife of Edward Gillam Entered Into Covenant with God In this Church and was Baptised, She Satisfyed the Church.

[1742]

14 were received.

1743

- March 13 *Elizabeth* Wife of Benjamin Orne and their Adult Daughters, *Sarah* and *Elizabeth*, Entered into Covenant with God in this Church, and were Baptised.

June 12 Widow Mary Callum Entered into Covenant with God in this Church, And was Baptised. This was Done in her own House because she was Unable to, Come into Gods House, being Consumptive. The Brethren of the Church, chose a Committee to Represent them, which they did, and A great many of the Church, and Congregation Attended att her House.

[250]

Aug. 14 Elizabeth Wife of Joseph Kempton and Hannah Wife of David Smith — Both Entered into Covenant with God in this Church and were Baptised.

1744 [*no entries*]

[*Remainder of page blank*]

[*Pages 251-279 blank*]

[280]

1718

Here Followeth a Catalogue of the Names of such Persons who have been received to Communion att the Lords Table, in this Church — from the 28th December 1718, whose desires to Communicate with us were first propounded to the Church and were Examined by the Pastor According to the Usage of this first Gathered Church in this Province.

The names of the Persons contained in this Catalogue, may be found by looking for them in the Alphabetical Table in the Beginning of this Book.¹

Dec. 28th Paul Langden who was Baptised in his infancy att the Old Church in Boston, and renewed his Baptismal Covenant with this Church, having left the Quakers Meeting and Principles.

Jan. 25th Elizabeth Derby renewed her Baptismal Covenant with God in this Church.

¹This list has long since disappeared.

Abigail Peal, Entred into Covenant with God and was Baptized in this Church.

1718 No. 3

1719

Samuel Giles Baptised in this Church.

March 1

John Cole, Baptised in England.

Margarett Wife of Ebenezer Cook Baptised in this Church.

May 3

Hannah Wife of Isaac Hacker Baptised in this Church.

17

Martha Wife of Isaac Cook Baptised att Chebacco in Ipswich.

June 7

Susannah Wife of Henry West.

Mary Wife of John Cole.

July 5

Mercy Wife of Thomas Cole.

Aug. 30

Abigail wife of John Twist.

Oct. 4

Elizabeth Wife of Samuel Cole.

Dec. 6

Samuel Osgood.

1719 No. 11

1720

March 27

Recompence Orne.

April 3

Edmund Batter.

4

Elizabeth Wife of Alexander Mackmallon.

July 3

Nathaniel Thomas.

Sept. 4

Samuel Woodwell.

John Hearson.

Nov. 6

Hannah Wife of Daniel Darling.

Elizabeth Butler.

Jan. 1

Elizabeth Lindall.

Feb. 5

Sarah Phippen.

Ruth Ruck.

1720 No. 11

1721

July 2

Margarett Wife of James Foster.

Susannah Prettice.

Aug. 6

Mary, Wife of Nathaniel Ropes.

Nov. 5

Elizabeth Pinson.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 327

Jan. 7 Rebecca, Wife of Peter Brown, Baptised att Beverly.
1721 No. 5

[281]

1722

May 6 Mary Wife of Josiah Wolcott.

Aug. 5 Elizabeth Waters.

1722 No. 2

1723

March 3 Hannah, a free Negro, woman; Baptised in this
Church some years ago.

17 Susannah wife of Samuel Giles.

31 Mary wife of Samuel Symonds.

April 28 James Foster.

Aug. 4 Elizabeth Ruck.

Sep. 29 Nathaneel Ropes.
James Grant.

1723 No. 7

1724

May 3 Ruth Daughter of David Flynt renewed Baptismal
Covenant and Lords Table.

August 2 Remember Wife of Edward Norrice renewed Cove-
nant and Lords Table.

Elizabeth Wife of John Webb renewed Covenant
and came to the Lords Table.

Feb. 7 Benjamin Lynde Junior renewed Covenant and
came to the Lords Table.

Abigail Wife of Nathaniel Ropes renewed Covenant
and came to the Lords Table.

1724 No. 5

1725

March 7 Ammi Wife of Samuel Swazey renewed Covenant
and Lords Table.

Deborah Wife of Benjamin Ward Renewed Cove-
nant and Lords Table.

April 4 Mary Gray Widow Renewed Covenant and Lords
Table.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- May 2 Mary Lindal Daughter of James Lindal renewed
Baptismal Covenant and Lords Table.
- June 6 John Bickford and Rebecca, his Wife, and
Elizabeth, Wife of John Bickford Junior } all three renewed
Baptismal Covenant
and came to the
Lords Table.
- July 4 Sarah, Wife of Thomas Ellis renewed Covenant
and Lords Table.
- Sep. 5 John Bickford Junior renewed Baptismal Covenant
and Lords Table.
- Mary Wife of John Ropes Junior } Twins, both
and Elizabeth Dean } renewed Baptismal
Covenant and
Lords Table.
- Sarah Wife of Edmund Simmes renewed Baptismal
Covenant and Lords Table.
- Elizabeth Daughter of Jonathan Bly renewed Bap-
tismal Covenant and Lords Table
- Oct. 3 Keturah Wife of William Douglass Baptised at
Wenham, renewed Baptismal Covenant and Lords
Table.
- Nov. 7 John Archer and
Rebecca his Wife renewed Baptismal Covenant and
Lords Table.

1725. No. 17

[282]

- Feb. 6 Sarah Wife of Daniel Cheevers renewed Baptismal
Covenant and Lords Table.

1726

- April 3 Mary Wife of Benjamin Woodbridge renewed
Covenant and Lords Table.
- Oct. 2 Samuel Mackmallon renewed Covenant and Lords
Table.
- Nov. 6 Hannah Wife of John Chapman Junior renewed
Covenant and Lords Table.
- Dec. 4 Abigail Wife of Benjamin Allin renewed Covenant
and Lords Table. She made confession of the Sin of
Fornication.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 329

- January 1 James Osgood renewed Covenant and Lords Table.
Elizabeth, widow of William Marston renewed
Covenant and Lords Table.
1726. No. 6
- 1727
- March 5 Sarah, Wife of John Mackarter renewed Covenant
and Lords Table.
Sarah Jeeffards renewed Baptismal Covenant and
Lords Table.
Mary Daughter of Daniel Darling renewed Cove-
nant and Lords Table.
Mary Paine renewed Covenant and Lords Table.
- April 2 Sarah Best renewed Covenant and Lords Table.
- August 6 Elizabeth Wife of William Gale renewed Covenant
and Lords Table.
- Sept. 3 Elizabeth Lowther renewed Covenant and Lords
Table and had this day Grand Daughters (whose
parents were Dead) Baptised.
- Oct. 1 John Nutting Baptised att Cambridge and renewed
Baptismal Covenant and Lords Table.
Ruth, his Wife.
Sarah Odel renewed Baptismal Covenant and Lords
Table.
- Dec. 3 Elizabeth wife of Malachi Foot.
Hannah Wife of Charles Hooper.
Lois Wife of Thomas Bright.
Patience Daughter of Sister Phillips.
Mary Daughter of Jacob Manning.
Rachel Phippen.
Mary Daughter of Richard Pike.
Mary Daughter of John Gyles.
Margarett Daughter of Thomas Beadle.
- Jan. 7 Benjamin Gerrish and
Abigail his Wife.
Ebenezer Felton and
Jehoaden his Wife. } These renewed Covenant
Samuel Symonds and } with God and came to the
Susannah his Wife. } Lords Table.
Thomas Willis

Mary wife of Joshua Beans.
 Kezia Widow of John Mazury Junior
 Abigail Daughter of Widdow Allin.
 Priscilla Wife of Jonathan Woodwell.

[283]

1727

- Jan. 7 Elizabeth Wife of John Crowell.
 Eunice Wife of Joseph Neal. These renewed
 Anstis Wife of John Crowningshield. Baptismal Covenant
 Mary Wife of Joseph Gavett. with God and came
 Martha and Mary Odle. to the Lords Table.
- Feb. 4th Edward Norrice.
 James Odel. These renewed Cove-
 Anna Wife of John Cabott. nant with God and came
 Sarah, wife of Joseph Hathorne. to the Lords Table.
 Abigail
 Hannah Daughters of Jon Pratt
 Susannah
- also Ahijah Estes, a Member of the 4th Church in Boston
 and Mary Wife of James Odel a Member of the 3d
 Church in this Town.

Both were recommended from their Pastors and
 came under the Pastorall Care and Watch here.

1728

- March 3 Charles King
 Ephraim Skerry
 Jonathan Woodwell. These renewed Cove-
 Elizabeth Wife of George Bickford. nant with God, and
 Lydia Wife of William Murray. came to the Lords
 Mary Wife of Samuel Mazury. Table.
 Esther Daughter of John Cabott.
 Hannah, Daughter of Brother Nathaniel Osgood.
- 17 Mary Daniel, Daughter of Stephen Daniel Entered
 Covenant was Baptised and Ingaged to come to the
 Lords Table.
- 31 Sarah, Wife of Elias Lowwater Entered Covenant
 was Baptised and Ingaged to come to the Lords
 Table.

- April 7 Margaret Wife of William Mackay.
 Martha Wife of Nathaniel Silsby.
 Aibgail Wife of Benjamin Beadle. These either took on
 Elizabeth Wife of Samuel Gray. themselves the Ingage-
 Widow Hannah Henderson. ments laid on them by
 Widow Jane Turner. their Infant Baptism —
 Abigail Daughter of Widow Flint. or renewed these
 Hannah Daughter of Widow Masters. Ingagements.
 Isabella Daughter of Widow Armstrong.
 Widow Mary Lambert.
- April 28 Samuel King, who entred into Covenant and was
 Baptised this Day and also came to the Lords Table.
- May 5 John Becket and
 Susannah his Wife.
 Widow Elizabeth Tapleigh.
 Mary Higginson Daughter of These six renewed
 Sister Batters. Covenant and came to
 Hannah Daughter of Sister the Lords Table.
 Hannah Pickering.
 Mary Daughter of
 Sister Elkins.
- [284]
- 1728
- June 3 Benjamin son of Widow Lambert renewed Cove-
 nant and came to the Lords Table.
- 23 Jane wife of Samuel Osborne renewed Covenant in
 order to her coming to the Lords Table.
- July 7 Joseph Pierpont renewed Covenant and came to the
 Lords Table.
 Lydia Hill renewed Covenant and came to the Lords
 Table.
- Aug. 4 Sarah, Wife of Jonathan Peal and Both took on them-
 Abiel Phippen selves the Obligations
 of their Infant Baptism
 and came to the Lords
 Table.
- Sep. 1 Mary Wife of Thomas Driver and Both renewed their Cove-
 Margaret Wife of John Hill nant and came to the
 Lords Table.

The Records of the First Church in Salem

- Oct. 6 Miles Ward Junior and Elizabeth his Wife Both took on themselves the Obligations of their Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.
- Nov. 3 John Gavet Timothy Pickering Sarah, Wife of Daniel Bacon Senior Elizabeth, Wife of John Tailer. These four Renewed their Covenant with God, in this Church and came to the Lords Table.
- Dec. 1 George Felt Took on himself the Obligations of Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.
Hannah Higginson Daughter of Sister Batters Renewed Sarah Daughter of Brother Nathaniel Osgood Covenant and came to the Lords Table.
- Jan. 5 Joseph Hathorne renewed Covenant and came to the Lords Table.
Susannah wife of Benjamin Glover took on herSelf the Obligations of her Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table. These two were admitted by the Reverend Mr. Peter Clark, Pastor of the Second Church in this Town att the Desire of the Pastor here.
1728. No. 46
- 1729
- April 6 Sarah, Wife of James Stone Junior Mercy Daughter of William Aborne Margaret Daughter of Daniel Kaiton These Three renewed Covenant and came to the Lords Table.
- Sept. 7 Widow Jane Pickering Sarah Gale Both renewed Covenant and came to the Lords Table.
- Nov. 2 Ruth Wife of Henry West Mary Wife of Joseph Glover Hannah Daughter of Widow Hannah Symms. Each renewed their Covenant and came to the Lords Table.
- Jan. 4 Mary Wife of Joseph Flynt Eunice Daughter of Sister Mary Lambert. Both renewed their Covenant by coming to the Lords Table.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 333

Feb. 1 Sarah Daughter of Sister Mary Lambert Took on herself the Obligation of Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

1729, 11 were admitted

1730

March 1 Paul Raymond Baptised in the first Church in Beverly, *Sarah* Wife of David Montgomery Baptised in the East Church in this Town. Both came to the Lords Table.

April 5 Jonathan Gardner.
Mary Wife of Daniel Twist Baptised in the first Church in Reading. Both came to the Lords Table.

[285]

1730

May 3 Mary Daughter of Brother Batters Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

June 7 Elizabeth Wife of Joseph Ropes renewed Covenant by coming to the Lords Table.
Mercy Daughter of Brother John Swinnerton Took on herself etc. and came to the Lords Table.

Dec. 6 Sarah Daughter of Brother James Lindal came to the Lords Table.

1730 — 8 were admitted:

1731

Sep. 5 Mary Wife of Edward Rose, took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

Dec. 5 Sarah, Wife of Benjamin Odel took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

This person, was born Deaf, and So could not Learn to Speak. But had remarkable Quicknesse of Understanding, and was very Inquisitive. She was early taught by her Parents and afterwards by her Husband and Children, Each of which, were Baptised when Adult, by MySelf, the present Pastor of this first Church in Salem, who on this Extraordinary Occasion Enter and Subscribe this. Her son, who is

in Communion with this Church, (as all her children are) Assisted Me in Propounding the Covenant briefly to her, by using Signs very Intelligible to her, and taking the sign of her Consent. No Person heretofore or now att her Publick Admission (which was immediately before Communion) made Any objection, and the Pastors of the Neighbouring Churches, Many of them by a Letter to this Church advised and Recommended her Admision to the Lords Table.

Samuel Fisk, Pastor.

1731

2 were admitted.

1732

Aug. 6 John Mackmallon Both took on themselves the
and Obligations of the Covenant and
Benjamin Young came to the Lords Table.

Sarah the Wife of David Glover was Recommended by the Second Church in Glocester, and received by this Church, to the Pastorall Care and Holy Communion and watch.

1732

3 were admitted.

1733

June 3 Lydia Wife of Joseph Henfield renewed Covenant by Coming to the Lords Table.

Aug. 5 Susannah Daughter of Widow English Took on herSelf the Obligation of her Infant Baptism by Coming to the Lords Table.

1733

2 were admitted.

1735

April 6 Mary Skerry Took on herself the Obligation of her Infant Baptism by coming to the Lords Table.

June 1 Francis Gahtman, A Member of the Reformed Churches in Germany, Came to the Lords Table. Thomas Symonds, and Elizabeth his Wife, Both came to the Lords Table, as before they Entered into Covenant.

15 Jonathan Millett was Dismissed from the Church of Christ in Manchester, and Admitted Into this Church Under the Pastorall Care and Watch here.

The Records of the First Church in Salem 335

Nov. 2 Robert Fairservice was Recommended by the Irish Presbyterian Church in Boston¹ and Admitted Into this Church Under the Pastorall Care and Watch here.

[286]

Oct. 5 Lydia Wife of Benjamin Gale Came to the Lords Table.

Jan. 4 Mary Wife of Benjamin Blyth Baptised in the First Church in Braintree, Took on herself the Obligations of her Infant Baptism, and came to the Lords Table.

[1735]

8 were admitted

1736

March 7 Deborah Wife of Isaac Goodale Baptised in the First Church in Marblehead Took on Herself the Obligation of her Baptism and Came to the Lords Table.

April 4 Henry Bennett, Baptised in the First Church in Ipswich, where he Renewed his Covenant was Recommended to this Church and admitted to the Lords Table.

Elizabeth Wife of Edward Carryl also came to the Lords Table

May 2 Sarah Wife of John Webber who was Baptised in the Fourth Church in this Town Came to the Lords Table.

June 6 Charles King Junior Renewed Covenant and Came to the Lords Table.

Nov. 7 Jane Widow of John Flynt having received Baptism, in her Adult Age, Came to the Lords Table.

[1736]

6 admitted.

1737

March 6 Jeffry Lang who was Baptised in Portsmouth in Piscataqua, and Rebecca Wife of Jeremiah Meachum Baptised in Marblehead Came to the Lords Table.

¹Church in Long Lane, later Federal Street, now Arlington Street Church.

April 3 Sarah Wife of Charles King Junior renewed Covenant with God in this Church and came to the Lords Table.

May 1 Mary Fabins Wife of James Fabins renewed Covenant and came to the Lords Table.

June 5 Daniel Bacon Confirmed his renewall of Covenant and Came to the Lords Table.

Dec. 4 Sarah Kempton Confirmed her renewall of Covenant and came to the Lords Table.

Jan. 1 Benjamin Woodbridge Junior Took on himself the Obligation of his Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

[1737]

7 were admitted.

1738

1 Admitted.

Joseph Orne Renewed his Covenant And came to the Lords Table.

1739

May 6 Tobias Lakeman, who was Baptised in the First Church in Ipswich, Took on himself the obligation of his Infant Baptism and came to the Lords Table.

June 3 Isaac Williams Came to the Lords Table.

July 1 Edward Cox Confirmed his Baptism, by Coming to the Lords Table.

Nov. 4 Hannah Wife of William Deadman Baptised in the Second Church in Ipswich. Took on herSelf the Obligations of her Infant Baptism, and Came to the Lords Table.

Dec. 2 Timothy Orne Renewed his Covenant by Coming to the Lords Table.

[1739]

5 were received.

[287]

1740

April 20 Susannah Orne having Entered Into Covenant with God in this Church, and been Baptised this Day, Was also Admitted to the Lords Table.

June 1 Nathaniel King and Mary his Wife Took on themselves the Obligation of their Infant Baptism, and Came to the Lords Table.

July 6 Nathaniel Pike, Came to the Lords Table.

Nov. 2 Abigail Wife of John Pease Came to the Lords Table.

[1740]

5 were received.

1741

April 5 Mary, Wife of John Emerton Baptised in the Second Church in Ipswich and Lydia Neal; both came to the Lords Table.

July 5 Widow Sara Reeves Came to the Lords Table.

[1741]

3 were received.

1742

Sep. 5 Sarah Daughter of Samuel Ruck Came to the Lords Table.

Oct. 17 Hannah Wife of Ebenezer Peal Came to the Lords Table.

[1742]

2 were received.

1743

[Remainder of page blank]

[288]

Account of the Plate etc. Belonging to the First Church in Salem. December 1718¹

¹In 1913 the First Church silver consisted of "seven beakers (with handles), a caudle cup, two flagons, a baptismal basin, a dish for bread, and a spoon." E. A. Jones. *The Old Silver of American Churches*, 1913, pp. 418-425. The Veren tankard and the Hirst beaker have been lost; the large beaker given by Elizabeth Browne passed into the possession of the South Church; the metal in the silver basin given by William Browne Secundus was combined with two other pieces received in 1743 and 1763 into a silver dish by Churchill and Treadwell of Boston and is owned by The First Church; the baptismal basin given by Benjamin Browne was melted into two basins and distributed between the Tabernacle and the South Churches at the division of the Church stock in 1762. The First Church possessed 216 ounces of plate in 1735 which by agreement was divided with the Tabernacle Church by vote of the First Church, July 6, 1762. Subsequently in 1785 the Tabernacle and the South Church made a division between themselves. Cf. Buck, "Early Church Plate"; also John Stone, "Memorandum Book," pp. 100-102.

		oz.	Pen ^y
	To 1 Large Silver Bason Given per B. Browne Esquire 1708 — Weight	57.	4
1716	To 1 Large Silver Tankard Given per William Browne Esquire Secundus waying 29. oz. 18 penyweight or near	30.	0
	To 1 Ditto, nott markt, Given per the widow of Deacon Veren	25.	10
	To 1 Large Beaker Given per Elizabeth Browne, 1686, weight	15.	7
	To 5 Midling Beakers, Given per William Browne Senior Esquire 1687 waigh about 10 oz. each In the whole weight	49.	10
	To 1 Ditto, Given per Francis Skery Senior Weight	7.	12
	To 1 Ditto, nott markt, Supposed to be Given by Grove Hirst a Gift to Salem Church Weight	6.	7
		Oz. 191.	10

Dec. 1718.

To 2 Large Deep Pewter Dishes }
 To 2 Smal Ditto } markt. C.
 To 2 Pewter Flagons markt. } Given per Samuel and
 To 1 Smal Ditto } John Browne, 1710
 To 1 worn Holand Table Cloth.
 To 1 Ditto Napkin.
 To 1 Large Stone Jug, Holds aboutt 3 Gallons
 To 1 Ditto aboutt 2½ Gallons

[289]

1718

Belonging to the first Church of Salem, Mony which was given By the Honourable Benjamin Browne Esquire 1708, and some part Given By the Honourable William Browne Esquire 1716 — To be Lett outt to Interest — the Interest to be Improved Towards Providing for the Lords Table. The whole now Lett out att Interest To.

[The record ends abruptly at this point.]

Appendix A

MINISTERS OF THE FIRST CHURCH IN SALEM

1629-1755

- Samuel Skelton (1592/3-1634) Clare Hall, Cambridge
Ordained pastor 1629.
- Francis Higginson (1586-1630) Jesus College, Cambridge
Ordained teacher 1629.
- Roger Williams (c. 1603-1683)
Settled as teacher 1631, removed to Plymouth 1631, returned to Salem
as assistant 1633; dismissed 1635.
- Hugh Peter (1599-1660) Trinity College, Cambridge
Ordained pastor 1636; removed 1641.
- John Fisk (? -1677) King's College, Cambridge
Settled as assistant 1637; removed 1640.
- Edward Norris (1579?-1659)
Ordained teacher 1640.
- John Higginson (1615-1708)
Ordained Pastor 1660.
- Charles Nicholet
Preached 1671-1676; removed 1676.
- Nicholas Noyes (1647-1717) Harvard College 1667
Ordained teacher 1683.
- George Curwen (1683-1717) Harvard College 1701
Ordained pastor 1714.
- Samuel Fisk (1689-1770) Harvard College 1708
Ordained 1718; dismissed. Pastor of a church later called the Third
Church.
- John Sparhawk (1713-1755), Harvard College 1731
Ordained 1736.

Appendix B

SHORT TITLE LIST

Boston, *First Church Records*.

The Records of the First Church in Boston, 1630-1869.

Richard D. Pierce, ed., 3 vols. Boston, 1961. (Colonial Society of
Massachusetts *Publications*, vols. 39-41.)

Buck, "Early Church Plate."

John H. Buck, "The Early Church Plate of Salem," Essex Institute His-
torical Collections, XLIII, 97-114.

Dexter MSS. "Ecclesiastical Councils." Congregational Library, Boston.

No. 89. "Result of an Ecclesiastical Council held at Wenham, Mass. 29 July and 30 Sept. 1719. Copied from "Records of the Church at Rumney-Marsh" (Chelsea), i, 11-12.

No. 100. "Result of an Ecclesiastical Council held at the North-Precinct in Reading, Ms. in regard to difficulties existing between dissatisfied Members of the Church and the Rev. Daniel Putnam, Pastor." Copied from the "Records of the Church at Rumney-Marsh" (Chelsea), i, 20, 21.

Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths.

Dorchester Births, Marriages, and Deaths to the End of 1825. Boston, 1891. (Reports of the Records Commissioners of the City of Boston, No. 21)

Dorchester Church Records.

Records of the First Church at Dorchester in New England, 1636-1734. Boston, 1891.

Felt.

Joseph B. Felt, *The Annals of Salem, from Its First Settlement.* 2d. ed., 2 vols. Salem, 1849.

Fiske MS.

"John Fiske's Note-book." The minister's private record, covering Salem, 1637-1640, Wenham, 1644-1655, and Chelmsford, 1655-1675. Essex Institute. Part has been published by David Pulsifer, "Extracts from Records kept by the Rev. John Fiske, during his Ministry at Salem, Wenham, and Chelmsford," Essex Institute, *Historical Collections*, I (1859), 37-44. The Essex Institute also has David Pulsifer's manuscript copy of this record as well as a typescript made later.

Also in White, *Congregationalism*, pp. 25-36.

Hutchinson, History of Massachusetts Bay.

Thomas Hutchinson, *The History of the Colony and Province of Massachusetts Bay.* Lawrence Shaw Mayo, ed. 3 vols. Cambridge, 1936.

Lynde Diaries.

The Diaries of Benjamin Lynde, and of Benjamin Lynde, Jr. With an Appendix. Edited by F. E. Oliver. Cambridge, 1880.

Mass. Acts and Resolves

The Acts and Resolves, Public and Private, of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay: to which are prefixed the charters of the Province with historical and explanatory notes, and an appendix. Boston, 1869-1922. 21 vols.

Mass. Bay Records.

The Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England. Edited by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D. 5 vols in 6. Boston, 1853-1855.

Perley.

Sidney Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*. 3 vols. Salem, 1924, 1926, 1928.

Salem Town Records.

Town Records of Salem, Massachusetts, 1634-1691. 3 vols. Salem, 1868-1934.

Salem Vital Records.

Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849. 6 vols. Salem, 1916-1925.

Savage.

James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England, Showing Three Generations of those who Came before May, 1692, on the basis of Farmer's Register*. 4 vols. Boston, 1860-1862.

Sibley.

Biographical Sketches of Graduates of Harvard University, in Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1642-1689. By John Langdon Sibley. 3 vols. Cambridge, 1873-1885.

Biographical Sketches of Those Who Attended Harvard College in the Classes 1690- . By Clifford Kenyon Shipton, Vol. 4- . Cambridge and Boston, 1933- .

John Stone, "Memorandum Book."

John Stone, "Memorandum Book of John Stone, Deacon of the First Church", Essex Institute, *Historical Collections*, LXI (1925), 97-112, 259-264.

Watertown Records.

Watertown Records Comprising East Congregational and Precinct Affairs 1697 to 1737. Also Record Book of the Pastors, 1686 to 1819. Boston, 1906.

Rev. John Bailey kept the record book during his pastorate.

Wheatland.

Henry Wheatland, "Baptisms of the First Church of Salem," Essex Institute, *Historical Collections*, VI (1864), 227-228, 237-244; VII (1865), 12-16, 84-86, 119-128, 168-184, 221-232, 262-271; VIII (1866), 10-16, 75-82, 150-158, 205-215.

These are taken from the original record book, with added baptisms from a later volume.

D. A. White, New England Congregationalism.

Daniel A. White, *New England Congregationalism in its Origin and Purity; Illustrated by the Foundation and Early Records of the First Church in Salem, and Various Discussions Pertaining to the Subject*. Salem, 1861.

Appendix C

CONTEMPORARY WORKS RELATING TO THE FISK CONTROVERSY

A Just and impartial narrative of the controversy between the Rev. Mr. Samuel Fisk, the pastor, and a number of brethren of the First Church in Salem. Boston, 1735.

A Faithful narrative of the proceedings of the Ecclesiastical Council, convened at Salem in 1734. Occasioned by the scandalous divisions in the First Church in that town. [By Joseph Sewall, Thomas Prince and others.] Boston, 1735.

A Letter to a friend relating to the differences in the First Church in Salem, wherein the proceedings of the Ecclesiastical Councils concerned in that affair are vindicated, and the objections raised against them answered. [By Benjamin Prescott.] Boston, 1735.

A Letter relating to the divisions in the First Church of Salem. [By Benjamin Prescott.] Boston, 1734.

New-England's Lamentations under three heads, The decay of the power of godliness; The danger of Arminian principles; The declining state of our Church-Order, government and discipline. By John White, Pastor of the first Church in Gloucester. Boston, 1734.

Pages 31-33, 36-42 refer specifically to Salem.

Remarks on some contents of a Letter relating to the divisions of The First Church in Salem. By John Brown. Boston, 1735.

Index of Persons

- Abbot, 197, 291
 Christian, 197
 Daniel, 51, 209, 210
 Aborne, 316
 Jane, 68, 69, 314
 Joseph, 69
 Martha, 67
 Mercy, 316, 332
 Samuel, 67, 69, 314, 316
 William, 332
 Abrahams, 247
 Hannah, 247
 Adams,
 Daniel, 305
 Elizabeth, 74
 Jonas, 74, 76, 78, 81, 82, 305
 Martha, 226
 Richard, 154
 Samuel, 76
 Sarah, 74, 76, 78, 81, 82, 305
 William, 82
 Ager, 17
 Alice, 6
 Benjamin, 16
 Jonathan, 17
 William, 16
 Ainsworth, 115
 Alderman,
 Jane, 6
 John, 6
 Alderton, 12
 Alford, 19
 Bethiah, 19
 Mary, 6
 Nathaniel, 16
 Samuel, 17
 Tabitha, 40
 William, 16, 17
 Allen, Allin, 31, 33, 34, 167, 330
 Alice, 31
 Anna, 52, 210
 Abigail, 47, 49, 52, 61, 67, 70, 75, 187, 210, 313, 328, 330
 Bathiah, 17
 Benjamin, 34, 45, 66, 67, 70, 75, 313, 328
 Bethia, 32
 Deborah, 16
 Elizabeth, 6, 33, 34, 54, 141, 192
 Jacob, 160, 167, 192
 John, 19, 32, 46, 47, 48, 187
 Jonathan, 22, 36
 Joseph, 32, 45, 46, 48, 49, 54, 70
 Martha, 75
 Mary, 22
 Onesipherus, 19
 Rachell, 31
 Rebecca, 306
 Robert, 11, 19, 22, 96, 306
 Samuel, 27, 29, 34, 36
 Sarah, 19, 32
 W., 31, 32, 97
 W[illiam], 28
 William, 6, 16, 17, 19, 21, 22, 29, 33
 Zebulon, 49
 Allin — see Allen
 Amyes,
 Joane, 7
 Ruth, 7
 Andrew, Andrews, 32, 37, 163
 Anna, 46
 Abigail, 77, 263
 Archer,
 Abigail, 28, 49, 52, 71, 73, 75, 77, 79, 81, 304
 Benjamin, 28, 55, 67, 244
 Bethia, 19, 28, 154, 304
 Ebenezer, 35
 Elizabeth, 304

- George, 306
 Hanna, 33, 165
 Hannah, 35, 78, 79, 304, 306, 319
 J., 33
 John, 17, 28, 29, 30, 35, 47, 60, 67, 72, 77, 111, 112, 309, 328
 Jonathan, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 71, 73, 75, 77, 79, 81, 304
 Joseph, 30, 31
 Mary, 33
 Nathl., 304, 306
 Nathaneel, 78, 319
 Nathaniel, 37, 51, 79
 Rebecca, 67, 72, 328
 Samuel, 17, 19, 28, 30, 31, 33, 35, 37, 50, 71, 73, 100, 101, 111, 114
 Samuell, 6
 Sarah, 52, 55, 81, 244
 Stephen, 52, 221
 Susana, 15
 Thomas, 29
 Anchor — see Archer
 Armstrong, 314, 331
 Isabella, 314, 331
 Arthur, Priscilla, 40, 188
 Ashby, 29, 178
 Abigail, 29, 36, 43
 Anthony, 36 fn
 Benjamin, 43, 61, 178, 306
 Elizabeth, 36
 Gershom, 29
 Hanna, 42
 Hannah, 42, 65, 305
 Jemima, 58, 251
 Jemimah, 58, 61, 63, 65
 John, 42, 63
 Jon, 36
 Jonathan, 56, 58, 61, 63, 65, 82, 251, 305, 306, 322, 323
 Mary, 82, 305, 306, 322
 Atkinson,
 Abigail, 62, 70
 Elizabeth, 73
 John, 66
 Mary, 60, 62, 64, 66, 68, 70, 73, 76, 78, 309
 Mercy, 78
 Norman, 60
 Sarah, 76
 Theodore, 60, 62, 64, 66, 68, 70, 73, 76, 78, 309
 Timothy, 60
 William, 68
 Atwater,
 Hitty, 39
 John, 39
 Rebecka, 198
 Auger, William, 5
 Ausgood — see Osgood
 Avery, Thomas, 7

 Babbidg — see Babbidge
 Babbidge, Babbidg, Babbridge,
 Bavadge, Bavage, 33, 204
 Anne, 31
 Benjamin, 55
 Christopher, 26, 33, 34, 36, 50, 50 fn, 51, 55, 99, 204, 263
 Elizabeth, 34
 G., 31
 George, 33
 Hanna, 165
 [John], 50
 John, 50 fn
 Lydia, 50 fn, 51, 204
 Mehitabel, 53
 Nehemiah, 36
 Richard, 33
 Ruth, 26
 Sara, 155
 Sarah, 183, 183 fn
 Babbridge — see Babbidge
 Bachelder — see Bachelor
 Bacheldor — see Bachelor
 Bachelor, Bachelder, Bacheldor,
 Bachiler, 8, 17, 20
 Ab[igail], 96
 Abigaile, 19
 Elizabeth, 96
 Hanna, 20
 John, 8, 17, 18, 19, 96
 Jon, 20, 22, 23

- Joseph, 7, 23, 96
 Mark, 95, 99
 Mary, 8, 18
 Bachiler — see Bachelor
 Bacon, 12, 18, 43, 56, 63, 175, 197
 Benjamin, 43, 56, 63, 175 fn
 Daniel, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 63, 65, 70, 175, 175 fn, 179, 250, 310, 315, 332, 336
 Elizabeth, 45, 63, 65, 70
 Hanna, 52, 53, 218
 Hannah, 56
 Isaack, 18
 Jno., 56
 John, 46, 52, 53, 54, 218
 Margaret, 50
 Margarett, 59
 Mehitable, 56 fn
 Michael, 50, 52, 53, 56 fn
 Michel, 49, 50, 197
 Mighil, 59
 Mikil, 54, 56
 Rebecka, 10
 Retire, 59
 Samuel, 52, 54
 Sarah, 43, 53, 61, 175 fn, 310, 315, 332
 Shattock, 56
 Spencer, 47
 Susanna, 54
 Susannah, 44, 179
 Tabitha, 53
 Bailey — see Baily
 Baily, Bailey, Balye, 143, 147, 149, 152
 James, 143 fn
 John, 198 fn
 Baker, 26
 An, 116
 Barbara, 56
 Cornelius, 28, 28 fn
 Edmund, 56
 H., 28
 [Hannah], 97
 Hannah, 28 fn
 Samuel, 28
 Balch, Balsh, Baulch,
 John, 5
 Margery, 6
 Mary, 96
 Baldin, 145
 Balsh — see Balch
 Balye — see Baily
 Bankes — see Banks
 Banks, Bankes
 Lyddea, 6
 Lydia, 102
 Barber, Barbor, 18
 Goodman, 10
 John, 11, 18
 Barbor — see Barber
 Barnard, xx, 279, 281, 288
 John, 246, 246 fn, 252, 289, 292
 Thomas, xxiii, xxv fn
 Barnardistone, Kathern, 9
 Barnett, Alice, 9
 Barney,
 Anna, 7
 Jacob, 6, 17
 Bartholmew — see Bartholomew
 Bartholomew, Bartholmew, 23, 91, 92, 94, 95
 Abigaile, 23
 Abraham, 21
 Eleazer, 22
 Eliza, 18
 Elizabeth, 24
 Hanna, 19
 Henry, 6, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Richard, 10
 Sarah, 25
 William, 23
 Bartlett,
 Mary, 58
 Sarah, 58
 William, 58
 Bartol, Bartoll, 29
 Alice, 29
 G., 158
 Hannah, 54
 John, 29
 Mary, 29, 121

- Robert, 29
 Samuel, 29
 Sarah, 61, 310
 Thomas, 29
 William, 29, 54, 56, 121, 158, 240
 Bartoll — see Bartol
 Barton, 32, 35, 37, 39, 52, 55, 143, 217
 Abigail, 35
 Benjamin, 50
 Elizabeth, 37, 217, 227, 263
 John, 43, 52
 Martha, 50, 114
 Mary, 32, 55
 Mathew, 43, 44, 47, 50, 227
 Matthew, 48
 Patience, 44
 Samuel, 39, 47
 Sarah, 48
 Susanna, 48
 Thomas, 217, 247, 254, 256, 281, 284, 286, 292, 295
 Zacheus, 35
 Baston, 37
 Daniel, 37
 Thomas, 158
 Bateman,
 Debora, 39
 Enos, 39
 Ruth, 39
 Bates, Rachel, 304, 323
 Batter, xxiii, 30, 31, 33, 38, 46, 52, 87, 100, 101, 128, 131, 132, 184, 187
 Daniel, 35, 54
 Edmond, 5, 184
 [Edmund], 53
 Edmund, 30, 46, 48, 49, 50, 54, 187, 326
 Elizabeth, 33, 46
 Martha, 50, 53
 Mary, 31, 46, 49
 Sarah, 6, 52
 Batters, 311, 316, 331, 332, 333
 Mary, 333
 Battin, 203, 320
 Christopher, 50, 53, 54, 57, 72, 203
 Hannah, 72, 79, 80, 83, 320
 John, 50, 51, 53, 79, 80, 83, 320
 Mary, 51, 72, 203
 Richard, 53, 80
 Susannah, 83
 William, 72
 Baudouin — see Bowdoin
 Baulch — see Balch
 Bavadge — see Babbidge
 Bavage — see Babbidge
 Baxter, Sarah, 196
 Beach,
 Ruth, 42
 Samuel, 42
 Beachum,
 Edward, 9, 18, 19, 21, 22
 Elizabeth, 22
 Mary, 10, 19, 21
 Samuel, 18
 Beadle — see Beedle
 Beal, 29, 29 fn, 30
 Elizabeth, 221
 G., 121
 Hanna, 29, 30
 Martha, 121
 Nathaniel, 29
 Beans,
 Abigail, 50
 Caleb, 52, 53
 Elizabeth, 54
 Joshua, 50, 52, 53, 54, 55, 312, 330
 Mary, 65, 312, 330
 Nathaniel, 52
 Robert, 50
 William, 52, 55
 Becket, Beckett, Beckit, 238, 239
 Benjamin, 44
 Christian, 56
 Elizabeth, 46
 Hanna, 43
 John, 43, 54, 56, 154, 239, 288, 331
 Margaret, 154
 Margrit, 43

- Mary, 43, 54, 56, 238
 Retire, 48
 Susanna, 54, 239
 Susannah, 288, 321
 W., 43
 William, 43, 44, 46, 48, 56, 238
 Beckett — see Becket
 Beckford, xxv
 Becket — see Becket
 Bedel — see Beedle
 Bedle — see Beedle
 Beedle, Beadle, Bedel, Bedle, 30, 31,
 33, 242, 313
 Abigail, 44, 67, 313, 331
 Benjamin, 39, 54, 67, 313, 331
 Daniel, 44
 David, 55
 Elizabeth, 55, 67, 242
 Hanna, 35, 47
 Hannah, 188, 251
 John, 41, 43
 Jonathan, 39, 44, 55
 Joseph, 44, 55, 242, 305
 Lemmon, 33, 54
 Lemon, 52
 Lydia, 305
 Margaret, 55, 242, 243
 Margarett, 263, 288, 313, 329
 Mary, 33
 Nath., 178
 Nathaniel, 29, 44, 47, 188
 Ruth, 67
 Samuel, 29, 35, 39, 52, 251
 Sarah, 55
 Susanna, 31
 Thomas, 39, 41, 43, 55, 57, 242,
 243, 288, 313, 329
 Begoe, 314
 Francis, 68
 Lydia, 68, 314
 Belcher, Andrew, 199
 Bennett,
 Abigail, 79
 Aron, 19
 Deliverance, 19
 Henry, 79, 335
 James, 24
 Jane, 12, 19
 Mary, 24, 79
 Moses, 19
 Bentley, William, xxv, xxvi fn
 Best,
 David, 68
 John, 46
 Joseph, 46
 Lydia, 68
 Sarah, 60, 309, 329
 Bethel,
 Hannah, 54, 239
 Richard, 239
 Bickford, xxi, xxii
 Benjamin, 57, 75
 Bethiah, 57, 312
 Ebenezer, 57
 Edmond, 68
 Elizabeth, 64, 65, 66, 68, 70, 71,
 72, 73, 75, 315, 328, 330
 George, 57, 64, 66, 68, 71, 73,
 315, 330
 John, 57, 62, 63, 65, 66, 70, 72,
 75, 312, 328
 Martha, 66
 Mary, 62, 70, 73
 Priscilla, 57
 Rebecca, 57, 62, 63, 328
 Samuel, 72
 Sarah, 63
 William, 57, 71
 Biose, Goodie, 116
 Birch,
 Abigail, 40, 193
 Mary, 37
 Birchmore, 314
 Mary, 68, 314
 Zachary, 68, 314
 Bishop, Bishopp, 27
 Edw., 116
 Edward, 12, 21, 23
 Hanna, 21
 Jon, 19
 Leah, 16
 Mary, 23
 Richard, 8

- Townshend, 5, 16, 19
 William, 27
 Bishopp — see Bishop
 Black, Blacke, 18
 Daniel, 60
 Elizabeth, 60, 251
 Freeborn, 116
 Jo, 116
 Jo., 116
 Jon, 16
 John, 6, 16, 18
 Lyddea, 16
 Lydea, 16
 Nathaniel, 60, 251
 Blacke — see Black
 Blackenbury,
 Ellyn, 6
 Richard, 6
 Blacker, Jone, 158
 Blackleach — see Blackleech
 Blackleech, Blackleach, 92
 Benony, 19
 Eliza, 18
 Elizabeth, 7, 20
 Exersise, 16
 Jon, 17, 20
 Jonathan, 16
 John, 6, 18, 19
 Joshua, 17
 Blackley, 35
 Elizabeth, 35
 William, 35
 Blackly, Jone, 156
 Blanchard,
 Ann, 12
 William, 10
 Blanco, 170
 Blower, Blowers, Blowr, 57, 207, 288
 Abigail, 61
 John, 61
 Thomas, 57 fn, 186, 186 fn, 207
 fn, 259, 260, 267
 Blowers — see Blower
 Blowr — see Blower
 Bly,
 Benjamin, 52
 Debora, 45
 Deborah, 180
 Elizabeth, 50, 328
 Goodie, 121
 Hannah, 55
 John, 183
 Jonathan, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53,
 55, 194, 238, 328
 Rebecca, 106, 134
 Rebecka, 183
 Sarah, 49, 238
 Susanna, 53
 Blyth,
 Benjamin, 78, 79, 335
 Jonathan, 61
 Mary, 78, 79, 335
 Samuel, 61
 Sarah, 61, 79
 Bonfield,
 Georg, 158
 Georg., 157
 Booth, 32, 33, 34
 Alice, 34, 152
 Benjamin, 34, 80
 Bridget, 32
 Elizabeth, 32, 34, 43, 175
 George, 34 fn, 43, 175
 Mary, 33
 Phoebe, 34
 Rebecca, 32, 144
 Susanna, 34
 Simeon, 146
 W., 155
 Zachariah, 32
 Bootman
 Abigail, 82
 Benjamin, 70, 74, 77, 82
 Elizabeth, 70, 74, 77, 80, 82
 Hanna, 222
 Hannah, 74
 Sarah, 77
 William, 80
 Boston, 46, 185
 Joseph, 91
 Lydia, 46
 Botta,
 Robert, 17
 William, 16

- Bound,
 Anne, 6
 James, 16
- Bourne,
 Deborah, 21
 Dorcas, 22
 John, 12, 21
 Jon, 22
- Bowdige — see Bowditch
- Bowdish — see Bowditch
- Bowditch, Bowdige, Bowdish, 19,
 44, 45, 46, 48, 50, 51
 Daniel, 51
 Ebenezer, 48
 Elizabeth, 73, 75, 312
 Eunice, 50, 312
 Joseph, 46, 66, 73, 312
 Mary, 40, 42, 75, 180, 217
 Nathaniel, 19
 Sarah, 9, 44, 66, 189, 193, 230
 Thomas, 45
 [William], 42
 William, 53, 66, 180, 256, 257,
 312
- Bowdoin, Baudouin
 Pierre, 145 fn
 Rachel, 145 fn
- Bownd,
 Peeter, 17
 William, 6, 17
- Bowrne,
 John, 20
 Jon, 20
- Boyce, Boys,
 Benjamin, 21
 Elizabeth, 18
 Hester, 18
 J., 94
 Joseph, 18, 20, 21, 93
- Boyden, Elizabeth, 127
- Boyer, Joseph, 10
- Boys — see Boyce
- Brackenbery, Brackenbury, 116
 Hanna, 23
 Rich., 116
 Richard, 23
- Brackett, Brocket, Broket, 149
 Joseph, 23
 Mary, 22
 Thomas, 20, 22, 23
- Bradford, xii, xiii, xv
- Brawdway — see Broadway
- Bray, 320
 Abigail, 80
 Benjamin, 58, 66, 71, 78
 Daniel, 78
 Elizabeth, 80, 320
 Hannah, 58, 66, 71, 78
 Mary, 80
 Robert, 66
 Sarah, 71
- Brayne, Agnes, 6
- Briant, Thomas, 279 fn
- Bridges, 33
 Alice, 33
 Caleb, 33 fn
 Hannah, 33 fn
- Bridgman,
 Elizabeth, 14
 Jon, 22
 Mary, 22
- Bright,
 Abiel, 78
 Francis, xii, xiii, xiii fn
 Lois, 68, 76, 78, 313, 329
 Margaret, 6
 Thomas, 68, 76, 78, 313, 329
- Britt,
 Ambross, 24
 Rebeca, 24
- Britton, 322
 Edward, 82, 317, 322
 Hannah, 82, 322
 Rachel, 70, 317
- Broadstreet, 151
- Broadway, Brawdway, Broardway,
 Brodway
 Christian, 62
 Mary, 45, 62, 180
 Richard, 62
- Broardway — see Broadway
- Brock, 195
 John, 95 fn

- Brocket — see Brackett
 Brodway — see Broadway
 Broket — see Brackett
 Broun — see Brown
 Broune — see Brown
 Brown, Broun, Broune, Browne, 17,
 18, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24, 25, 29, 31,
 33, 55, 89, 99, 122, 151, 153,
 155, 178, 186, 209, 230, 255,
 256, 264
 Abiel, 30
 Abigail, 59, 222
 Ales, 7
 Anna, 142
 B., 338
 Bartholmew, 28, 53
 Bartholomew, 250
 Benjamin, 46, 49, 55, 72, 74,
 178, 182, 199, 220, 317, 337 fn,
 338
 Daniel, 33
 David, 64
 Elizabeth, 20, 31, 35, 169, 337
 fn, 338
 Eunice, 72, 74, 317
 George, 71
 Hanna, 21, 26, 28, 30, 34, 46,
 52 fn, 72, 108
 Jacob, 18
 James, 18, 19, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29,
 30, 46, 47, 48, 49, 111
 Jane, 48, 51
 Jo:, 128
 Joana, 19
 John, 7, 17, 18, 19, 26, 27, 28,
 30, 45, 47, 49, 51, 52, 52 fn, 53,
 54, 55, 56, 64, 66, 67, 68, 71,
 85, 85 fn, 121, 148, 182, 250,
 263, 338
 Jon, 19, 20, 25, 28, 64, 66
 Jonathan, 220, 221
 Joseph, 33, 54, 127, 133, 304
 Katherine, 51
 Lydia, 67, 304
 Marget, 27
 Margrit, 51
 Mary, 23, 25, 33, 46, 47, 47 fn,
 51, 61, 69, 100, 209, 315
 Mercy, 36
 Nathaniel, 20
 Peter, 26, 61, 63, 65, 71
 Rachel, 65
 Rebecca, 61, 63, 64, 65, 66, 68,
 71, 327
 Richard, 291
 Samuel, 26, 29, 47 fn, 49, 50, 51,
 54, 56, 59, 178, 191, 212, 220,
 221, 222, 236, 254, 258, 267,
 268, 270, 284, 286, 338
 Samuel, 18
 Sarah, 13, 47
 W., 31, 33, 34, 36
 W[illiam], 28, 31
 William, 11, 13, 21, 22, 25, 29,
 30, 34, 35, 45, 51, 52, 69, 128,
 142, 148, 209, 315, 337 fn, 338
 Browne — see Brown
 Browning, 98, 122
 Deborah, 21
 Mary, 16
 Thomas, 6, 16, 21
 Browns, 100
 Buchier,
 Daniel, 75
 Rachel, 75
 Sarah, 75
 Bucknam, Nathan, 307, 307 fn
 Buckley, Buckly, 136, 150
 Buckly — see Buckley
 Buckston, 154
 Anthony, 154
 Bulfinch, Bulfinge
 Ann, 11
 Goodman, 10
 Bulfinge — see Bulfinch
 Bullock, 249, 324
 Benjamin, 69
 Elizabeth, 56, 306, 324
 Hannah, 61
 John, 56, 59, 61, 63, 65, 249,
 306, 324
 Mary, 59, 61, 63, 65, 249, 306
 Burdsall, Henry, 7
 Burk, Edward, 38 fn

- Burro — see Burrows
 Burroughs — see Burrows
 Burrowes — see Burrows
 Burrows, Burro, Burroughs,
 Burrowes, 34, 41, 42, 152
 Charles, 42, 50, 52, 194
 Elizabeth, 34
 George, 41, 50, 152
 Jeremiah, 42, 209
 Josiah, 42
 Burton,
 Abiel, 320
 Benjamin, 320
 Bush,
 Benjamin, 37
 Edward, 38, 39, 42
 Elizabeth, 37, 163, 263
 Estick, 39
 Estwick, 42
 Butler,
 Ames, 75
 Elizabeth, 75, 326
 John, 75
 Mary, 247
 Batten — see Button
 Buttolph,
 Hanna, 42
 John, 42
 William, 54, 241
 Button, Batten,
 Abigaile, 20
 Robert, 11, 20
 Samuel, 18
 Byam, 20
 Abraham, 20
 George, 10

 Cabbott — see Cabot
 Cabot, Cabott, 52, 210
 Anna, 52, 60, 330
 Elizabeth, 54
 Esther, 315, 330
 Francis, 56
 Hannah, 210
 Hester, 52
 John, 52, 53, 54, 56, 60, 315,
 330
 Joseph, 60
 Margret, 53
 Mary, 52
 Susanna, 52
 Caiton — see Caton
 Callum, Mary, 306, 325
 Candidge — see Candish
 Candish, Candidge, 43, 43 fn., 176,
 178, 183
 Mary, 176 fn.
 William, 43, 176 fn.
 Carder, 36
 John, 36
 Joseph, 36
 Peter, 36
 Rebecca, 36, 156, 158
 Samuel, 36
 Carill, Carrill, Carryl, Caryl, 317
 Abigail, 55
 Ebenezer, 305
 Edward, 55, 63, 335
 Elizabeth, 51, 63, 77, 335
 John, 51, 73, 75, 77, 79, 82, 305,
 317
 Jonathan, 75
 Mary, 51, 59
 Preserved, 82
 Priscilla, 82
 Provided, 73, 75, 77, 79, 305, 317
 Samuel, 63
 Susannah, 63
 Carrill — see Carill
 Carryl — see Carill
 Carter,
 Elizabeth, 48, 50
 James, 74
 John, 45, 47, 48, 50, 51, 182
 Lydea, 47
 Martha, 45, 182
 Mary, 45, 50, 74, 182
 Obed, 48, 50, 51
 Sarah, 45, 182
 Carver, Dorcas, 40, 170
 Caryl — see Carill
 Cash,
 Abigail, 76
 Elizabeth, 42

- Richard, 76
 William, 56, 76
 Catin — see Caton
 Caton, Caiton, Catin, Kaiton, 41, 41
 fn
 Daniel, 41
 John, 61
 Mary, 41, 61
 Susanna, 41
 Chadwell, 30, 33
 Mary, 30
 Prisca, 33
 Chadwick, 31
 Anna, 31
 Champney, 299
 Joseph, 291, 291 fn
 Chaplin,
 Benjamin, 39
 J., 168
 Jo., 39
 John, 156, 194
 Mary, 154
 Chapman, 204, 211, 211 fn, 243,
 246, 292, 299
 Dorcas, 246
 Elizabeth, 72, 73, 309
 George Williams, 82
 Hannah, 60, 66, 70, 72, 74, 76,
 77, 78, 328
 Isaac, 60
 John, 66, 70, 72, 74, 76, 77, 78,
 243 fn, 295, 309, 328
 Jonathan, 78
 Joseph, 73, 76, 78, 81
 Lydia, 78, 81
 Margaret, 55
 Margrit, 50
 Mary, 73, 74
 Samuel, 60, 77
 Sarah, 73, 76, 78, 81
 Stephen, 204
 Steven, 50, 55, 56, 246
 Charles I, King, xi
 Charles II, King, 95 fn
 Charles, Sarah, 12
 Cheevers, Cheevor, Chievers, Che-
 ver, 30, 31, 33, 35, 142, 143,
 149, 159, 210, 223, 246, 292,
 319
 Ames, 247, 247 fn
 Daniel, 67, 69, 71, 78, 315, 328
 Desire, 71
 Ezekiel, 31, 34, 38, 152
 Hannah, 305
 Lydia, 51, 223
 Margaret, 74, 75, 78, 80, 306
 Mary, 33, 34, 78, 81, 319
 P., 39
 Peter, 39, 51, 74, 75, 78, 80, 81,
 210, 305, 306
 Richard, 78
 Samuel, 30, 31, 34, 35, 39, 51,
 78, 80, 81, 158, 159 fn, 319
 Sarah, 67, 71, 167, 305, 306, 328
 Thomas, 170, 278
 Cheevors — see Cheevers
 Chevarty, 41, 42
 Mary, 41
 Richard, 41
 Chever — see Cheevers
 Cheverly, Philip, 42
 Chichester, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Elizabeth, 24
 James, 14, 22, 23, 24
 Jon, 22
 Martha, 22
 Mary, 14, 22
 Sarah, 23
 Susanna, 25
 William, 24
 Chievers — see Cheevers
 Chin, 34, 35
 Mary, 34
 Rebecca, 35 fn
 Samuel, 35
 Churchill, 337 fn
 Clark, Clarke, Cleark, 29, 30, 31,
 33, 276, 288, 299
 Abigail, 29, 121
 Arther, 11
 Bethiah, 16
 Deborah, 20
 Elizabeth, 29
 G., 158

- James, 30
 John, 33
 Mary, 31
 Peter, 250, 250 fn, 291, 307, 332
 Rebecca, 29
 Ruth, 30
 Samuel, 29
 Sarah, 29
 Susana, 19
 William, 16, 19, 20, 29
 Clattery, Mary, 159
 Cleark — see Clark
 Clemons,
 Elizabeth, 304
 Mary, 304
 Samuel, 304
 Clifford, 141
 Elizabeth, 114
 Clois — see Cloys
 Clottery, Mary, 158
 Clough,
 Anne, 81
 Ebenezer, 81
 Gibson, 81
 Cloutman, 323
 John, 304, 305, 323
 Mary, 304
 Sarah, 304, 305, 323
 Cloyce — see Cloys
 Cloye,
 Benoni, 35
 James, 33
 P[eter], 35
 Peter, 33
 Cloys, Clois, Cloyce,
 Abigail, 32
 Hanna, 32, 156
 Mary, 32
 Peter, 32, 142, 170
 Coburn,
 Edward, 186
 Robert, 48
 Sara, 48
 Sarah, 186
 Cocks, 184
 Edward, 81, 321
 Henry, 46
 Mary, 77, 79
 Remember, 46, 184
 William, 77, 79
 Codman, 18
 Benjamin, 18
 Codner, Rachel, 100
 Coes, 36
 Agnes, 36
 Grace, 36, 156, 158
 Micael, 36
 Coffin, 300
 Eunice, 81, 300
 Henry, 81, 300
 Mary, 81
 Cole,
 Abigail, 59
 Abr[aham], 40
 Abraham, 30, 36, 38, 59
 Ann, 14
 Elizabeth, 59, 60, 326
 John, 308, 326
 Jonathan, 71
 Marcy, 56
 Mary, 59, 308, 326
 Mercy, 59, 252, 326
 Ruth, 59
 Samuel, 38, 59, 60, 71, 326
 Sarah, 30
 Susanna, 36
 Thomas, 40, 56, 59, 252, 326
 Colebrook, 31
 William, 31
 Colefox, Elizabeth, 37
 Collier, 209
 Elizabeth, 51, 209, 249
 John, 51, 209
 Collins, 41, 54, 144, 195
 Adoniram, 48, 49, 50, 51, 54,
 195
 Daniel, 44
 Elizabeth, 41, 245
 Eunice, 44, 50, 314
 Hanna, 38, 48, 49, 165
 Hannah, 40
 James, 39, 50, 51, 209
 Jo., 40
 John, 45, 46, 48, 50, 51, 144,

- 144 fn, 184, 250, 314
 Mary, 39, 51, 184, 195, 209,
 245, 250, 263
 Mehitable, 144 fn
 Miles, 39
 Preserved, 45
 Sarah, 46, 48
 Colman, 236, 246, 260
 Benjamin, 236, 259, 281
 Coman, 38
 William, 38
 Comer, Elizabeth, 163
 Conally,
 John, 63
 Katherine, 63
 Sarah, 63
 Conant, 96, 98, 157, 158
 Elizabeth, 26, 93, 157 fn
 Exersise, 16, 92, 116
 John, 26
 Lot, 26, 28, 95, 116
 Martha, 26
 Nathaniel, 26
 Roger, xi, 5, 16, 26, 116, 157,
 157 fn
 Sara, 117
 Sarah, 6, 28
 William, 28
 Concklin — see Conklyn
 Concklyne — see Conklyn
 Conckline — see Conklyn
 Conklyn, Concklin, Conckline,
 Concklyne, Conckline, 22, 42 fn
 Annaias, 9, 19
 Elizabeth, 13, 22
 Jacob, 22
 Lewis, 19
 Susan, 10
 Cook, Cooke, 10, 18, 319
 Abigail, 80, 81, 83, 304, 320
 Benjamin, 62, 71, 79, 80, 82,
 305, 319
 Daniel, 62
 Ebenezer, 59, 61, 62, 64, 67, 71,
 74, 306, 326
 Edward, 305
 Elizabeth, 18, 42, 62, 79, 80, 82,
 173, 226, 305, 319
 Eunice, 71, 75, 78, 80, 83, 305
 George, 62, 305
 Hannah, 61, 62, 75, 310, 316
 Isaac, 59, 60, 62, 326
 James, 62, 77, 79, 81, 304, 306,
 319
 Jno., 65
 John, 10, 18, 61, 78, 80, 304,
 312
 Jon, 19
 Jonathan, 62, 67, 74
 Joseph, 62, 65, 71, 75, 78, 80,
 81, 83, 87, 305, 310, 312
 Lydia, 53, 55, 221, 242, 243
 Margaret, 62, 64, 67
 Margarett, 59, 61, 62, 71, 74, 79,
 80, 304, 310, 326
 Martha, 60, 62, 69, 326
 Mary, 19, 50, 60, 62, 81, 83,
 272, 273, 309, 316
 Rachel, 77, 79, 81, 83, 304, 305,
 306, 319
 Robert, 59
 Samuel, 50, 52, 62, 64, 80, 87,
 304, 320
 Sarah, 18
 Susannah, 82
 William, 81
 Cooke — see Cook
 Cooms,
 Joanna, 166
 Mikil, 165
 Cooper,
 Rebeca, 14
 Samuel, 48
 Sarah, 196
 William, 246, 246 fn
 Corning, 91, 116
 Elizabeth, 19
 Sam:, 116
 Sam, 116
 Samuel, 19
 Samuell, 9
 Cornish,
 Rember, 17
 Samuel, 17, 18

- Corwin — see Curwin
 Corwine — see Curwin
 Corwithen, David, 13
 Corwithie, Grace, 12
 Corwithy, Mary, 15
 Cory,
 G[iles], 173
 Giles, 170, 219
 Cote,
 A., 31
 Abraham, 31
 Cotta, 16
 Bethshua, 17
 Johane, 6
 John, 20
 Mary, 18
 Obadiah, 19
 Peeter, 19
 Rober, 16
 Robert, 18, 19, 20
 Cotton, 87, 115
 John, 102 fn
 Covenant, Ha[], 143
 Cox, 310
 Ann, 61, 310
 Anne, 63
 Benjamin, 61, 63, 310
 Edward, 336
 Francis, 61
 John, 63, 68
 Margarett, 310
 Remember, 184
 Sarah, 68
 William, 61
 Coytherill,
 William, 55 fn
 Crawley, Mary, 70
 Crispin,
 Mary, 79, 80, 320
 Richard, 79, 80, 320
 William, 79
 Croad, Croade, Crode, 26, 28, 95,
 146
 Elizabeth, 25, 42, 93
 Hanna, 26
 Hingam, 27
 John, 25, 26, 30, 42, 43, 44, 45,
 46
 Jonathan, 28
 Mary, 46
 R[ichard], 30
 Richard, 145 fn
 Ruth, 45
 Sara, 27
 Thomas, 44
 Croade — see Croad
 Crode — see Croad
 Cromwell, 15
 Thomas, 15
 Crowell,
 Elizabeth, 330
 John, 288, 330
 Crowningshield,
 Anstis, 288, 330
 John, 288, 330
 Cruff,
 Hannah, 71, 76
 John, 71, 76
 Thomas, 71, 76
 Cummins,
 George, 305, 306, 323
 Jane, 305, 323
 Mary, 305, 306, 323
 Sarah, 306
 Curtis, 106
 Abigail, 80, 81
 Alice, 163
 Caleb, 22
 Ebenezer, 80
 Elizabeth, 37
 Hanna, 25
 John, 25
 Richard, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Samuel, 23, 81
 Sara, 24
 Sarah, 14, 22
 Zachariah, 80, 81
 Curwin, Corwin, Corwine, Cyrwine,
 18, 19, 20, 21, 29, 30, 126, 170,
 216, 217, 236, 272, 261
 Abigaile, 19
 Anna, 38
 Bartholmew, 42

Elizabeth, 9, 21, 28, 187
 Georg, 42
 George, xx, 27, 35, 53, 55, 56,
 197, 208, 212, 213, 214, 215,
 217, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235,
 236, 237, 252, 259, 339
 Hanna, 20, 30
 Herbert, 41
 J., 33, 167
 J[ohn], 31
 Jo[hn], 28, 29
 John, 27, 30, 31, 36
 Jon., 33, 38, 40, 41, 139
 Jon[athan], 33
 Jonathan, 18, 34, 35, 36, 37, 40,
 53, 111, 155, 182, 186, 187
 Lucy, 29
 Lydia, 176
 Margaret, 33, 37
 Mary, 31
 Mehitabel, 217
 Penelope, 29
 Samuel, xviii fn, 31, 55
 Sarah, 33
 Susanna, 30
 Curwithy, 106
 Cyrwine — see Curwin

Daby — see Darby

Dam, John, 163

Daniel, 31, 37

John, 69

Margarett, 69, 70, 77, 315

Mary, 69, 70, 315, 330

Sarah, 31

Sergeant, 77

Stephen, 35 fn, 69, 70, 77, 288,

315, 330

Susana, 156

Susanna, 35, 37, 224, 226

William, 69

Darby, Daby, Derby, 35, 242

Alice, 35, 156

Ann, 55

Elizabeth, 36, 308, 325

Ester, 40

G., 158

Hannah, 55, 59, 242

John, 35

Martha, 56

Mary, 37, 50

Richard, 50, 53, 56

Samuel, 55, 59, 242

Temperance, 55

Thomas, 36, 37, 40, 160

Darland,

Abigail, 34

Hanna, 34

John, 34

Martha, 34

Darlin — see Darling

Darling, Darlin,

Abigail, 53

Daniel, 312, 326, 329

Elizabeth, 46

George, 53

Hannah, 326

John, 47

Mary, 66, 312, 329

Thomas, 46, 47

Datten, Sarah, 68, 314

Daunton, 26

Davenport,

Elizabeth, 6

Experience, 16

John, 18, 120

Richard, 6, 16, 18

Davis, 308

Abigail, 69, 315

Benjamin, 66

Elizabeth, 304, 322

Hannah, 79

Jane, 306

John, 58

Lydia, 77, 79, 81, 304, 306

Mary, 58, 59, 62, 66, 70, 288,

304, 308

Samuel, 62

Stephen, 310

Thomas, 58, 69, 315

Tobias, 58, 59, 62, 66, 70, 77,

79, 81, 304, 306, 308

William, 58, 304, 322

- Day, 36
 Abigail, 41
 An, 156
 Thomas, 36
- Deadman,
 Hannah, 82, 307, 322, 336
 John, 307
 William, 82, 307, 322, 336
- Dealand, Deland, Denland, 223
 Benjamin, 71
 Bethia, 53
 Bethiah, 59, 61, 63, 64, 67, 71, 73
 George, 53, 54, 59, 61, 63, 64, 67, 71, 73, 223
 Goerge, 56
 Hannah, 67
 Joseph, 73
 Katherine, 59
 Lydia, 56
 Mary, 54
 Samuel, 63
 Sarah, 64
- Dean, 28
 Damaris, 58
 Desire, 48
 Elizabeth, 28, 47, 49, 188, 263, 328
 George, 58, 261, 308
 Hannah, 58, 261
 Joseph, 47, 48, 49, 51, 188
 Martha, 67
 Mary, 49, 55, 58, 243
 Thomas, 28, 55, 67, 243
- Deland — see Dealand
- Dellaclose, Rachel, 145 fn
- Demeritt, Thomas, 73, 317
- Denland — see Dealand
- Dennis,
 Sarah, 183
 Thomas, 183 fn
- Derby — see Darby
- Devenish, Devinish, 18, 19
 Bethiah, 19
 Mary, 11, 18
 Thomas, 11
- Devinish — Devenish
- Devoreux,
 Elizabeth, 63, 65, 68, 311
 John, 63, 65, 68, 311
 Joseph, 65
 Margaret, 317
 Susannah, 63
- Dew, Elizabeth, 37
- Dickerson,
 Elizabeth, 21
 Mary, 13, 18
 Philemon, 18
 Phillemon, 10, 21
- Dickeson — see Dickinson
- Dickesson — see Dickinson
- Dickinson, Dickeson, Dickesson,
 Elizabeth, 42
 Peeter, 22
 Phillemon, 20, 22
 Thomas, 20
- Diman, James, 307, 307 fn
- Dimond,
 Aholiab, 61
 Edward, 78, 81, 319
 Margaret, 78, 81, 319
 Mary, 81
 Sarah, 61
- Dixey — see Dixy
- Dixy, Dixey, 19, 21, 22, 25, 35, 105, 116
 Abigaile, 16, 22
 Ann, 6
 Anna, 16
 Eliza, 18
 G., 158
 Goody, 158 fn
 John, 17
 Jon, 21, 25
 Katherine, 8
 Margaret, 24
 Mary, 20
 Nicholas, 35
 Samuel, 26, 35, 36
 Sarah, 19
 [Thomas], 26
 Thomas, 12, 19, 20, 24, 35, 36
 W., 116
 William, 6, 16, 17, 18, 19

- Dobie,
 M[ehitabel], 65
 Thomas, 65
 William, 65
- Dod, 31, 33
 Charity, 35
 Elizabeth, 29
 Goodie, 125
 Joanna, 31
 John, 29
 Sara, 29, 33, 159
 Sarah, 29
 Thomas, 29
- Dodg — see Dodge
- Dodge, Dodg, 18, 19, 27, 116
 D., 116
 Deliverance, 26
 Elizabeth, 12, 15
 Hanna, 19
 Jo, 116
 John, 26, 96, 116
 Mary, 27
 Richard, 12, 20
 Sarah, 20
 W., 116
 William, 18
- Dody,
 John, 16
 William, 16
- Doick, 310
 Elizabeth, 67
 Mary, 62, 65, 67, 310
 Miriam, 65
 Stephen, 62, 65, 67
- Dolbear, Dolbier,
 Elizabeth, 55
 John, 54, 66, 70
 Mary, 66, 70
 Susannah, 70
- Dolbier — see Dolbear
- Dolittle, 224
 Thomas, 224 fn
- Doliver, 34
 Margaret, 34
 Mary, 158
- Dorland, Mary, 153
- Douglas, Douglass, 54, 240
 Amos, 54
 Elizabeth, 54
 Hannah, 54
 James, 241
 Joseph, 54, 56, 240, 241
 Keturah, 328
 Mary, 54
 Mercy, 54, 241
 Sarah, 56
 Thomas, 54
 William, 328
- Douglass — see Douglas
- Downton, Dountons, 99
- Dove, 24, 27, 28
 Bethiah, 25
 Daniel, 25
 Debora, 27
 Dorcas, 25
 Elizabeth, 24
 Hanna, 24
 Mathew, 25
 Matthew, 28
- Dowce — see Dowse
- Downing, 18, 20
 Benjamin, 21
 Dorcas, 18
 Ellen, 21
 Emall [Emanuel], 18
 Emanuell, 7, 17
 Hanna, 20
 John, 17
 Lucky, 12
 Lucy, 7
 Richard, 53, 56
 Theophilus, 18
 Thomas, 53, 56
- Downton, Douton,
 John, 29
 William, 29, 99
- Dowce — see Dowse
- Dowse, Dowce,
 John, 68
 Mary, 65, 68, 74, 77, 311
 Richard, 65, 68, 74, 77, 311
 William, 74

- Driver,
 Anne, 71
 Elizabeth, 69
 Hannah, 68
 Margarett, 63, 64
 Mary, 58, 63, 64, 68, 71, 246, 331
 Michael, 52, 54, 63, 64, 66, 69, 217, 240
 Sarah, 63, 64, 66, 69, 240
 Steven, 55
 Thomas, 52, 53, 55, 58, 63, 64, 68, 71, 217, 246, 331
 Dudley, Joseph, 136
 Dullabar, Mary, 159
 Dumar, Jeremiah, 171
 Dunton, Elizabeth, 8
 Dutch, 33
 Barbara, 32
 Christian, 39
 Martha, 42, 56
 Samuel, 39
 Susan, 35
 Susanna, 32, 33, 35, 163
 Eagar,
 Jonathan, 41
 Mary, 186, 187
 William, 41
 Eager,
 Jonathan, 224
 Mary, 203, 224
 Earl, 183
 Eastwick, 9
 Ebborne — see Eburn
 Eborne — see Eburn
 Eburn, Ebborne, Eborne, 140, 147
 fn, 149
 Kathern, 13
 Mary, 22
 Moses, 22, 46, 140
 Rebeca, 23
 Sam, 147 fn
 Samuel, 22, 23, 24, 28, 128, 144
 Samuell, 22
 Sarah, 24, 46, 185, 194
 Thomas, 5
 William, 28
 Edwards, 8, 17, 19
 Abra[ham], 16
 Edm.;, 16 fn
 El[izabeth], 36
 Elizabeth, 36, 160, 223
 Jon, 17
 Jonathan, 36
 Joseph, 19, 36
 Joshua, 19
 [Rice], 16
 Thomas, 11
 Eger — see Eyer
 Eliot,
 Daniel, 39
 Elizabeth, 39
 Mary, 39
 Mercy, 46, 184
 Elkin — see Elkins
 Elkins, Elkin, 41, 223, 314, 331
 Abigail, 59, 77, 308, 319
 G., 37
 Henry, 41, 56, 59, 308
 John, 37, 49, 77, 319
 Lyddia, 37
 Margaret, 37
 Mary, 38, 39, 51, 223, 314, 331
 Magdalen, 39
 Oliver, 38, 43
 Robart, 43
 Robert, 49
 Sarah, 37, 39, 48
 [Thomas], 39
 Thomas, 37, 37 fn, 48, 49, 51, 53, 56
 Ellan, Ralph, 116
 Ellenwood, 25, 27
 Goodwife, 13
 Josiah, 20
 Mary, 26
 Ralfe, 26
 Ralph, 12, 20, 24, 25
 Sara, 27
 Steephen, 24
 Ellerd, Gartrud, 6

- Ellis, 47, 49, 175
 Elizabeth, 45, 49
 Francis, 43, 45, 55, 175, 175 fn,
 197
 G., 159
 Marget, 29, 125
 Mary, 43
 Mary, 175 fn
 Richard, 57
 Samuel, 66
 Sarah, 43, 64, 66, 175 fn, 328
 Thomas, 43, 55, 57, 64, 175 fn,
 328
 William, 47
 Elsey, 38
 Elson, 251
 Elizabeth, 251
 Joanna, 163
 Joannah, 38 fn
 John, 38 fn
 Mary, 41, 172
 Samuel, 41, 56, 172, 251
 Sarah, 41
 Elvins,
 Mary, 67
 Richard, 56, 58, 62, 67, 242,
 243, 277
 Samuel, 56
 Sarah, 58, 62, 67, 243, 277
 Elwell, 17
 Isaack, 18
 John, 17
 Richard, 25
 Robert, 11, 17, 18, 24, 25
 Robt, 17
 Thomas, 24
 Elwood,
 Joseph, 26
 R[alph], 26
 Emerson, 97, 291
 John, 45, 45 fn, 97 fn
 Mary, 178
 Richard, 45
 Emerton,
 Jeremiah, 306
 John, 304, 306, 337
 Mary, 304, 306, 337
 Emorye, 13
 Endecot — see Endicott
 Endecott — see Endicott
 Endicot — see Endicott
 Endicott, Endecot, Endecott, Endi-
 cot, 30, 32, 85, 109, 146
 Benjamin, 28
 Elizabeth, 6
 John, xi, xii, xiv, xvi, 5, 27, 102
 fn
 Joseph, 30
 Mary, 27, 28
 Mehitabell, 32
 Samuel, 27
 Sarah, 30
 Zerubbabl, 27, 28, 30, 111
 English, 28, 29, 47, 238, 334
 Abigail, 34, 59
 Benjamin, 46
 Clement, 34, 35, 54, 59, 64, 67,
 79, 238, 317, 320
 Elizabeth, 29, 67, 178
 Joseph, 47, 49
 Margaret, 79, 320
 Mary, 28, 64, 152, 236
 Mercy, 49
 Philip, 236
 Phillip, 40
 Samuel, 83
 Susanna, 54, 59, 238
 Susannah, 64, 83, 317, 334
 William, 40
 Epes — see Eps
 Eps, Epes, 32, 33, 36, 41, 157, 221,
 218
 Daniel, 33, 34, 39, 157, 191,
 193, 212, 231, 247, 250, 254,
 255, 256, 258, 259, 260, 268,
 273
 Elizabeth, 36, 238
 Margaret, 41
 Mary, 32
 Ruth, 39
 Samuel, 34
 Estes,
 Ahijah, 70, 74, 76, 78, 80, 304,
 306, 330

- Ahijak, 82
 Elizabeth, 80
 Hannah, 74
 Mary, 70, 74, 76, 78, 80, 82, 304, 306
 Nathaniel, 304
 Samuel, 82
 Sarah, 78, 306
 Estrick, Goodwife, 10
 Estwick, 163
 Ewel,
 Sarah, 297
 John, 297
 Eyer, Eger,
 Mary, 47
 Jonathan, 47
 Obadiah, 240

 Fabins,
 James, 78, 81, 336
 Mary, 78, 81, 336
 Peard, 81
 Faifeild, Farefeild, Ferefeild, 11, 18
 John, 8, 18
 Fairservice, Robert, 335
 Farefeild — see Faifeild
 Farr, Sarah, 53, 222
 February, Feveryear, 41 fn
 Benjamin, 43
 Edward, 41, 41 fn, 43
 Grafton, 41, 41 fn
 Feild — see Field
 Felmingame, 14
 Felt,
 Abigail, 70, 75, 76, 80, 82, 306, 316
 Anna, 42 fn
 Benjamin, 49, 70, 76, 80, 82, 306, 316
 Bondfield, 77
 Bonfield, 47, 65, 67, 71, 73, 75, 80, 82, 311
 Elizabeth, 44, 52, 221
 [George], 42
 George, 42 fn, 44, 45, 47, 49, 73, 77, 332
 Jemimah, 67
 Jemina, 44
 John, 45, 80
 Jonathan, 42, 42 fn, 52, 82, 221, 306
 Joseph, 46
 Margaret, 67, 311
 Margarett, 65, 71, 73, 75, 76, 77, 80, 82
 Mary, 82, 236
 Samuel, 44, 45, 46
 Sarah, 71
 Felton, Feltons, 43 fn, 140 fn, 149, 183, 230, 313
 Abigail, 45
 Amos, 68
 Anna, 32
 Anne, 163
 Benjamin, 17, 19, 21, 53, 68, 140 fn
 Daniel, 42
 David, 54
 Ebenezer, 42, 54, 68, 69, 72, 75, 78, 230, 302, 313, 329
 Elizabeth, 23, 51
 Ellen, 6
 Esther, 68
 Hanna, 26, 226
 Jehoadan, 68, 69, 72, 75, 78, 302, 313
 Jehoaden, 329
 Jo., 38
 John, 17, 22, 38, 42, 44, 69, 75, 146, 176, 226
 Jonathan, 42
 Malachi, 49
 Margaret, 42
 Mary, 23, 25, 32, 50, 145
 Mehitabel, 54, 230
 Mehitable, 78
 N., 128
 Nathan, 42
 Nath., 183
 Nathaneel, 52
 Nathaniel, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 32, 45, 46, 49, 50, 51, 53, 69, 72, 147

- Nathanyell, 13
 Remember, 19, 140 fn
 Ruth, 22, 42
 S., 32
 Samuel, 35, 46
 Skelton, 42
 Susana, 44
 Susanna, 26
 Feltons — see Felton
 Fen, Fenn, 18
 Deborah, 11
 Fenn — see Fen
 Ferefeild — see Fairefeild
 Fergusson, Mary, 158, 159
 Fermaies — see Fermayes
 Fermayes — see Fermaies
 Abygaile, 10
 Benjamin, 11
 Markes, 8
 Fessenden, Benjamin, 286 fn
 Feveryear — see February
 Field, Feild, 13, 209
 Alexander, 13
 Elizabeth, 73, 75
 Hanna, 53
 Hannah, 56, 59, 61
 Mary, 59
 Samuel, 61, 68, 73, 75, 314
 Sarah, 54
 Thomas, 51, 53, 54, 56, 59, 61,
 209
 Filmingan, 22
 Francis, 22
 Jon, 22
 Mary, 22
 Rebeca, 22
 Fisher, Daniel, 136
 Fisk, Fiske, 17, 18, 58 fn, 124 fn,
 173 fn, 260, 266 fn, 267, 321
 Ann, 304, 306, 307
 Elizabeth, 307
 James, 11
 John, xx, xxiv, xxv, xxv fn, xxvi,
 17, 307
 Joseph, 307
 Phineas, 25
 Saml, 58
 Samuel, xx, xxi, xxii, xxiii, xxiv,
 xxv, xxv fn, 15, 56 fn, 107, 255,
 255 fn, 256, 257, 258, 259, 262,
 304, 306, 307, 334
 Sarah, 18, 306
 William, 11, 19
 Fiske — see Fisk
 Fits, Fitz,
 Bethia, 47, 196
 Isaac, 46, 48
 Isaack, 45, 47, 50, 180, 196, 203
 Jon., 48
 Jonathan, 196
 Rebecka, 46
 Sarah, 50
 Fitz — see Fits
 Flendor, 30, 31, 41
 Hanna, 30
 James, 30
 Jane, 126
 John, 31
 Mary, 41
 Richard, 30, 157
 Flint, Flynt, 165, 246, 331
 Abigail, 41, 222, 331
 David, 47, 48, 53, 54, 188, 327
 Elizabeth, 40, 56, 168, 222
 Jane, 79, 335
 John, 37, 53, 79, 335
 Joseph, 38, 55, 56, 246, 332
 Mary, 43, 55, 222, 246, 332
 Rebeckah, 45
 Ruth, 37, 47, 48, 188, 327
 Samuel, 45, 175
 Sarah, 46, 47, 188
 Susanna, 175
 Thomas, 37, 38, 40, 41, 43, 45,
 46, 222
 Timothy, 37
 William, 53
 Flynt — see Flint
 Fogg — see Fogge
 Fogge, Fogg,
 David, 17
 Ezekiell, 16
 Ralph, 5, 16, 17

- Susana, 6
 Folet — see Follet
 Follet, Folet, 195
 Abraham, 38
 Benjamin, 38
 Hana, 195
 Hanna, 38, 48, 165
 Isaac, 48
 Isaack, 195
 Isack, 38
 John, 44, 45, 48
 Joseph, 45
 Persis, 163
 Rebecca, 38
 Robert, 38, 163
 Ruth, 44
 Foot, Foote, Footes, 210
 Abigail, 48, 67, 163, 217, 263
 Abigaile, 23
 Elizabeth, 23, 31, 50, 69, 71, 73, 75, 77, 216, 288, 315, 329
 Hannah, 51, 75
 Is., 33
 Is[aac], 31
 Isaac, 67
 Isaack, 23, 44
 Isack, 30, 34, 36, 37
 Isak, 41
 John, 54, 73
 Jon, 23
 Jonathan, 56
 Malachi, 33, 51, 52, 54, 216, 263, 329
 Malachy, 56, 288
 Malaky, 23
 Malichy, 241
 Mary, 23, 34, 41, 44, 47, 67, 71, 180, 217, 263
 Pasca, xxiv, 14, 23, 36, 112
 Pascha, 77
 Pasco, 54
 Samuel, 30, 44, 47, 48, 50, 51, 54, 69, 71, 73, 75, 77, 180, 315
 Samuell, 23
 Sarah, 51, 210
 Thomas, 37, 51, 210
 Foote — see Foot
 Footes — see Foot
 Ford, Elizabeth, 249
 Forster,
 [John], 29
 Jonathan, 29
 Fortune, 29, 30, 32, 33
 Abigail, 30
 Charity, 35
 Elias, 29, 29 fn
 Elizabeth, 29
 Goodie, 125
 John, 30
 Joseph, 33
 Mary, 29, 29 fn, 159
 Rachel, 32
 Foster, 22, 24, 28, 30, 31, 32, 34, 42 fn
 Abigail, 49
 Benjamin, 38
 Daniel, 45, 49, 201
 David, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 47, 49, 226
 Ebenezer, 32
 Elizabeth, 28, 34, 44
 Hanna, 34, 43, 195, 201, 226
 James, 42, 60, 61, 326, 327
 Jo., 34
 John, 23, 24, 34, 38, 42, 44, 48, 153, 195, 226
 Jonathan, 41
 Joseph, 45
 Lydia, 47
 Margaret, 60, 61, 326
 Martha, 31, 114
 Mary, 22, 34
 Nathan, 48
 Patience, 44
 Rachel, 49
 Ruth, 44
 Samuel, 23, 42
 Sarah, 34
 Fountain, 174
 James, 43, 174 fn
 John, 43, 174 fn
 Mehitabel, 43, 174
 Mehitable, 174 fn

- Peter, 43, 174 fn
 Sarah, 43, 174 fn
 Fox, 281
 John, 281 fn
 Foxcroft, Mary, 56, 249
 Freke, Mary, 43 fn
 French, 40, 50
 Abigail, 42, 45, 51, 194, 226
 Deliverance, 47
 Elizabeth, 45
 [Humphrey], 47
 Humphrey, 50, 194, 202
 Humphry, 48, 51
 Mary, 40, 50
 Mercy, 48
 Frost,
 Benjamin, 52
 Elizabeth, 50, 204
 Hanna, 53
 John, 251
 Rebecca, 56, 251
 William, 52, 53, 204
 Fuller,
 Benjamin, 28
 David, 28
 G:, 146
 H., 28
 Hannah, 28 fn
 Jonathan, 28
 Robert, 147
 Samuel, xii
 Thomas, 28 fn
 Furbison, 34
 John, 34
 Furneaux — see Furnex
 Furnex, Furneaux
 Abigail, 50
 Ann, 54
 Anne, 53
 William, 50, 51, 53, 54
 Gahtman, Francis, 334
 Gale, 30, 31, 174
 A., 34, 35
 Abigail, 30, 78
 Abraham, 31, 305
 Ambros, 26, 27, 30, 35, 81, 83,
 96, 158
 Anne, 73, 312
 Azor, 28
 Bartholmew, 31
 Benjamin, 26, 32, 74, 77, 79, 81,
 83, 158, 335
 Daniel 31
 Deliverance, 30, 158
 Ebenezer, 47
 Edmond, 27, 28, 108
 Ed[mund], 27
 Edm[und], 30
 Edmund, 66, 76, 312
 Elizabeth, 26, 63, 64, 66, 70, 73,
 78, 81, 83, 305, 311, 329
 Jacob, 31
 John, 34
 Lydia, 66, 74, 77, 79, 81, 83,
 196, 335
 M[ary], 31
 Mary, 31, 32, 33, 43, 70, 76, 77,
 127, 174, 174 fn, 181, 222
 Miriam, 30
 Rachel, 33
 Samuel, 27, 43, 46, 47, 66, 174,
 174 fn, 181
 Sara, 27
 Sarah, 46, 81, 312, 332
 William, 63, 64, 66, 70, 73, 78,
 81, 83, 305, 311, 329
 Ganet,
 Elizabeth, 44
 Ezeckiel, 44
 Hanna, 44
 John, 44
 Philip, 44
 Samuel, 44
 Gardner, Gardiner, 32, 33, 45, 91,
 93, 94, 145, 184
 Abel, 42, 44, 45, 46, 49, 50, 51,
 53, 178, 182, 226
 Abigaile, 23
 Anne, 110
 Bethia, 204 fn
 Bethiah, 24
 Daniel, 51
 Ebenezer, 26, 50

- Elizabeth, 22, 46, 49, 69, 71, 75,
153, 204, 226
Eunice, 51
Georg, 31
G[eorge], 26
George, 10, 20, 21, 24
Habakkuk, 46
Habakuk, 51
Habbakuk, 49
Habbukuk, 46, 47
Hanna, 13, 20, 25, 40, 52
Israel, 50
John, 34, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 189,
204, 226
Jonathan, 26, 45, 69, 71, 75,
317, 333
Joseph, 47
Margaret, 36, 157
Margarett, 8, 19, 24, 46, 49, 178
Ruth, 26, 46, 184
S., 167
Samll, 21
Samuel, 32, 34, 35, 53, 75, 127,
128, 157, 189, 191, 226
Sarah, 51, 178, 226
Seeth, 16
T[homas], 26
Thomas, 5, 9, 16, 19, 20, 22, 23,
24, 25, 49, 181
Gardiner — see Gardner
Garford,
Ann, 6
Garvice, 8
Gaskoyne,
Danyell, 18
Edward, 12, 17, 18, 19, 21
Hanna, 21
Preferred, 17
Samuel, 17
Sara, 19
Sarah, 8
Gatchel,
Elizabeth, 156, 159
Increase, 45
Jeremia, 45
Jeremy, 156
Gates, 26
Charity, 26
Gathman — see Gatman
Gatman, Gathman, Gutman, 52, 53
Francis, 59
Lydia, 53, 59
Samuel, 52
Gavet, Gavett, 176
Elizabeth, 176 fn
Ezekiel, 176 fn
Hanna, 176
Hannah, 176 fn, 181
John, 60, 63, 67, 71, 73, 176 fn,
309, 332
Jonathan, 74
Joseph, 45, 63, 66, 70, 74, 76,
330
Mary, 60, 63, 66, 67, 70, 71, 73,
74, 76, 330
Philip, 45, 176, 176 fn, 181
Samuel, 70, 176 fn
Sarah, 67, 71
Gedney — see Gidney
Geere,
John, 20
Mary, 19
Samuel, 18
William, 10, 18, 19, 20
Geerish — see Gerrish
George,
Elizabeth, 77
John, 77
Timothy, 77
Gerish — see Gerrish
Gerrish, Geerish, Gerish, 43, 45,
46, 48, 131, 142, 167, 172, 207,
217, 226, 237, 245, 260, 268,
269 fn
Abigail, 80, 329
Ann, 39
Anna, 53, 320
B., 36
Benjamin, 32, 33, 34, 36, 39,
54, 80, 152, 157, 164, 172, 226
fn, 230, 236, 329
Elizabeth, 34, 51, 59, 61, 63, 80,
198, 210, 217, 230, 245, 263

- Eunice, 45, 48
 Hanna, 155, 183
 Hannah, 33
 John, 43, 45, 51, 53, 54, 59, 61, 63, 79, 82, 210
 Joseph, 57, 57 fn, 61, 131 fn, 207 fn, 259
 Lydia, 46
 Mary, 63, 79
 Sarah, 54, 79, 82
 Gibs, Robert, 169
 Gibson, James, 314
 Gidney, Gedney, Gidny, 27, 30, 151, 170, 178, 181
 Bart., 27
 Bart[holmew], 30
 Bartholmew, 28, 29, 32, 34
 Bart[holomew], 26
 Bartholomew, 18, 31, 45, 90, 103, 105, 107, 108, 111
 Bethia, 30
 Bethiah, 178
 Deborah, 30, 32
 Ebenezer, 33
 Edmund, 33
 El[eazer], 28
 Eleazer, 19, 30
 Eli, 31, 33, 150, 151
 Elizabeth, 28
 Hanna, 28, 46, 111
 Jo:, 26
 John, 7, 20, 26, 27, 28, 29, 103, 105, 114
 Johnathan, 26
 Jon, 18, 19
 Jonathan, 44
 Lyddia, 29
 Margaret, 42, 230
 Martha, 32
 Mary, 7
 Nathaniel, 29, 44, 178
 Priscilla, 34
 Ruth, 30
 Samuel, 31, 47, 179
 Sara, 20
 Sarah, 27, 44
 Susan, 27
 Susanna, 41, 165
 W[illiam], 42
 Wiliam, 258
 William, xxi, 28, 41, 44, 45, 46, 50, 181, 254
 Williams, 31
 Giggie — see Giggles
 Giggles, Giggie, Jeggles, Jegle, Jiggles, 28, 30, 45
 Abigail, 28
 Daniel, 288
 Ebenezer, 30
 Elizabeth, 28
 G., 127
 Goody, 127 fn
 John, 28
 Mary, 6, 28
 Nathaniel, 28
 Samuel, 28
 Thomas, 28, 45, 110, 153
 William, 13, 28, 45
 Gilbert, 97
 H., 121
 Thomas, 97
 Giles, Gyles, 28
 Abigail, 37, 65
 Anne, 203
 Bridgett, 13
 Edm:, 16
 Edmo, 18
 Edmo:, 17
 Edmond, 5, 20
 Edward, 16 fn, 39, 144 fn
 El., 32
 Eleazer, 14, 45
 Eli, 33, 38, 43
 Eli., 37
 Eliezar, 32, 41, 47, 165
 Eliezer, 226
 Elizabeth, 28, 64, 165, 226
 Ely, 34, 39
 James, 33, 41
 John, 20, 34, 51, 52, 75, 199, 203, 313, 315, 329
 Mary, 52, 70, 313, 329
 Mehitabel, 47
 Mehitabell, 16

- Mehitable, 144 fn
 Mercy, 75
 Remember, 17
 Ruth, 38
 Samuel, 43, 60, 61, 64, 65, 70, 326, 327
 Sara, 127
 Sarah, 28, 75
 Susanna, 64
 Susannah, 60, 61, 65, 70, 73, 327
 Thomas, 73
- Gill,
 Ebenezer, 41
 Hana, 37
 Hanna, 37, 163
 John, 37
 [William], 41
 William, 37
- Gillam,
 Edward, 306, 324
 Elizabeth, 306, 324
- Gillingham, 46, 175, 318
 Benjamin, 44, 74, 75, 77, 80, 82, 304, 318
 David, 52, 304
 Deborah, 80
 Elizabeth, 74, 75, 77, 80, 82, 304, 318
 Hanna, 43
 Hannah, 74, 175 fn
 James, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 82, 175
 John, 48
 Jonathan, 51
 Martha, 45
 Mary, 74
 Rebeca, 43
 Rebecca, 77, 175 fn
 Rebecka, 43
 Rebeckah, 175
 William, 47, 50
- Gilloway, Sarah, 272
- Gilpin, 318
 Abigail, 74, 76, 78, 81, 318
 John, 74
 Lydia, 78
- Thomas, 74, 76, 78, 81, 318
 William, 78, 81
- Girdler,
 An, 33
 Benjamin, 32
 Francis, 32, 33, 36, 144, 158
 George, 32
 Hanna, 32
 John, 36
 Mary, 32
- Glass, Glasse
 Elizabeth, 35, 156
 George, 35
 Richard, 35
 William, 35
- Glasse — see Glass
- Glover, 204
 Abigail, 74
 Anne, 80
 Benjamin, 70, 71, 74, 77, 79, 82, 304, 306, 316, 332
 Charles, 9, 17, 19
 David, 75, 76, 78, 80, 82, 305, 334
 Daniel, 77
 Ebenezer, 50, 51, 52, 54, 56, 58, 61, 64, 65, 67, 72, 204
 Eliza, 17
 Elizabeth, 11, 174
 Esther, 78
 Eunice, 82
 George, 77
 Hanna, 51
 Isaac, 65
 John, 54, 61, 75, 79
 Jonathan, 74, 75, 77, 79, 80, 305, 318
 Joseph, 68, 72, 75, 77, 79, 80, 82, 305, 307, 313, 332
 Margret, 50
 Mary, 19, 64, 72, 75, 75, 77, 79, 80, 82, 304, 305, 307, 332
 Nathan, 76
 Nathaniel, 305
 Peter, 306
 Rebecca, 58, 61, 64, 67, 72
 Rebecka, 50, 204

- Rebeckah, 56
 Samuel, 74, 75, 307
 Sarah, 72, 75, 76, 78, 80, 305, 334
 Susanna, 304, 306
 Susannah, 70, 71, 74, 77, 79, 82, 316, 332
 Tabitha, 74, 75, 77, 318
 William, 67, 77, 82
- Gold,
 Deborah, 177
 James, 177
 Margaret, 322
 Thomas, 322
- Goldthait — see Goldthwaite
 Goldthwait — see Goldthwaite
 Goldthwaite, Goldthait, Goldthwait,
 Golthait, Golthalt, 31, 195
 Elizabeth, 19, 163, 198, 226
 Esther, 48
 Ezechiel, 48, 50, 195
 Ezekiel, 31
 Hanna, 38, 48, 203, 226
 Lydia, 51
 Mary, 45, 46, 184, 198, 203
 Mehitabell, 17
 Mehittabel, 49
 Rachel, 167
 Ruth, 46
 Samuel, 16, 28, 31, 38, 39, 45, 46, 48, 49, 50, 51, 163, 168, 182, 184, 226
- Golt,
 Deborah, 22
 Sarah, 22
 Thomas, 8 fn
 William, 8, 22
- Golthait — see Goldthwaite
 Golthalt — see Goldthwaite
 Good, Abigaile, 10
 Goodale — see Goodall
 Goodall, Goodale,
 Deborah, 72, 77, 79, 81, 303, 335
 Ebenezer, 77
 Goodie, 146
 Isaac, 72, 77, 79, 81, 303, 335
- James, 79
 Mary, 81
- Goodell, 17
 Deborah, 77
 Hanna, 20
 Jacob, 18
 Robert, 18, 20
- Goodhue,
 Benjamin, 74, 318
 Martha, 74, 318
 Sarah, 74
 Susanna, 6
- Goold, Debora, 226
- Goose,
 John, 20
 William, 7, 20
- Got — see Gott
- Gott, Got, Goyte, xv fn, 19, 20, 99
 Charles, xiii, 16, 17, 21, 92, 99
 Danyell, 21
 Deborah, 16
 Joseph, 19
 Mary, 12, 19, 20
- Goyte — see Gott
- Grafton, 141, 145, 148, 153
 Abigail, 38
 Anna, 68
 Elizabeth, 9, 56, 68, 110
 Esther, 71
 Hanna, 46
 Jane, 68
 Jehodan, 38
 Jehodar, 169
 Jo., 148
 John, 17
 Joseph, 16, 17, 18, 28, 29, 35, 56, 68, 71, 76, 251
 Joshua, 43, 44, 76
 Marget, 40, 169
 Mary, 68, 71, 76
 Nathaniel, 19
 Priscilla, 28, 46
 Sarah, 44
 William, 29, 68
- Grant, 311
 Daniel, 45, 47, 182
 Elizabeth, 47

- Francis, 78, 81, 305
Hanna, 64, 66, 69, 72, 75
Henry, 305
James, 45, 63, 64, 66, 69, 72, 75,
311, 327
Joseph, 78
Joshua, 81
Mary, 63, 78, 81, 305
Mathew, 45
Sarah, 63, 69
William, 64
- Graves, 10, 18
Benjamin, 20
Deliverance, 24
Elizabeth, 20
Hanna, 23
Joseph, 19
Mary, 21
Richard, 10, 18, 19, 20, 21, 23,
24
- Gray, Graye, Grey, 62, 222, 276,
310, 316
Abigail, 53, 55, 78, 222
Benjamin, 62, 68, 276, 310
Bethiah, 24
Elizabeth, 14, 23, 69, 70, 331
Hanna, 25
Hannah, 70
John, 53, 55, 69, 222, 316
Joseph, 23
Margarett, 70, 316
Mary, 62, 276, 310, 327
Robart, 53
Robert, 23, 24, 25, 65, 70, 78,
80, 311, 316
Ruth, 78, 80
Samuel, 69, 70, 331
Sarah, 62, 68, 69
Susannah, 69, 316
Thomas, 24
William, 68, 80
- Graye — see Gray
- Green, Greene, 8, 207
Ann, 59, 63
Hannah, 59
John, 59, 63
Joseph, 182, 182 fn, 207 fn, 243,
243 fn
M., 36
Martha, 36
- Greene — see Green
- Greenleaf, Daniel, 287, 287 fn
- Grey — see Gray
- Griffis,
David, 70, 316
Mary, 70, 316
- Grinslett,
Elizabeth, 60
James, 60, 62, 63, 274
Mary, 305
Rebecca, 60, 62, 63, 274, 309
- Grover, 71
Deborah, 21
Edmond, 21
Edmund, 71
Liddea, 21
Margarett, 12
Mary, 21
Naomi, 21
Sarah, 221, 222
- Guppa, Goodie, 114
- Gusten — see Gustin
- Gustin, Gusten
Sarah, 47, 189
- Gutch,
Deborah, 23
Elizabeth, 22
John, 18
Lydea, 20
Magdalen, 21
Patience, 19
Richard, 18
Robert, 11, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24
Robt, 19
Sara, 24
- Gutman — see Gatman
- Gyles — see Giles
- Hacker, 38
Bethia, 37, 41, 163
Bethiah, 73, 317
Deborah, 72, 73, 317
Ebenezer, 42
Eunice, 60

- George, 37, 42, 72, 73, 317
 Hanna, 60
 Hannah, 56, 58, 62, 65, 73, 249, 326
 Ibrook, 38
 Ibruck, 68, 314
 Isaac, 56, 58, 60, 62, 65, 73, 249, 326
 Isack, 41
 Jeremy, 37
 Jerimiah, 65
 Joshua, 73
 Sarah, 37, 58, 73
 Haddock,
 Margery, 44
 Sara, 43
 Sarah, 43, 44
 Haines, Hains, Haynes, Hayns, 17,
 18, 19, 21, 41 fn
 Benjamin, 19, 41
 James, 18, 21, 23
 John, 17, 41
 Jonathan, 21
 Joseph, 41
 Mary, 21
 Sarah, 13, 21, 41
 [Thomas], 41
 Thomas, 23, 41
 William, 13, 41
 Hains — see Haines
 Hale, 27, 113, 117, 118, 127, 142
 John, xix, 117 fn
 Rebecca, 27
 Hallet, John, 176
 Hamilton,
 Alexander, 79
 Mary, 79
 Hanly — see Henly
 Hanniford,
 Meriam, 158
 Miriam, 158
 Harbert — see Herbert
 Hardie — see Hardy
 Hardy, Hardie, Hardyes, 30 fn,
 151, 157, 163
 Benjamin, 30 fn
 Elizabeth, 22
 George, 127
 Goodwife, 14
 Hanna, 22, 26
 J., 33, 97
 James, 25
 John, 25, 27
 Joseph, 13, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 34, 36, 41, 50, 52, 53, 57, 163, 189, 222, 263
 Martha, 23, 36, 52
 Mary, 33
 Sarah, 50, 222, 263
 Seeth, 41, 53, 211
 Hardyes — see Hardy
 Harnet — see Harnett
 Harnett, Harnet,
 Edward, 12, 24
 Jonathan, 23
 Eunice, 24
 Scillea, 8
 Harriman, Herriman,
 John, 194 fn
 N., 194
 Harris, 30, 32, 41 fn
 Hanna, 41 fn
 Hezekiah, 32
 John, 44, 176
 Margaret, 44, 176
 William, 30
 Hart, Harte, Hartt,
 John, 7
 Lydia, 134
 Mary, 6
 Harte — see Hart
 Hartt — see Hart
 Hartwell, Margaret, 250
 Harvey, Harvy, 26, 106
 Abigail, 26, 46, 185
 Anna, 25
 Elizabeth, 25
 Hanna, 38, 44, 163, 180, 184
 Henry, 46
 Jeh[odan], 92
 Jehodan, 26
 John, 25
 R[ichard], 25, 26
 Richard, 91

- Harvy — see Harvey
- Harwood,
 Goodwife, 10
 Henry, 11
- Haskal — see Haskall
- Haskall, Haskal, Haskel, Haskol, 32,
 33, 47
 Eliz., 116
 Hana, 47
 Martha, 47
 Mary, 33
 Sarah, 47
 Susanna, 32
- Haskel — see Haskall
- Hasket, 187
 Elizabeth, 97
 Hanna, 187
 Martha, 187
 Sarah, 187
- Haskol — see Haskall
- Hathorn — see Hathorne
- Hathorne, Hathorn, Hawthorn, Hathorne, Hawthorne, Hawthorne, xxiii, 6, 20, 21, 22, 23, 36, 37, 39, 41, 45, 46, 86, 87, 91, 94, 97, 100, 101, 123, 132, 141, 144, 145, 150, 155, 170, 186, 245
 Abigail, 27, 143
 Ann, 20
 Benjamin, 46, 69, 72, 314
 Daniel, 74
 Ebenezer, 34, 36, 66
 El[eazer], 27, 29
 Eleazer, 16, 28, 30, 31
 Eli, 33
 Eli[ezar], 31
 Elizabeth, 22, 29, 39, 45
 Freestone, 45
 Georg, 28
 George, 39
 Hannah, 69, 72, 314
 J., 33
 Jo., 34, 43, 118
 Jo:, 141
 John, 12, 18, 20, 32, 33, 59, 141, 150, 183
 Jon, 20, 21, 22
 Jonathan, 33
 Joseph, 41, 55, 57, 59, 63, 66, 71, 74, 77, 245, 330, 332
 Mary, 23, 77
 Nathaniel, 17, 32, 71, 183
 Priscilla, 22
 Ruth, 33, 43, 223
 Samuel, 31, 41
 Sara, 20
 Sarah, 12, 59, 63, 66, 71, 74, 77, 330
 William, 6, 16, 17, 18, 20, 21, 30, 33, 37, 55
- Hauthorn — see Hathorne
- Hauthorne — see Hathorne
- Hawley, Johanna, 158
- Hawthorn — see Hathorne
- Hawthorne — see Hathorne
- Haynes — see Haines
- Hayns — see Haines
- Hayward,
 Nathaniel, 28
 Samuel, 55
 Sarah, 55
- Hearon, Benjamin, 69, 316
- Hearson, John, 326
- Hebbard — see Hebbert
- Hebbert, Hebbard, 133, 133 fn,
 144
 Samuel, 133
- Hebbert, Hebberts, 145
 Joane, 12
 Robert, 12
 Samuel, 133
- Hebberts — see Hebbert
- Helwis, Helwys, 27, 97
 Sara, 27
- Helwys — see Helwis
- Henchmen, Nathaniel, 273, 273 fn,
 274
- Henderson, Hinderson,
 Abigail, 74
 Benjamin, 81
 Daniel, 47
 Ebenezer, 74, 77

- Elizabeth, 77, 79, 80, 81, 83,
 305, 306, 320
 Eunice, 48
 Hanna, 47, 186, 187
 Hannah, 331
 John, 47
 Joseph, 79, 80, 81, 83, 305, 306,
 320
 Lois, 49
 Mary, 47, 74, 77, 80
 P., 187
 P[eter], 47
 Peter, 47, 48, 49, 50, 186
 Phoebe, 72
 Rachel, 305
 Rebecca, 72
 Sara, 47
 Sarah, 83
 Thomas, 72
 William, 50
 Henfeild — see Henfield
 Henfield, Henfeild, 38, 246
 Edmund, 60
 Elizabeth, 38, 163
 Gideon, 69, 72
 Hanna, 38
 Joseph, 55, 56, 60, 69, 72, 246,
 316, 334
 Lydia, 55, 60, 69, 72, 246, 316,
 334
 Mary, 38, 55
 Peter, 72
 Robert, 38
 W., 40
 William, 40
 Henley — see Henly
 Henly, Hanly, Henley, 29, 30, 31,
 33
 Benjamin, 30
 Clement, 71, 317
 Elias, 27
 G., 158
 George, 33
 Joanna, 27
 John, 29
 Joseph, 29
 Mary, 27
 Sara, 109
 Sarah, 27, 31, 71, 317
 William, 71
 Herbert, Harbert, Hirbert, 203 fn,
 208
 Benjamin, 39
 Benjamin, 51
 Ebenezer, 38, 52
 Elizabeth, 43, 50, 230
 Hanna, 41, 50, 203
 Hannah, 201
 Jo., 41
 [John], 39
 John, 19, 38, 43, 46
 Jon, 17, 19
 Joseph, 38
 Mary, 9, 17, 38, 165, 230
 Robert, 38, 50, 201
 Susanna, 46
 William, 38, 50, 51, 52, 203, 208
 Herick, Herrick, Herricke, 16,
 28, 116
 Eedith, 6
 Eliz., 117
 Elizabeth, 21
 Ephr., 117
 H., 117
 [Henry], 27
 Henry, 5, 16, 17, 20, 21, 22
 Jo., 117
 Jon, 22
 Joseph, 20, 27, 28
 Lidia, 27, 116
 Mary, 110, 116
 Zachariah, 16
 Herrick — see Herick
 Herricke — see Herick
 Herriman — see Harriman
 Hibbert,
 Abigaile, 24
 Elizabeth, 23
 Joana, 23
 John, 21
 Joseph, 21
 Mary, 21
 Robert, 21, 23, 24, 25
 Sarah, 21

- Hicks,
 Elizabeth, 64
 John, 61
 Joshua, 60, 61, 63, 64, 66, 71, 76, 309
 Martha, 60, 61, 63, 64, 66, 71, 76
 Mary, 76
 Ruth, 71
- Hide,
 Christian, 24
 Ephraim, 21
 Hanna, 22
 Isaac, 35 fn
 Isaack, 19
 Mary, 21
 Rebeca, 20
 Richard, 21, 22, 23, 24, 36
 Richd, 19
 Susanna, 35 fn, 36
- Higgeson — see Higginson
- Higginson, Higgeson, xiv fn, 105 fn, 136, 195, 202, 205, 222, 223, 230, 264, 267
 Andrew, 67
 Elizabeth, 36, 44, 54, 62, 224, 230, 316
 Esther, 75, 77
 Frances, 8
 Francis, xii, xiii, xiv, xiv fn, xv, 15, 25, 49, 75
 Hanna, 53, 176, 177
 Hannah, 314, 332
 Henry, 25, 50
 J., 86
 Jo., 33, 36, 38
 John, xv fn, xvi, xvi fn, xvii, xviii, xviii fn, xix, xix fn, xxiii, xxiv, 15, 25, 31, 32, 34, 44, 45, 46, 48, 50, 55, 57, 60, 62, 64, 75, 77, 84, 176, 177, 186, 186 fn, 212, 214, 224, 231, 233, 234, 236, 254, 258, 259, 260
 Margaret, 38
 Mary, 50, 141, 311, 331
 Nathanael, 195, 202
 Nathaniel, 33, 48, 49, 50, 53, 57, 77, 314
 Nathaniell, 54
 Ruth, 60, 62, 64, 67
 Samuel, 46
 Sarah, 34, 48, 186
 Steven, 55
 Thomas, 32
- Hildersham, xvi
- Hill, 26, 31, 116
 Ab., 92
 Ebenezer, 33
 Elizabeth, 25, 26, 45, 76, 93, 94
 Jo., 33, 116
 Johanna, 25
 John, 25, 32, 49, 67, 71, 76, 96, 312, 331
 Joseph, 32
 Lydia, 46, 313, 331
 Margaret, 67
 Margaret, 71, 76, 312, 331
 Mary, 32, 47, 144
 Philip, 26, 43, 45, 47, 49, 173
 Robert, 46
 Roger, 32, 144
 Samuel, 32
 Sara, 31
 Sarah, 43, 62, 173
 Tamzin, 193
 Zebulon, 25, 26, 93, 169
- Hilliard, Hilyard
 David, 54
 Margaret, 169
 Priscilla, 54, 240, 263
- Hilyard — see Hilliard
- Hinderson — see Henderson
- Hindes — see Hinds
- Hinds, Hindes
 Abigail, 158
 James, 7
- Hinksman, Sarah, 45, 181
- Hirbert — see Herbert
- Hirst, Hurst, 337 fn
 Elizabeth, 44, 179, 222
 Grove, 43, 174, 338
 Mary, 211
 Mercy, 210
 William, 211, 212, 214, 231, 234

- Hodge — see Hodges
- Hodges, Hodge
 Bethia, 34
 Elizabeth, 34
 Hanna, 34
 [Mary], 34
 Mary, 34, 115, 152
 [Robert], 34
 Robert, 34
 Sarah, 34
 Tabitha, 34
- Holgrove,
 Eliza, 18
 Elizabeth, 6
 John, 5
 Joshua, 7, 18
 Love, 18
 Lydea, 9
- Holliman,
 Elizabeth, 74
 Hannah, 74
 John, 63, 64, 69, 72, 74, 79, 81
 Susannah, 63, 64, 69, 72, 79, 81
 Thomas, 64
- Hollinswoods — see Hollinwood
- Hollinwood, Hollinswoods, 28, 114
 Abigail, 28
 Benjamin, 27
 Caleb, 30
 Elizabeth, 111
 John, 27
 Joseph, 29
 Richard, 27, 28, 29, 111
 R[ichard], 30
 Susanna, 14
- Holloway, Abigail, 52, 217
- Holman, Holyman, 38
 Abigail, 38
 Huldah, 75
 John, 75, 243
- Holme, Homes,
 Deborah, 7
 George, 41
 Hanna, 41
 Katherine, 8
 Martha, 17
 Mary, 41, 166
- Obadiah, 8, 17, 18, 20
 Samuel, 18
- Holton, Houlton, 26
 Benjamin, 25, 71
 Elizabeth, 24
 Hanna, 44
 Henry, 26, 44
 James, 27, 71
 [Joseph], 27
 Joseph, 24, 25
 Lydia, 71
 Mary, 24
- Holyman — see Holman
- Holyoke, Edward, 245, 245 fn
- Homan,
 Abigail, 37
 Mary, 37
- Homes — see Holme
- Hone, Esther, 36
- Hood,
 Joseph, 83, 323
 Susannah, 83, 323
- Hooper,
 Abigail, 57, 61
 [Benjamin], 49
 Benjamin, 59, 66
 Charles, 60, 64, 66, 70, 313, 316, 329
 Elizabeth, 54
 Hannah, 60, 64, 66, 70, 313, 329
 James, 50, 54, 56, 57, 59, 61, 64, 201, 202
 Martha, 49, 198
 Mary, 49, 54, 59, 61, 64, 198
 Robert, 70
 Samuel, 64
 Sarah, 56
- Hopcott, Sarah, 10
- Hopper,
 James, 239
 Mary, 239
- Horn — see Horne
- Horne, Horn, Orn, Orne, Ornes,
 Orno, 22, 36, 38, 81, 110, 111, 112, 113, 210
 Abigail, 30
 An, 156

- Ann, 6, 25
 Anna, 35
 Benjamin, 24, 42, 306, 324
 Bethia, 40
 David, 45
 Ebenezer, 36
 Elizabeth, 30, 173, 306, 324
 Esther, 54
 Eunice, 64
 Frances, 14
 Jo., 33, 36, 38
 John, 5, 16, 25, 30, 31, 34, 42, 44, 45, 73, 158, 173, 183
 Jon, 24, 25
 Jonathan, 25, 42
 Joseph, 35, 39, 41, 42, 81, 156, 222, 228, 321, 336
 Joshua, 40
 Josiah, 39
 Lois, 52, 59, 62, 64, 73, 217
 Mary, 33, 42, 62, 157
 Rebecka, 40
 Recompense, 16, 44, 326
 Ruth, 40
 Samuel, 41, 46, 52, 59
 Samuell, 34
 Sarah, 170, 306, 324
 Simon, 40
 Susannah, 82, 322, 336
 Symond, 22
 Timothy, 210
 Timothy, 52, 54, 56, 59, 62, 64, 73, 217, 336
 Horton,
 Abigail, 37
 Elizabeth, 37
 Experience, 37
 George, 37
 Hanna, 37
 John, 37
 Mary, 37
 Hoskins, 31
 Houghton, 28
 Benjamin, 67, 317
 John, 28, 67
 Lydia, 67
 Ruth, 317
 Houlton — see Holton
 Howard, 19, 184, 188
 Abigail, 28
 Eliz., 117
 Elizabeth, 27, 47
 Hanna, 49
 Lydia, 53
 Mary, 46, 248, 278
 Nath., 116
 [Nathaniel], 28
 Nathaniel, 19, 27
 Robert, 50
 Rose, 9
 Samuel, 46, 47, 49, 50, 53, 184, 186, 188, 248, 278
 Howe,
 John, 270
 Susannah, 270
 Hubbard, xv fn, 157, 159
 William, xvi
 Hucheson, Huchinson, Hutcheson,
 Hutchinson, Hutchison, 180
 Abigail, 27, 36 fn
 Abigaile, 16
 Alice, 6
 Benjamin, 44
 Bethia, 27, 44
 Hanna, 17, 44
 John, 19, 27, 44
 Joseph, 27
 Mary, 44
 Richard, 12, 16, 17, 19
 Humber, Edward, 99
 Humphrey — see Humphry
 Humphry, Humphrey, Humphy, 18
 John, 6, 16, 17
 Jon, 16
 Joseph, 17
 Lydia, 18
 Theophilus, 16
 Thomas, 16
 Humphy — see Humphry
 Hun,
 Goodie, 144, 145
 Nathaniel, 134
 Hunlock,
 Elizabeth, 51, 209, 210, 222

- Sara, 188
 Sarah, 47
 Hunt, 48, 51, 54
 Elizabeth, 44, 48, 75, 179, 243
 Eunice, 73, 75
 Hanna, 51
 John, 45
 Lewis, 44, 45, 46, 49, 179, 184, 218
 Margret, 54
 Mary, 10, 46, 218
 Ruth, 49
 William, 46, 73, 75
 Hutcheson — see Hucheson
 Hutchinson — see Hucheson
 Hutchison — see Hucheson
 Hurst — see Hirst

 Ingersol, Ingersoll, Ingersols, 39 fn, 186
 Anne, 6
 Dina, 48
 Elizabeth, 47
 Ephraim, 48
 John, 24, 25, 108
 Jon, 24
 Judith, 14
 Margrit, 48
 Mary, 48, 50
 Nathan, 170
 Nathaniel, 24
 Richard, 24
 Ruth, 24
 Samuel, 25, 47, 48, 49, 50, 186
 Sara, 24
 Stephen, 48
 Ingersoll — see Ingersol
 Ingersols — see Ingersol
 Ingerson,
 Jo, 153
 Jo., 33
 John, 33
 Nathaniel, 162
 Inglesbee — see Inglesby
 Inglesby, Inglesbee,
 John, 49

 Ruth, 53
 Sarah, 49, 53
 Ingolds — see Ingols
 Ingolls — see Ingols
 Ingols, Ingolds, Ingolls,
 Dina, 194
 Dinah, 55 fn
 Elizabeth, 53, 224
 Ephraim, 69, 72, 74, 77, 313
 Epraim, 69
 Hannah, 69, 72, 74, 77, 313
 Margarett, 77
 Mary, 72
 Stephen, 74, 194
 Ives,
 Ann, 58
 Anna, 58
 Benjamin, 47, 58, 242, 263
 Deborah, 35
 [Elizabeth], 39
 John, 35
 Joseph, 35
 Thomas, 35, 47, 154
 T[homas], 39

 Jacob, Goodie, 166
 Jacobs,
 Daniel, 52
 John, 49, 50, 52, 200
 Jackson,
 John, 7
 Margaret, 7
 Jeefards, Sarah, 329
 Jefferys, Jeoffery, Jeofferys, 196
 Elizabeth, 196
 Samuel, 48
 Simon, 48, 196
 Jeggles — see Giggles
 Jegles — see Giggles
 Jenison — see Jennison
 Jennison, Jenison,
 William, 286, 287
 Jeoffery — see Jefferys
 Jeofferys — see Jefferys
 Jeoffred,
 Elizabeth, 50
 Sarah, 50

- Jiggles, — see Giggles
- Johnson, 23, 24, 107
 Elizabeth, 19
 Frances, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22
 Francis, 5, 16
 Joan, 23
 Johane, 6
 Naomy, 16
 Ruth, 17
 Samuel, 22
 Sara, 24
- Jones, 168
 [Hugh], 40
 Hugh, 40
 Rachel, 40
 Sarah, 40
- Kaiton — see Keyton
- Karkett, Lydia, 55, 244
- Keisar, Keysar, 272
 Eli, 39
 Eli:, 168
 Elizabeth, 39
 Georg, 151
 George, 151
 Mary, 39
- Keiton — see Keyton
- Kellem — see Kellum
- Kellum, Kellem,
 Elizabeth, 50, 204
 John, 50, 204
 Mary, 68
- Kelly, Abell, 10
- Kempton,
 Elizabeth, 306, 325
 John, 320
 Joseph, 306, 325
 Sarah, 79, 320, 336
- Kendall, Presea, 6
- Kenestone, Dorithy, 8
- Kennig, Ann, 14
- Kenning,
 Hanna, 25
 Henry, 24
 John, 24, 25
- Kenninston, 11
- Kenny — see Keny
- Keny, Kenny, 26, 27
 Elizabeth, 26
 H[enry], 26
 Henry, 25
 John, 31
 Mary, 25
 Sara, 26
- Kettle, 50, 195
 Abigail, 50
 James, 195
- Keysar — see Keisar
- Keyton, Kaiton, Keiton, 240, 313
 Daniel, 46, 48, 240, 332
 Elizabeth, 44
 John, 46
 Margaret, 313, 332
 Marget, 48
 Mary, 42, 44
 Selah, 42
- Kichin, Kitchen, Kitchin, 39, 45, 62,
 178, 310
 Bethia, 40
 Edward, 46, 74, 76, 78, 318
 Elizabeth, 9, 19, 35
 Friek, 74, 76, 78, 318
 Hanna, 19
 Isaac, negro manservant of Sister
 Kitchen
 J., 93
 John, 9 fn, 11, 35, 91, 93
 Jon, 19, 20, 21, 23, 24
 Joseph, 20
 Mary, 21, 36, 74
 R., 36, 40
 Robart, 39
 Robert, 24, 35, 45, 46, 78, 178
- King, Kinge,
 Benjamin, 50, 304
 Charles, 49, 53, 80, 82, 199, 304,
 305, 307, 330, 335, 336
 Daniel, 49, 75, 78, 80, 304, 306
 Deliverance, 18
 Elizabeth, 52, 63, 64, 66, 67, 71,
 78, 80, 164, 195, 221, 226, 304,
 306
 Gedney, 304
 Hanna, 200, 204, 226

- J., 31
 James, 55
 Jo., 33
 John, 17, 17 fn, 30, 54
 Jonathan, 31
 Joseph, 30
 Lydia, 64
 Mahitabell, 16
 Margret, 52, 218
 Mary, 304, 306, 336
 Mehitabel, 194, 244, 305
 Nathaniel, 51, 336
 Nathl., 304, 306
 Rachel, 306
 Richard, 52, 221
 Samuel, 47 fn, 48, 49, 50, 51, 53,
 54, 55, 63, 64, 66, 67, 69, 71,
 78, 194, 244, 303 fn, 315, 331
 Sarah, 80, 82, 304, 305, 307, 336
 Tabitha, 75
 Thomas, 33, 66, 195
 William, 6, 16, 17, 18, 71, 200,
 204, 226
 Zacheus, 63
 Kinge — see King
 Kippin — see Kippins
 Kippins, Kippin, 26, 27, 28, 29
 Abigail, 25, 26, 153, 154
 Arthur, 25
 Elizabeth, 93
 Hanna, 28
 Joseph, 27
 Mary, 25
 Sarah, 29
 William, 25
 Kitchen — see Kichin
 Kitcherell, Joseph, 8
 Kitchin — see Kichin
 Knap, 245
 [Anna], 245
 Isaac, 55, 56, 245
 John, 79
 Mary, 79
 Samuel, 56
 Knight,
 Abigail, 180 fn
 Georg, 100
 Nathaneel, 67
 Ruth, 39
 Susannah, 67
 Koker, 29
 Benjamin, 29

 Laighton, Laiton, 120
 Thomas, 120
 Laiton — see Laighton
 Lakeman, Tobias, 336
 Lambert, 39 fn, 185, 296, 331
 Benjamin, 51, 76, 296, 315, 331
 Daniel, 39, 41, 43, 52, 200, 201
 Ebenezer, 46, 49, 51, 52, 53, 56,
 59, 185, 315
 Elizabeth, 39
 Eunice, 49, 317, 332
 Ezekiel, 56
 Jehoadan, 59
 Joseph, 41
 Margaret, 46
 Mary, 39, 46, 59, 168, 185, 317,
 331, 332, 333
 Mercy, 76
 Preserved, 41, 52
 Rachel, 43
 Samuel, 43
 Sarah, 52, 297, 333
 Seeth, 53, 317
 Lander, Landers,
 Hanna, 52, 221
 Mary, 52, 218, 221, 304
 Sarah, 304
 Philip, 304
 Lang,
 Edward, 306
 [Elizabeth], 82
 Hannah, 76, 78, 79, 81, 82, 304,
 306
 Haskitt, 81
 Jeffry, 76, 78, 79, 81, 82, 304,
 306, 335
 Nathaniel, 79
 Richard, 76
 William, 304
 Langden,
 John, 69

- Lewis, 61
 Mary, 59, 61, 66, 69, 293
 Paul, 59, 61, 66, 69, 293, 308, 325
 Lansford, Mary, 224
 Laskin,
 Hugh, 5
 Susanna, 52, 218, 221
 Thomas, 52, 218, 221
 Latimer, Latimore, 143
 Elizabeth, 32
 Susanna, 32
 Latimore — see Latimer
 Laurence — see Lawrence
 Lawes, Frances, 10
 Lawrence, Laurence
 Isabel, 52, 218, 221
 Peter, 52
 Lawson, 37, 38, 164
 Deodate, 164 fn
 Jane, 38
 Thomas, 37
 Lay,
 Hanna, 26
 John, 25
 Mary, 25, 26, 91
 Leach, Leech, 22, 23, 24, 26, 28, 153, 189, 195
 Abigail, 36
 Ann, 81, 321
 Anna, 48, 195, 305, 307
 Charles, 82
 Elizabeth, 6, 24, 28, 48
 Eunice, 48
 Hanna, 25, 26
 Hannah, 307
 Hepsibah, 52, 228
 Jo., 32, 36, 37
 John, 22, 25, 28, 40, 41, 47, 81, 82, 152, 153, 195, 305, 307, 321
 Jon, 22, 23
 Laurance, 5
 Lydia, 40
 Mary, 24, 37, 54, 305
 Rachell, 23, 28
 Remember, 25
 Richard, 24, 26
 Ruth, 41
 Samuel, 32, 47, 48, 52, 53, 54, 189, 228
 Sara, 13, 23, 116
 Sarah, 13, 22, 82, 174
 Leads,
 Abigail, 180
 Benjamin, 180 fn
 Leavitt, Dudley, xxiii, xxiii fn
 Lee, 27, 28, 29
 Deborah, 47, 188
 John, 29
 Martha, 47
 Mary, 27
 Samuel, 28
 Thomas, 47, 188
 Leech — see Leach
 Leg, Legg, 32, 143, 144
 Elizabeth, 32, 158
 Mary, 32
 Legg — see Leg
 Legro, Legroe, 242
 Christian, 55
 Eunice, 77
 Hezekiah, 55
 John, 47, 55, 56, 77, 242
 Joseph, 47
 Martha, 55, 242
 Mary, 47, 56
 Susanna, 55
 Legroe — see Legro
 Lemmon, Lemon
 Elizabeth, 20
 Grace, 17
 John, 18
 Jon, 20
 Martha, 17
 Mary, 8, 17
 Robert, 17, 18, 20, 22
 Lemon — see Lemmon
 Leveret — see Leverett
 Leverett, Leveret
 John, xix, 129, 136
 Libbens, Abigail, 180
 Lindal — see Lindall
 Lindall, Lindal, Lindol, Lyndall, 32, 35, 36, 38, 44, 59, 142, 178, 308

- Abigail, 53, 183, 195
 Bethia, 56
 Bethiah, 58
 Caleb, 36
 Elizabeth, 48, 326
 James, 32, 48, 51, 52, 53, 55,
 188, 254, 277, 281, 284, 286,
 314, 328, 333
 Mary, 32, 49, 58, 73, 317, 328
 Nathanael, 183
 Nathaneel, 198
 Rachel, 38, 198, 203
 Samuel, 49
 Sara, 35
 Sarah, 198, 314, 333
 T., 40
 Timothy, 32, 55, 56, 58, 195,
 254, 264, 270
 Veren, 52
 Verin, 40
 Linde — see Lynd
 Lindol — see Lindall
 Linds — see Lynd
 Liscom — see Liscomb
 Liscomb, Liscom,
 Elizabeth, 57, 60
 Joanna, 38
 Martha, 60
 Samuel, 57, 60
 Loader — see Loder
 Lockyer, 40
 Abigail, 40
 Loder, Loader, Louder, Lowther, 329
 Abigail, 48
 Daniel, 46
 Elizabeth, 44, 68, 173, 329
 Gerard, 45
 James, 50
 Jo., 42
 John, 42, 44, 45, 46, 48, 49, 50,
 173
 Martha, 49
 Mary, 42
 Nicholas, 42
 Ruth, 227
 William, 42, 227
 Loofe, Bridgett, 12
 Looms, Mary, 110
 Lord,
 Abigail, 38
 Abigaile, 6
 Dorothee, 44
 Dorothy, 178, 179
 Joseph, 38
 Mehitabel, 38
 Robard, 40
 W., 40
 William, 8, 38
 Lothrop, 97, 98, 116, 141
 Tho., 116
 Thomas, 6
 Louder — see Loder
 Lovet — see Lovett
 Lovett, Lovet, 22, 24
 Abigaile, 24
 Bethia, 117
 Bethiah, 23
 Jon, 23
 Jos., 117
 Joseph, 22
 Mary, 14, 22, 116
 Symond, 22
 Lowther — see Loder
 Lowwater,
 Elias, 69, 288, 315, 330
 Sarah, 69, 288, 315, 330
 Luscam — see Luscomb
 Luscomb, Luscam,
 Elizabeth, 62, 65
 Jane, 64, 73, 311
 John, 66, 70, 73, 312
 Mary, 66, 70, 73, 312
 Samuel, 56, 62, 65, 66
 Thomas, 65
 William, 56, 64, 311
 Lyddiard,
 Mary, 56
 Nicholas, 56
 Lynd, Linde, Linds, Lynde, xxi, 270,
 281
 Benjamin, xxi, 46, 54, 75, 184,
 222, 254, 255 fn, 284, 295, 327
 Mary, 75, 222
 William, 54

- Lyndal — see Lindall
 Lynde — see Lynd
- Mac-mallon — see Mackmillion
 Macarta — see Makarta
 Mackallam, Martha, 165
 Mackarter — see Makarta
 Mackay,
 Daniel, 60
 Margarett, 60, 62, 64, 331
 William, 60, 62, 64, 309, 331
 Mackentire, Mackintire,
 Daniel, 44, 176
 Judah, 44, 176, 226
 Mackil-leiver,
 Anne, 71
 Elizabeth, 71
 Hugh, 71
 Mackintire — see Mackentire
 Mackmalion — see Mackmillion
 Mackmallan — see Mackmillion
 Mackmallon — see Mackmillion
 Mackmillion, Mac-mallon, Mackmal-
 ion, Mackmallan, Mackmallon,
 Abigail, 59
 Alexander, 59, 221, 326
 Elizabeth, 59, 326
 Eunice, 76
 Hannah, 59, 71
 James, 54, 56, 59, 63, 224, 238
 John, 42, 79, 320, 334
 Jonathan, 59, 76
 Joshua, 69, 315
 Kezia, 59
 Lydia, 79, 320
 Mary, 56, 59, 61, 63, 238, 310
 Naomi, 59
 Rachel, 76
 Rebecka, 221
 Samuel, 63, 71, 310, 328
 Sarah, 79, 320
 Susanna, 54
 Mackoway, Elizabeth, 48
 Mahoone,
 Elizabeth, 69
 Ellis, 69
 James, 69
- Makarta, Macarta, Mackarter, 312
 Andrew, 38
 Isack, 40
 James, 38
 Jeremy, 38
 Jo, 40
 John, 38, 66, 312, 329
 Peter, 38
 Rebecca, 38
 Sarah, 66, 312, 329
 Mannig — see Manning
 Manning, Mannig, 27, 28
 Benjamin, 67
 Hannah, 67
 Jacob, 288, 313, 329
 John, 28
 Mary, 288, 313, 329
 Nicholas, 28
 Nicolas, 27
 Mansfield, 28
 Abigail, 28, 68
 Damaris, 26, 96
 Daniel, 26
 John, 26
 Paul, 26, 79, 81
 Sarah, 79, 81
 Timothy, 26, 68
 Triphene, 7
 Marsh, 29
 Abigail, 35
 Benjamin, 39
 Bethiah, 22
 Elizabeth, 21, 29, 42
 Ezeikiell, 22
 Hanna, 42
 Jacob, 25
 John, 8, 16, 17, 18, 22, 25, 26,
 26 fn, 42, 197 fn
 Jon, 17, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Margret, 42
 Mary, 25, 33
 Priscilla, 42, 173
 Ruth, 18
 Samuel, 23
 [Sarah], 26
 Sarah, 26 fn, 126
 Susana, 13

- Susanna, 24, 42
 Susannah, 199
 Zach., 33, 35, 39
 Zachariah, 16, 29
 Zachary, 145
 Marshal — see Marshall
 Marshall, Marshal, 21, 182, 312
 Ann, 16
 Benjamin, 21
 Edmond, 6, 16, 20
 Edmund, 16, 17, 19
 Francis, 70
 J., 37
 Mary, 66, 70, 73, 312
 Millisent, 7
 Naomy, 16
 Nicholas, 37
 Robert, 66, 70, 73, 312, 324
 Ruth, 17
 Samuel, 73
 Sarah, 19, 66, 324
 Marsten — see Marston
 Marston, Marsten, Marstons,
 Marstone, 38, 44, 182, 186, 196,
 267
 Abel, 79, 320
 Abigaile, 25
 Benjamin, 23, 44, 45, 46, 72,
 74, 177, 252, 305
 [Elizabeth], 72
 Elizabeth, 25, 46, 54, 65, 74,
 173, 240, 241, 312, 329
 Ephraim, 20
 Esther, 73
 Eunice, 57
 Hanna, 23, 25, 69
 Hannah, 80
 Hannan, 315
 James, 65, 67, 70, 72, 73, 76,
 77, 80, 81, 311, 316, 324
 John, 10, 20, 23, 24, 25, 44, 45,
 54, 64, 230, 244, 254 fn, 259,
 260, 305, 324
 Jon, 18, 20, 21, 23, 25
 Joseph, 305
 Lydia, 50 fn
 Manasseh, 72, 315
 Mannasses, 20, 69, 70
 Mary, 44, 76, 230
 Mehitabel, 48
 Mercy, 305, 324
 Nathaneel, 52, 196
 Nathaniel, 48, 54, 57, 77
 Ruth, 44
 Sara, 21
 Sarah, 25, 64, 65, 70, 72, 73, 76,
 77, 80, 81, 316, 324
 Susanna, 244
 Susannah, 81
 Thomas, 10, 24, 54, 240, 241
 William, 15, 25, 173, 312, 329
 Zechariah, 305
 Marstone — see Marston
 Marstons — see Marston
 Mascall, Mascall, Maskal, Maskall,
 Masscal, 22, 26
 Benjamin, 45
 Bethia, 201
 Christopher, 32
 David, 39
 Ellen, 14
 Ester, 163
 Esther, 47
 James, 26, 36, 44
 Jo., 31, 32, 33, 38, 39
 John, 26, 31, 36, 41, 45, 47, 48,
 109, 201, 203
 Jon, 23, 24, 25
 Jonathan, 41
 Joseph, 33, 46
 Mary, 38
 Mehitabel, 43
 Mehitabell, 24
 Nicholas, 26
 Preserved, 41
 Ruth, 43
 Sarah, 38, 203
 Stephen, 23, 31
 Stevens, 36
 [Thomas], 36, 41
 Thomas, 25, 36, 38, 41, 43, 46,
 48, 222
 William, 43
 Mascall — see Mascall

- Mash,
 Elizabeth, 210
 John, 197, 204
 Priscilla, 204
 Susanna, 204, 210
- Maskal — see Mascall
- Maskall — see Mascall
- Mason, 22
 Elias, 24
 Elyas, 23
 Hanna, 22
 Hugh, 136
 James, 21
 Jane, 12
 Martha, 23
 Mary, 21, 146
 Sary, 21
- Massey — see Massey
- Massy, Massey, 169
 Abigail, 30, 50, 51, 203
 Benjamin, 79
 Daniel, 62
 Elizabeth, 51
 Ellen, 13
 Jane, 77, 79, 82
 Jeffrey, 5, 26
 Jo, 149
 Jo:, 26
 John, 27, 29, 30, 31, 51, 62, 77,
 79, 82, 103, 105, 108, 153, 169
 fn, 193, 193 fn
 Nathanael, 221
 Nathaniel, 62, 82
 Rebecca, 62
 Rebecka, 221
 Samuel, 62
 Sara, 51
 Sarah, 29
 Thomas, 30, 31, 50, 51, 203
- Masters, 288, 331
 Benjamin, 43
 Deborah, 39, 47, 167, 263
 Edward, 51
 Elizabeth, 39
 Francis, 45
 Hannah, 288, 331
 J., 39
 John, 39, 43, 45, 47, 49, 51
 Moses, 49
 Nathaniel, 45
- Maston, 28, 53, 187, 193, 195, 212,
 230
 B., 229
 Benjamin, 31, 34, 43, 179, 187
 Deliverance, 26
 Elizabeth, 38, 46
 J., 93
 John, 29, 38, 46, 48, 91, 94, 157
 Joseph, 34
 Man., 38
 Manassah, 141
 Manasseh, 32, 34, 230
 Margret, 48
 Mary, 29
 Mehitabel, 34
 Mercy, 32, 48, 195
 Nathanel, 195
 Nathaniel, 48
 Sarah, 46
 Susanna, 38, 41, 201
 William, 26, 27, 28, 42, 43, 46
- Masury — see Mazury
- Mather, 172
 Cotton, xv, xv fn, xvi fn, 237
 Increase, xix fn
- Mathews,
 Hanna, 48
 John, 48
- Maury, Maurye,
 Appia, 16
 Benjamin, 22
 Elizabeth, 11, 18
 Jonathan, 16
 Mary, 17
 Roger, 5, 16, 17, 18, 22
- Maverick, Mavericke, Mavricks, 6, 17,
 34, 142
 Aaron, 26
 Abigail, 20
 Eliza, 22
 Elizabeth, 21
 Eunice, 158
 Mary, 18, 25

- Moses, 6, 17, 18, 20, 21, 23, 25,
 26, 158
 Rebecca, 34
 Remember, 23
 Samuel, 21
 Maxfield, Benjamin, 169
 Maybee, Dorcas, 49, 196
 Mayfield,
 Benjamin, 40, 41, 42
 Hannah, 64, 65, 69
 Rachel, 65
 Samuel, 41, 42, 64, 65, 69
 Sarah, 69
 Mazury, Masury, 34
 Benjamin, 31, 40, 69
 Elizabeth, 34
 James, 323
 John, 55, 81, 245, 330
 Joseph, 40, 74
 Kezia, 245, 288, 330
 M., 31
 Margarett, 305
 Martha, 56, 248
 Mary, 81, 83, 304, 305, 323, 330
 Samuel, 74, 81, 83, 305, 330
 Sarah, 69, 83
 Stephen, 69
 Meacham — see Meachum
 Meachum, Meacham, Mechum,
 Meechum, 45
 Daniel, 43
 Debora, 43
 Deborah, 49, 175
 Elizabeth, 44, 78
 Esther, 43
 James, 76
 Jeremia, 45
 Jeremiah, 44, 46, 48, 49, 76, 78,
 81, 175, 303, 335
 John, 50, 54, 241
 Margart, 46
 Mary, 50, 54, 241
 Rebecca, 76, 78, 81, 303, 335
 Mechum — see Meachum
 Meechum — see Meachum
 Meek, Elizabeth, 75
 Merit, Meritt, Merrit, Merritt, 28,
 32, 33, 35
 Abigail, 143, 158
 David, 35
 Elizabeth, 28, 32
 G., 158
 George, 33
 Hanna, 28
 Hannah, 35
 James, 35 fn
 John, 35, 35 fn, 156, 158
 Martha, 35 fn
 Mary, 32, 35, 35 fn, 114, 156
 Nicholas, 35, 35 fn
 Nicolas, 28
 Obedience, 33
 Rebecca, 35 fn
 Samuel, 33, 35 fn
 Meritt — see Merit
 Merrit — see Merit
 Merritt — see Merit
 Messarvy, Messervy,
 Aaron, 67, 179
 Elizabeth, 67
 Susannah, 179
 Messervy — see Messarvy
 Michel,
 Sara, 42
 Sarah, 42
 Mickle-Roy
 Mary, 74
 William, 74
 Miles, 28, 30, 31
 Elizabeth, 30
 Mary, 28
 Sarah, 31, 185
 Miller, Perry, xvi fn
 Millet — see Millett
 Millett, Millet,
 Andrew, 68, 70, 72, 75, 78, 80,
 83, 306, 314
 John, 80
 Jonathan, 77, 80, 334
 Joseph, 80
 Mary, 77, 80
 Ruth, 68, 69, 70, 72, 75, 78, 80,
 83, 306, 314

- Samuel, 70
 Thomas, 83, 306
 Mills, 322
 Elizabeth, 82, 306, 322
 John, 82, 306, 322
 Stephen, 306
 Misservee — see Misservy
 Misservy, Misservee,
 Aaron, 44, 46, 47, 48
 Abiel, 49
 Mary, 47, 48
 Susanna, 49
 William, 46
 Mitchel,
 George, 43
 John, 43
 Sara, 43
 Modgey, Tamizond, 72, 317
 Montague, Abigaile, 12
 Montgomery,
 David, 75, 333
 Sarah, 75, 333
 Thomas, 75
 Moor — see Moore
 Moore, Moor,
 Abigaile, 16
 Anne, 6
 Benjamin, 18
 Caleb, 20
 Christian, 14, 23
 Elizabeth, 21
 Ephraim, 20
 Hanna, 6, 20
 Jerusha, 16
 John, 6, 16
 Jon, 18, 20
 Jonathan, 22
 Joshua, 21
 Martha, 8, 17
 Mary, 23, 305
 Michael, 305
 Nathaniel, 19
 Remember, 17
 Richard, 11, 18, 20, 21, 22, 23
 Samuel, 16, 17
 Samuell, 5, 18
 Sarah, 305
 Susana, 22
 Thomas, 8, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21,
 22, 23
 More, 31, 166, 171
 Caleb, 39
 Christian, 34
 R[-], 31
 Richard, 33, 34, 36, 39
 Sarah, 36
 Thomas, 33
 Morgan, 26
 Aaron, 26
 Benjamin, 22
 Bethiah, 24
 John, 30
 Joseph, 22, 27, 34
 Luke, 22, 100
 Robart, 29
 Robert, 14, 22, 23, 24, 116
 Samll, 22
 Samuel, 27, 29, 30, 34
 Morong,
 Jemima, 82, 305
 Jemimah, 322
 John, 305
 Thomas, 82, 305, 322
 Mors,
 Elizabeth, 305
 Nathaniel, 305
 Obadiah, 305
 Morton,
 Abigail, 71, 74, 77, 80, 317
 Joshua, 80
 Mary, 71
 Mehitabel, 50
 Nathaniel, xiv, xv fn, 50
 Ursula, 74
 Wills, 71, 74, 77, 80, 317
 Moses, 30, 319
 Edward, 30
 Eleazer, 48, 49, 51, 53, 76, 184,
 319
 Eliezer, 30, 77
 Elizabeth, 30, 46
 Hanna, 46, 184
 Hannah, 284
 Henry, 30, 48, 51, 79

- John, 30
 Mary, 76, 77, 319
 Remember, 30, 183
 Samuel, 53, 76
 Sarah, 79
- Moulton,
 Abigaile, 19
 James, 7, 16, 19
 Mary, 7, 45, 183
 Robert, 9, 19, 20, 45, 183
 Samuel, 19
- Mugford,
 Elizabeth, 76, 304
 James, 65
 Jane, 74, 81
 John, 64, 65, 68, 71, 74, 75, 76, 78, 81, 304, 311
 Mary, 64, 65, 68, 71, 74, 75, 76, 78, 81, 304
 Sarah, 71
 William, 75
- Mungy, 35
 Elizabeth, 153
 Mary, 35
- Munion — see Munnion
- Munnion, Munion,
 Edmond, 74
 Edmund, 71, 81, 304
 Gabriel, 304
 Jemimah, 71
 Mercy, 71, 74, 81, 304
- Munsall, Ruth, 10
- Murray — see Murrey
- Murrey, Murray,
 Lydia, 288, 315, 330
 Mary, 239, 263
 William, 44, 177, 288, 315, 330
- Neal, Neale, 40, 48, 154, 187, 189, 222, 246
 Abigail, 47, 187
 Benjamin, 61
 Deborah, 48, 189
 Dorothy, 263
 Elizabeth, 53, 210, 222
 Eunice, 65, 67, 72, 330
 Francis, 40
- Hanna, 53, 222
 Hannah, 56, 61, 241, 246
 Jeremia, 51
 [Jeremiah], 47
 Jeremiah, 21, 47 fn, 51, 52, 53, 54, 210, 319
 John, 19, 20, 21, 25, 52, 53, 55, 222
 Jon, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24
 Jonathan, 23, 54
 Joseph, 65, 67, 72, 241, 247, 330
 L., 47
 Lyddea, 22
 Lyddia, 125
 Lydia, 47, 51, 125, 187, 319, 337
 Mary, 12, 24, 55, 56, 57, 61, 72, 246
 Robert, 56
 Samuel, 55
- Neale — see Neal
- Neave, 12
- Needham,
 Daniel, 71, 73, 77, 82, 304
 George, 76
 Isabella, 71, 73, 77, 82, 304
 Jane, 82
 John, 82
 Mary, 73
 Rachel, 76
 Thomas, 77
 William, 76, 304
- Newman, 98
 Antipas, 98 fn
- Nicholet, Nicholets, 30, 31, 126, 127, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 139
 Charles, xix, 126 fn
 Elizabeth, 31
 Rebecca, 30
- Nicholets — see Nicholet
- Nichols,
 Elizabeth, 176
 [Samuel], 176
- Nicols, Elizabeth, 44
- Norcross, Nathanyell, 11
- Norman, 19, 24, 25
 Abigail, 31

- Ann, 19
 Arabella, 6, 7, 20
 [John], 31
 J[ohn], 30
 John, 16, 17, 21, 28, 29
 Jon, 20, 23
 Joseph, 24, 25
 Lyddia, 17
 Martha, 21
 Mary, 28
 Richard, 23, 30
 Timothy, 29
 Norrice, Norris, 104, 112, 248
 Abial, 311
 Abiel, 46
 Edward, xvii fn, xxiv, 9, 9 fn, 25,
 35, 40, 41, 43, 45, 46, 56, 58,
 60, 64, 66, 248, 310, 314, 327,
 330
 Elizabeth, 35, 41, 77
 Henry, 82
 James, 43, 59, 61, 64, 66, 73, 77,
 81, 82, 309
 Joanna, 59, 61, 64, 66, 309
 John, 45, 64
 Lydia, 73, 77, 81, 82
 Mary, 40, 61
 Remember, 58, 60, 61, 64, 66,
 310, 327
 Sarah, 58, 73
 Thomas, 60
 Norris — see Norrice
 Norton, 23, 24, 86
 Elizabeth, 24
 Experience, 198
 Georg, 15, 18
 George, 5, 16, 17, 18
 John, 16, 95 fn, 154, 155
 Jon, 23
 Mary, 7
 Nathaniel, 17
 Novice, Dorothy, 14
 Nowell, 29, 30, 31, 32
 John, 31
 Joseph, 32
 Lyddia, 30
 Mary, 125
 Robart, 29
 Ruth, 31
 Noyes, Noys, 156, 157, 167, 170,
 171, 205 fn, 248, 252, 261, 272
 Nicholas, xx, 156, 156 fn, 213,
 214, 215, 220, 225, 233, 252,
 259
 Nicolas, 234
 Noys — see Noyes
 Nurse, 172, 218, 219
 Benjamin, 39
 Elizabeth, 39, 167, 226
 Goody, 127
 Hannah, 39
 Jonathan, 39
 Joseph, 39
 Samuel, 39, 219
 Sarah, 39
 Nutting,
 Eunice, 72
 John, 70, 72, 286, 290, 329
 Ruth, 70, 72, 329
 Nye, 102
 Philip, 102 fn
 Oakman, 321
 John, 82
 Rebecca, 81, 82, 304, 321
 Samuel, 81, 82, 304, 321
 Sarah, 304
 Osborne — see Osborne
 Odel, Odle, 333, 334
 Benjamin, 67, 312, 313, 333
 James, 66, 74, 312, 330
 Martha, 67, 313, 330
 Mary, 67, 74, 313, 330
 Odle — see Odel
 Oliver,
 Annis, 76
 Jacob, 76, 79
 Sarah, 76
 Olnly,
 Nadabiah, 16
 Thomas, 16
 Ormes — see Orms

- Orms, Ormes,
 Elizabeth, 238
 Mary, 165
- Orn — see Horne
- Orne — see Horne
- Ornes — see Horne
- Orno — see Horne
- Osborne, Osborne, Osburn
 Frzwith, 10
 Jane, 331
 Samuel, 47, 331
 Sarah, 47
 William, 8
- Osburn — see Osborne
- Osgood, Ausgood, 49, 188, 236, 267,
 268, 270, 286, 291, 298
 Abigail, 63, 66, 69
 Benjamin, 59
 Hanna, 52, 53, 211, 221
 Hannah, 59, 63, 65, 66, 314, 330
 James, 49, 290, 290 fn, 291, 313,
 329
 Jeremiah, 65
 John, 46, 56
 Martha, 69
 Mary, 41, 63, 222, 238
 Nathaneel, 53, 66, 211, 221
 Nathaniel, 52, 54, 56, 59, 63, 65,
 314, 315, 330, 332
 Peter, 41, 42, 43, 44, 46, 48,
 188, 217, 254, 255, 256, 265,
 266, 273, 277, 281, 282, 284,
 290, 290 fn, 292, 295
 Samuel, 43, 63, 66, 69, 238, 326
 Sarah, 315, 332
 William, 48, 66
- Owen, Owens, 30, 34, 35, 35 fn
 John, 30
 Martha, 35 fn
 Remember, 35
 Thomas, 34
- Owens — see Owen
- Pach — see Patch
- Packer,
 Susanna, 199
 Susannah, 49
- Pacy, 19
 Hanna, 19
 Katheren, 11
- Page,
 Lucy, 8, 17
 Mary, 79, 319
 Rebca, 17
 Thomas, 17
- Pain, Paine, Payne, 200
 Abigail, 54, 200
 Elizabeth, 14
 Francis, 57
 Henry, 51
 John, 51, 54, 55, 57, 200
 Jonathan, 54
 Mary, 51, 329
 Sarah, 55
 William, 14
- Paine — see Pain
- Palfery — see Palfrey
- Palferye — see Palfrey
- Palfrey, Palfery, Palferye, Palfry,
 Palfrye, Palphry, 52, 200
 Anstice, 49, 201
 Eedith, 6
 Elizabeth, 49, 59, 288
 Jehodan, 16
 Jonathan, 16
 Margaret, 200, 201
 Margeret, 199
 Margret, 49
 Mary, 17
 Peeter, 5, 16, 17
 Peter, 17
 Remember, 17
 Thomas, 52, 59, 211, 216
 Walter, 57, 199
 Warwick, 55, 57, 242, 288
- Palfry — see Palfrey
- Palfrye — see Palfrey
- Palmer,
 Lydia, 70, 317
 Richard, 317
- Palphry — see Palfrey
- Pamer — see Pummery
- Pamur — see Pummery

- Parker, 21
 Mary, 21
 Thomas, 123 fn
- Parkman, 32, 33, 47
 D[eliverance], 187
 Deliverance, 32, 38, 39, 235 fn
 Margaret, 39
 Mehitabel, 47, 187
 Samuel, 38
 Sarah, 32
 Verin, 33
- Parmeter — see Parmiter
- Parmiter, Parmeter
 Benjamin, 158
- Parris, 170
 Samuel, 170 fn
- Parsons, Mary, 44, 178
- Partman, 235
- Pascho — see Pasco
- Pasco, Pascho,
 Abigail, 40
 Elizabeth, 40
 Hanna, 41
 Hugh, 40, 41, 43, 44, 46, 173
 James, 46
 John, 40
 Jonathan, 44
 Margery, 40, 184
 Marget, 43
 Mary, 40, 173, 184
 Sara, 172
 Sarey, 40
- Patch, Pach, 22
 Abraham, 22
 Edmond, 97
 Eliz., 116
 Elizabeth, 110
 Nicholas, 13, 116
- Paul,
 John, 83
 Sarah, 83, 323
- Payne — see Pain
- Peach,
 Samuel, 46
 Sarah, 46, 185
- Peal, 324
 Abigail, 58, 59, 69, 70, 73, 76,
 307, 308, 315, 326
 Benjamin, 59, 306
 Ebenezer, 59, 306, 324, 337
 Elizabeth, 70, 77, 79
 George, 59, 69, 70, 73, 76, 315
 Hannah, 59, 76, 82, 305, 306,
 322, 324, 337
 Jonathan, 69, 70, 71, 74, 76, 77,
 79, 315, 331
 Joseph, 69, 73, 315
 Margaret, 82, 305
 Martha, 71
 Mary, 70, 76, 79, 81, 304, 305,
 307, 320
 Robert, 79, 81, 304, 305, 307,
 320
 Roger, 82, 305, 322
 Sarah, 70, 71, 74, 76, 77, 79, 331
 William Bartol, 81
- Pearse — see Pierce
- Peas — see Pease
- Pease, Peas, 9, 153
 Abigail, 82, 337
 Abraham, 28
 An, 126
 Bethia, 177
 Bethiah, 42
 Elizabeth, 42
 Isack, 30
 James, 29
 Jo, 153
 Jo:, 114
 J[ohn], 30
 John, 28, 29, 82, 337
 Jonathan, 304, 306, 323
 Lydia, 81, 321
 Mary, 19, 28, 306
 Nathaniel, 19, 134
 Robart, 28
 Robert, 12, 19, 208, 226
 Samuel, 304
 Sarah, 19, 304, 306, 323
- Pedrick,
 Dorcas, 158, 158 fn

- G., 159
 Tabitha, 158
 Peeters — see Peters
 Penniwell — see Penniwell
 Penniwell, Penniwell, 33
 Hannah, 33
 Mary, 146
 Perry, Perrye,
 Benjamin, 18
 David, 18
 Elisha, 20
 Frances, 18
 Jane, 11, 18, 20
 Samuel, 18
 Sara, 18
 Perrye — see Perry
 Perse — see Pierce
 Peters, Peeters, 17
 Bethia, 37, 41, 179
 Deliverance, 9
 Ebenezer, 43
 Eliza, 41
 Elizabeth, 40
 Hugh, xxiv, 6
 Mary, 44
 Richard, 37, 40, 43, 44, 179
 Petherick — see Pethrick
 Pethrick, Petherick, 32, 33
 Benjamin, 32
 Joanna, 33
 John, 32
 Miriam, 32, 144
 Sarah, 32
 Pettingaile, Pettingall,
 Richard, 10, 20
 Samuel, 20
 Pettingall — see Pettingaile
 Phelps,
 Elizabeth, 38, 77, 79
 Jane, 38, 163
 Joseph, 77, 79
 Nathan, 77
 Philip, King, 136
 Philips — see Phillips
 Phillips, Philips, 40, 157, 313, 329
 Elizabeth, 45
 Hanna, 223
 John, 46
 Mary, 42, 218
 Patience, 49, 313, 329
 Ruth, 44
 Samuel, 40, 42, 44, 45, 46, 49,
 149 fn, 202, 216, 216 fn, 217,
 218, 223
 Philpott,
 Elizabeth, 68
 John, 68
 Mary, 68
 Phipen — see Phippen
 Phipeny — see Phippen
 Phippen, Phipen, Phipeny, 21, 31,
 32, 33, 37, 133, 153, 216, 249
 Abiel, 49, 331
 Abigail, 37, 56
 Ann, 32
 Anne, 36, 229
 Anstis, 64
 Atwater, 64, 66
 Benjamin, 39, 56, 57, 61, 249,
 311
 Cromwell, 33
 Daniel, 33
 [David], 34, 35, 41
 David, 39, 55
 Docas, 118
 Dorcas, 33, 118
 Ebenezer, 64
 Elizabeth, 39, 47, 52, 57, 58, 61,
 64, 67, 71
 Hannah, 56
 Israel, 60
 James, 67
 Jane, 35
 John, 33, 34, 52, 53, 55, 56, 58,
 61, 64, 67, 71, 211
 Jonathan, 62
 Jos., 33
 Joseph, 34, 35, 36, 38, 39, 44,
 53, 118, 140, 147
 Lydia, 68
 Margaret, 68, 241
 Margarett, 60, 64, 73
 Margerit, 53
 Mary, 50

- Mehitabel, 67
 Nathan, 53
 Nathaneel, 52, 64, 216
 Nathaniel, 38, 53, 55, 56, 60, 68, 73, 241
 Rachel, 35, 42, 53, 313, 329
 Rebecca, 60, 62, 64, 66, 67, 323
 Rebeccah, 58
 Ruth, 58, 311
 Samuel, 34, 38, 42, 44, 47, 49, 52, 53, 54, 58, 60, 62, 64, 66, 67, 170
 Sara, 37, 41
 Sarah, 33, 47, 56, 178, 309, 326
 Steven, 34
 Susanna, 38
 Susannah, 71
 Thomas, 31, 50, 53, 73
 William, 55
 Pickerin — see Pickering
 Pickering, Pickerin, 36, 37, 173, 178
 Abigail, 306
 Alice, 157
 Benjamin, 65, 306
 Edward, 65, 67, 71, 75, 78
 Elizabeth, 8, 20, 80, 314
 Eunice, 49, 81, 304, 305, 306
 Hanna, 45, 50
 Hannah, 34, 65, 67, 71, 75, 78, 263, 304, 314, 331
 James, 47
 Jane, 80, 173, 332
 Jo, 168
 Jo., 39
 John, xxv, 32, 39, 43, 45, 46, 48, 49, 67, 81, 82, 193
 Jon, 20
 Jonathan, 32, 34, 52, 173, 211
 Joseph, 43, 80, 304, 306, 320
 Lois, 305
 Lydia, 45, 78, 80, 82
 Mary, 55, 72, 76, 78, 305
 Mercy, 52, 211
 Samuel, 36, 78
 Sarah, 39, 52, 72, 168, 304, 306, 320
 Saray, 37
 Theophilus, 46
 Timothy, 48, 72, 76, 80, 82, 305, 332
 William, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 52, 55, 80, 178, 231, 234, 304, 306
 Pickerman,
 Benjamin, 43
 Mary, 43
 Pickett,
 Danyell, 23
 Jacob, 24
 James, 22
 John, 13
 Jon, 22, 23, 24
 Rebecca, 22
 Sarah, 22
 Thomas, 22
 Pickman, 29, 31, 61, 310
 Abigail, 58
 Benjamin, 54, 56, 58, 75, 254, 318
 Caleb, 54
 Josua, 31
 Love, 75
 Peter, 29
 Rachel, 56
 Rebecca, Negro servant of Sister
 Pickman, 310
 Sarah, 58
 Pickworth, 28, 29, 30, 31
 Abigaile, 23
 Anna, 17
 Anne, 7
 Benjamin, 21
 Hanna, 29
 [John], 17
 John, 17, 23
 Jon, 21, 23
 Jonathan, 19
 Joseph, 19
 Rachell, 21
 Ruth, 17
 Samuel, 30
 Sarah, 23, 28, 31, 121
 Pierce, Pearse, Perse,
 Abraham, 198, 198 fn, 226
 Elizabeth, 64, 267

- Isabel, 226
 Isabell, 198 fn
 John, 64
 Pierpont, 314
 Jonathan, 314 fn
 Joseph, 314, 331
 Pike, Pikes, 141
 Abigail, 63, 306
 Benjamin, 72
 Elizabeth, 56, 59, 61, 63, 64, 67,
 72
 Hanna, 54
 Margarett, 60, 64
 Mary, 63, 311, 313, 329
 Nathaneel, 54
 Nathaniel, 55, 60, 233, 337
 Nathl, 306
 Richard, 56, 59, 61, 63, 64, 67,
 72, 313, 329
 Samuel, 61, 306
 Sara, 100
 Sarah, 60
 Susanna, 59
 William, 54
 Pikes — see Pike
 Pilgrim, 34
 Elizabeth, 34
 Mary, 34
 Thomas, 34
 Pinson,
 Elizabeth, 53, 229, 326
 Mary, 52, 210, 211
 Pitman, 29, 30
 Abigail, 49
 Atwood, 39
 Benjamin, 31, 34, 36, 38, 39, 45,
 49, 52, 54, 175, 178
 Charity, 158
 Elizabeth, 39, 153, 304, 306
 John, 45
 Jone, 99, 158
 Joseph, 29, 304, 306
 Joshua, 34, 207
 Lydia, 27, 110
 Martha, 31
 Mary, 175, 306
 Michael, 304
 Nicholas, 38
 Rebecca, 34
 Samuel, 39, 52
 Sarah, 27, 157
 Susanna, 30
 Thomas, 99
 William, 36
 Plaistead — see Plaisted
 Plaisted, Plaistead
 Ichabod, 61, 310
 Mary, 61
 Sarah, 61, 310
 Plaister,
 Ichabod, 69
 Sarah, 69
 Pomery,
 Elizabeth, 202
 Rachel, 200
 Pope, 91, 93, 94
 Abigail, 68, 314
 Benjamin, 23
 Damaris, 19
 Eunice, 56, 250, 251
 Gartrud, 13
 George, 22
 Hanna, 20, 21
 J., 93, 94
 Joseph, 6, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24,
 91, 94
 Martha, 52, 211, 248, 263
 Mary, 53
 Samuel, 24, 52, 53, 56, 68, 211,
 248, 250, 314
 Susanna, 56
 Porter, 31, 34, 98, 163
 Aaron, 57, 57 fn
 Abigail, 31
 Anna, 38
 Benjamin, 37, 42
 Elezar, 31
 Eunice, 13
 Hebhziba, 33
 Is[rael], 31
 Israel, 31, 35, 37, 42, 163
 Isrel, 40
 John, 13, 22
 Jon, 20, 21

- Jonathan, 9, 21
 Joseph, 28, 30, 31, 33, 34, 35, 36, 38
 Mary, 8, 12, 20, 30
 Mehitabel, 35
 Mercy, 36
 Ruth, 35
 Sarah, 22, 31
 William, 31, 40
- Potter, 26, 27, 28, 29, 97
 Alis, 15
 Benjamin, 29
 Bethia, 28
 Hanna, 25, 27
 Lyddia, 29
 Lydia, 27
 Mary, 26
 Nicholas, 25
 Samuel, 26
- Prat — see Pratt
- Pratt, Prat, 218
 Abigail, 314, 330
 Hanna, 50
 Hannah, 314, 330
 John, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 218, 314
 Jon, 330
 Lydia, 52
 Margret, 218
 Maverick, 53
 Ruth, 49
 Susanna, 51
 Susannah, 314, 330
- Prescot — see Prescott
- Prescott, Prescot, xx, 255, 276, 291
 Benjamin, 57, 57 fn, 225, 228 fn, 290, 296
 Peter, 153, 170
- Prettice, Prittice, Susannah, 274, 326
- Price, xxiii, 21, 34, 51, 54, 92, 120, 123, 173, 184, 189
 Elizabeth, 11, 18, 29, 54, 318
 Hanna, 21, 34
 J., 31
 John, 21, 33, 46
 Samuel, 24
 Sarah, 51, 318
- Theodore, 19, 29
 Walter, 11, 18, 19, 21, 22, 24, 31, 46, 47, 184, 189, 214, 231, 234
 William, 22, 47
- Priest, 33, 40
 El., 33
 Elizabeth, 33, 168
 Hanna, 40
- Prince, Princes, 5
 Elizabeth, 13, 56
 Goodman, 100
 John, xxv, 18, 45, 52
 Jonathan, 25
 Joseph, 19, 49
 Mary, 21, 38, 51, 197, 263
 Richard, 11, 18, 19, 21, 24, 25, 47, 49, 50, 52, 56, 186, 187, 197, 263
 Robart, 41
 Samuel, 23, 38, 41, 42, 45, 51
 Susanna, 37
 William, 41
- Princes — see Prince
- Procter, Proctor, 27, 208
 Benjamin, 208
 Eunice, 50
 Francis, 53, 229
 John, 50, 202
 Kesia, 229
 Martha, 27
 [Mary], 202
 Mary, 208
- Proctor — see Procter
- Pudney, Pudny,
 [Abigail], 41
 John, 171
 Jude, 171
 [Judith], 41
 Judith, 41, 171
- Pudny — see Pudney
- Pulciver, 37
 David, 37
- Pummery, Pamer, Pamur,
 Elizabeth, 40
 John, 40
 Mary, 40, 50

- Rachel, 40
 Richard, 50, 51
 Ruth, 40
 Sarah, 51
 Susanna, 40
 Punchard, 29, 32, 34, 36
 Abigail, 36, 57, 127, 174, 263
 Abigaile, 29
 Benjamin, 53, 78
 Hannah, 74, 76, 78, 81, 83, 305
 James, 60, 81
 John, 34, 52, 53, 57, 60, 74, 76,
 78, 81, 83, 305
 Martha, 60
 Mary, 52
 Samuel, 83
 Sarah, 251
 William, 32, 76
 Punchin,
 John, 50
 William, 189
 Purchase, 69, 315
 Sarah, 69, 315
 Putman — see Putnam
 Putnam, Putman, 28, 37, 121, 169,
 170, 247, 278, 279 fn, 282
 Abigail, 36
 Archelaus, 44
 B., 38
 Bartholemew, 59
 Bartholmew, 39, 54, 56
 Bartholomew, 247
 Benjamin, 38, 44, 166, 170
 Daniel, 44, 281
 Deliverance, 25, 39
 Ebenezer, xxv, xxvi, 37
 Edmond, 24
 Edward, 35, 170
 Elisha, 37
 Elizabeth, 12, 13, 26, 36, 38, 43
 Hanna, 28, 36, 160
 James, 37, 44, 170
 Jo., 36, 160
 J[ohn], 30
 John, 12, 28, 29, 36, 39, 40, 111,
 150, 155, 160, 169
 Jon, 25, 37
 Jon., 38
 Jonathan, 28, 155, 170
 Joseph, 29, 39, 41, 43, 45, 54
 Josiah, 38
 Lyddia, 37
 Mary, 22, 40, 41, 59
 Nathan, 169
 Nathaniel, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28, 38,
 155
 Nathanyell, 13
 Priscilla, 10, 28
 Prudence, 26
 Rebecca, 28, 111
 Ruth, 30
 Samuel, 23, 36, 39
 Sara, 28, 37, 39, 166
 Sarah, 22, 45, 163, 170
 Susanna, 29
 T[homas], 26, 34
 Thomas, 11, 22, 23, 24, 25, 29,
 34, 36, 37, 39, 40, 146, 170
 William, 56
 R., Jeremiah, 48
 Rabbe, Katherne, 11
 Raiment — see Raymond
 Rawson, Edward, 129
 Ray, Raye, 27, 128, 170
 Bethiah, 7, 26
 Dan, 25
 Daniel, 155
 Elizabeth, 25
 John, 27
 Joseph, 26
 Jos[hua], 25, 28
 Joshua, 170
 Josua, 25
 Josuah, 93
 Rebeca, 25
 Sara, 25, 95
 Sarah, 28
 Raye — see Ray
 Rayment — see Raymond
 Raymond, Raiment, Rayment,
 Raymont, 95
 Barsheba, 16
 Danyell, 23

- Edward, 68
 Eliza, 22
 Elizabeth, 61
 H., 116
 Hanna, 19
 Joshua, 17
 Judith, 6
 Lemuell, 18
 Mary, 63
 Paul, 61, 63, 65, 68, 72, 300, 333
 R., 127
 Rachel, 97
 Richard, 5, 5 fn, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23
 Samuel, 20
 Tabitha, 61, 63, 65, 68, 72, 300
 William, 65
 Raymont — see Raymond
 Read, 17, 22, 24, 26, 27, 140
 Alice, 10
 Aron, 22
 Edward, 143, 158
 Elizabeth, 24
 Esdras, 9, 17
 Jacob, 25, 26
 John, 23
 Mary, 13, 23, 145
 Remember, 25
 Sara, 25, 27
 Sarah, 10
 Susana, 22
 Thomas, 5, 23, 25
 Reddington, 21, 25
 Elizabeth, 21
 Isaack, 25
 Margaret, 100
 Reeves, Reves,
 Benjamin, 73, 323
 Cockeril, 50, 52, 55
 Cockreel, 58, 60, 62, 64, 66, 73, 204
 Cockriel, 53
 Elizabeth, 55, 64, 66, 73, 76, 78, 319
 Jacob, 60
 Jane, 10
 John, 66
 Judith, 58, 60, 62, 78, 204
 Mary, 64
 Nathaniel, 58
 Samuel, 50, 76, 78, 319
 Sara, 337
 Sarah, 323
 Susanna, 53
 William, 52
 Reif,
 Mary, 35
 Richard, 35
 Reith,
 Abigail, 32
 Elizabeth, 33
 John, 32
 Richard, 32, 33, 144, 158
 Sarah, 32
 Rennolls — see Renolds
 Renolds, Rennolls,
 Henry, 14
 William, 9
 Reves — see Reeves
 Rhodes, Benjamin, 80
 Rich,
 Hannah, 305
 John, 136
 Mary, 305
 Thomas, 305 fn
 Richardson,
 Elizabeth, 68, 313
 Francis, 68, 313
 Rising,
 Hanna, 26
 James, 26, 93, 96, 123
 Rix, Rixe, 101, 194
 Elizabeth, 46
 George, 27
 Hester, 24
 [James], 37
 James, 25, 37, 42, 43, 45, 46, 162, 194
 Janet, 39
 Lydia, 43
 Margaret, 170
 Mary, 45
 Remember, 23
 Sara, 39

- Sarah, 23
 Theophilus, 27
 Thomas, 14, 23, 24, 25
 Rixe — see Rix
 Roapes — see Ropes
 Robbinson, Robinson, Robisson, 27
 Abel, 53, 54, 227, 228
 Anna, 16
 Anne, 7
 Elizabeth, 228
 Hester, 24
 Isabell, 7
 John, xi, 8
 Martha, 43, 174
 Mary, 19, 45, 181
 Samll, 17
 Samuel, 45, 54, 174, 181
 Sara, 167
 Sarah, 226
 Timothy, 20
 William, 7, 16, 17, 19, 20, 24,
 45
 Roberts,
 Elizabeth, 40 fn
 Hannah, 81, 321
 Joseph, 81, 321
 Robie,
 Elizabeth, 68
 Mehitabel, 64, 68, 72
 Thomas, 64, 68, 72
 Robinson — see Robbinson
 Robisson — see Robbinson
 Rogers, 149 fn, 208, 269 fn
 Benjamin, 48
 Daniel, 52, 211, 216, 263
 David, 48
 Dorithee, 221
 Dorothy, 208
 Ezekiel, 149 fn
 Jeremia, 52
 Jeremiah, 48, 195, 211
 John, 48, 51, 195, 208, 221, 222,
 223, 259, 260, 284, 295, 296
 Nathaniel, 284, 284 fn, 296
 Sarah, 209
 Silence, 216, 263
 William, 209, 268, 269
 Rootes — see Roots
 Roots, Rootes, 27, 115
 Bethiah, 22
 John, 22
 Jonathan, 27
 Jos., 117
 Joseph, 22, 23
 Josiah, 13, 22, 116
 Katherne, 14
 Richard, 6
 Susana, 22
 T., 128
 Thomas, 23
 Ropes, Roapes,
 Abigail, 66, 327
 Abigaile, 24
 Abraham, 74
 Anna, 175
 Anne, 52, 72, 218
 Benjamin, 45, 46, 49, 51, 52, 54,
 55, 62, 66, 67, 72, 218, 312
 Daniel, 52
 David, 67, 82
 Dorothy, 58, 61
 Elizabeth, 40, 61, 63, 65, 68, 72,
 74, 309, 333
 Georg, 19
 George, 20, 21, 23, 24, 25, 51,
 54, 55, 68
 Hannah, 45, 58, 60, 63, 64, 66,
 67, 72, 73, 312
 Jo., 38, 40
 John, 36, 45, 52, 54, 55, 58, 61,
 65, 69, 72, 125, 126, 238, 312,
 328
 Jon, 21
 Jonathan, 19, 52, 55, 58
 Joseph, 59, 61, 63, 65, 68, 72,
 74, 309, 310, 333
 Lydia, 52, 54, 59, 62, 216, 241
 Mary, 11, 20, 55, 64, 69, 72, 73,
 238, 326, 328
 Nathaneel, 66, 311, 327
 Nathaniel, 45, 326, 327
 Richard, 54, 55, 56, 58, 60, 63,
 64, 73, 240
 Ruth, 65

- Samuel, 25, 38, 52, 54, 56, 59, 62, 216, 241
Sarah, 36, 51, 56, 72, 82, 236, 319
Thomas, 49, 82, 319
William, 23, 60, 72, 236
- Rose,
Edward, 74, 76, 333
Mary, 74, 76, 333
Richard, 31
Ruth, 31
- Ross,
James, 176
Sarah, 44, 176
- Rowles, Mary, 158, 159
- Ruck, 9, 26, 30, 31, 33, 35, 37, 169
Abigail, 50
Bethia, 28
Bethiah, 73, 74, 76
Elizabeth, 24, 46, 73, 308, 327
Esther, 305, 324
Hana, 14
Hanna, 24, 52, 218
James, 31, 37, 56, 63, 209, 320
John, 24, 25, 35, 56
Jon, 25
Jonathan, 33
Martha, 63
Mary, 26, 56, 320
Ruth, 30, 48, 74, 309, 326
Samuel, 31, 46, 48, 49, 50, 56, 73, 74, 76, 181, 193, 247, 320, 337
Sara, 96
Sarah, 25, 320, 337
Steephen, 18
Thomas, 9, 18, 25, 52, 218, 286, 308
- Ruee,
Abraham, 307
Mary, 307
Susannah, 307
- Russel — see Russell
- Russell, Russel, 33, 35
Abigail, 70
Edmund, 70
Elizabeth, 33, 147, 159
Mary, 33
- Rebecca, 70
Samuel, 33
Sarah, 35
Thomas, 33
- Saimon — see Simonds
- Sallo, Sallos, Sallowes, 26, 26 fn, 27
Freeborn, 99
H, 92
H:, 116
Hanna, 26
John, 27
Mary, 26
Robert, 26
Sarah, 26
- Sallos — see Sallo
- Sallowes — see Sallo
- Salmon — see Salmons
- Salmons, Salmon,
John, 30
Remember, 30, 113
- Samon — see Simonds
- Sanders,
Elizabeth, 9
Henry, 72
John, 6, 18, 77
Mary, 72, 77, 79
Philip, 72, 77, 79
Samuel, 79
- Sandin,
G., 158
Samuel, 158
- Sandy, 35
Charity, 35, 156
Elizabeth, 35
Joan, 35
Mary, 35
Rebecca, 35
Samuel, 35, 156
- Saunders, 246
Elizabeth (Grafton), 9 fn
John, 9 fn, 65
Mary, 62, 75
Michael, 68
Philemon, 55, 62, 65, 68, 246
Philip, 75
Sarah, 62, 65, 68, 246

- Savage, Sarah, 186 fn
 Sayward, John, 158
 Scarlett, Margeret, 11
 Scolly,
 Elizabeth, 75
 John, 75
 Robert, 75
 Scrugges — see Scrugs
 Scrugs, Scrugges
 T., 97
 Thomas, 6
 Scudder, 12, 22
 Elizabeth, 10, 22
 Hanna, 22
 John, 12
 Jon, 21, 22
 Mary, 21
 Rachell, 13
 Searle, 222
 Joseph, 53
 Mary, 53
 Sara, 53
 Sarah, 53, 222
 Seas,
 Abigail, 75, 77, 79, 318
 John, 75, 77, 79, 318
 Nathaniel, 79
 Thomas, 77
 Seewall — see Sewall
 Sewal — see Sewall
 Sewall, Seewall, Sewal, Sewel,
 Sewell, 40, 42, 43, 44, 44 fn, 45,
 47, 171, 217
 Benjamin, 50
 Elizabeth, 44 fn
 Hanna, 44
 Henry, 47
 Jane, 42, 230, 248
 Jonathan, 42
 Margaret, 38
 Margerit, 174
 Margrit, 201, 202
 Mehitabel, 43, 230, 248
 Mitchell, 45
 Samuel, 40, 171
 [Stephen], 38
 St[ephen], 45
 Stephen, 199, 254, 255, 256, 258,
 273
 Steven, 36, 37, 41, 42, 47, 50,
 173, 247, 250
 Susanna, 41, 230
 Sewel — see Sewall
 Sewell — see Sewall
 Shaffin — see Shaffin
 Shaffin, Shaffin
 Ales, 226
 Elizabeth, 8
 Michaell, 7
 Sharp, Sharpe, Sharps, 18, 20, 21, 30
 Alice, 6
 Boston, 30
 Edward, 17
 Elias, 16
 Elizabeth, 30
 Experience, 18
 Hanna, 21
 Mary, 18
 Nathaniel, 20
 Samll, 16, 18
 Samuel, 17
 Samuell, 5
 Sharpe — see Sharp
 Sharps — see Sharp
 Shattock, Shattuck, 11, 301
 George, 82
 John, 70, 316
 Mary, 70, 316
 Samuell, 11
 Sarah, 70, 82, 301, 316
 Shattuck — see Shattock
 Shaw,
 Elizabeth, 44
 George, 51
 Joanna, 44, 51, 176
 Jonathan, 51
 Mathew, 46
 Mehitabel, 51
 Samuel, 44
 Walter, 46
 William, 44, 51, 176
 Shepard, 115, 171
 Jeremiah, 151 fn, 172 fn
 Jeremy, 151

- Sherman, 27
 Samuel, 27
 Shipton, Clifford, xxvi
 Short, 321
 Elizabeth, 81, 321
 John, 81, 321
 Mary, 81
 Sibley — see Sibly
 Sibly, Sibley,
 Abigaile, 25
 Anna, 32
 Benjamin, 48
 Hanna, 23, 43
 Jo., 32
 John, 5, 19, 23, 24, 32
 Jon, 20, 21, 25
 Jonathan, 40
 Joseph, 38, 43, 46
 Mary, 20, 66, 312
 Rachell, 21
 Samuel, 25, 44
 Sarah, 19
 Susan, 40
 Susanna, 38, 44, 48, 165
 Susanne, 38
 William, 24, 46
 Silsbee — see Silsby
 Silsby, Silsbee, 241
 Elizabeth, 52, 79, 211
 Hannah, 68, 315
 Joseph, 79
 Margert, 52
 Martha, 241, 288, 331
 Mary, 79
 Nathaniel, 52, 54, 68, 211, 241,
 288, 315, 331
 William, 54
 Silver,
 Benjamin, 79
 Daniel, 67, 71
 Elizabeth, 61, 62, 64, 65, 67, 71,
 72, 75, 77, 79, 310
 Hannah, 75
 John, 62, 65
 Mary, 77
 Peter, 61, 62, 64, 65, 67, 71, 72,
 75, 77, 79, 310
 Simmes, Sims, Symmes, Symms,
 Syms, 160
 An, 156
 Ann, 76
 Anna, 158
 Angel, 81
 Benjamin, 70
 Edmund, 66, 70, 73, 76, 78, 81,
 305, 316, 328
 Hanna, 50, 55
 Hannah, 332
 Mary, 78
 Richard, 50, 55
 Sarah, 66, 70, 73, 76, 78, 81, 305,
 328
 Zechariah, 160 fn
 Simond, Samon, Saimon, Simons,
 Symonds, 140, 323
 Anna, 60
 Benjamin, 60, 78, 305, 306, 323
 Ebenezer, 304
 Elizabeth, 27, 54, 60, 61, 65, 69,
 74, 305, 309, 334
 George, 140 fn
 Hannah, 305, 323
 James, 55, 60, 80, 228, 246
 John, 7, 17, 60, 65, 68, 70, 74,
 305, 334
 Jonathan, 60, 76, 306
 Joseph, 61, 73
 Mary, 7, 55, 63, 65, 246, 305,
 311, 323, 327
 Priscilla, 68, 70, 74, 314
 Remember, 27, 29, 106
 Ruth, 69
 Samuel, 17, 17 fn, 60, 63, 65, 67,
 70, 73, 76, 78, 80, 136, 304, 305,
 309, 311, 323, 327, 329
 Sarah, 54, 60, 68, 238, 305, 309
 Susanna, 29, 65, 70
 Susannah, 65, 67, 70, 73, 76, 78,
 80, 304, 329
 Thomas, 60, 61, 65, 69, 334
 William, 70
 Simons — see Simonds
 Simpson, Simson, Sympson
 Abigail, 150

- John, 251
 Mary, 251
 Sims — see Simmes
 Simson — see Simpson
 Skarlett,
 Anne, 6
 Mary, 9
 Skeery — see Skerry
 Skelton, Samuel, xii, xiii, xiv, xiv fn,
 xv, xvi, 15
 Skerry, Skeery, Skery, 122, 150, 153,
 222, 241
 Anne, 28
 Bridgett, 12
 E., 31
 Eliza, 16
 Elizabeth, 31, 32
 Ephraim, 30, 31, 37, 53, 54, 55,
 56, 58, 222, 241, 280, 306, 319,
 330
 Ephram, 19
 Frances, 6
 Francis, 28, 58, 306, 324, 338
 H., 96, 128, 131, 133
 Hanna, 54
 Hannah, 30, 306, 319, 324
 [Henry], 37
 H[enry], 28
 Henry, 7, 16, 18, 19, 22, 28, 32,
 53, 121, 142, 172
 Jon, 22
 Margaret, 56
 Margarett, 58, 280
 Martha, 31
 Mary, 18, 334
 Pricilla, 172
 Priscilla, 184
 Samuel, 31
 Skery — see Skerry
 Skinner,
 G., 33
 Samuel, 33
 Sluman,
 Andrew, 65
 Eunice, 77
 John, 62
 Mary, 59, 62, 65, 75, 77, 308
 Thomas, 59, 62, 65, 75, 77, 308
 William, 75
 Small, 39, 41
 Anna, 39
 Elizabeth, 39
 Hanna, 167, 226
 Hannah, 39
 Hephzibah, 56
 John, 39
 Joseph, 53, 56
 Mary, 39
 Rachel, 39
 Samuel, 41
 Sarah, 43
 Stephen, 39, 43
 Smith, 29, 30, 314
 Abigail, 43, 174
 Abraham, 29, 80
 Ann, 70
 Anne, 184
 Benjamin, 16, 43, 54, 56, 58
 Bridget, 43
 David, 306, 325
 Eliphalett, 68
 Elizabeth, 29, 30, 46, 50, 68, 315
 Eunice, 82, 97
 Hannah, 306, 325
 Henry, 77
 James, 45, 182, 184
 John, 29, 44, 46, 50, 51, 73, 75,
 174, 179, 184, 315
 M, 168
 Margaret, 39
 Mary, 14, 29, 39, 39 fn, 44, 68,
 70, 73, 75, 77, 79, 80, 82, 179,
 305, 314
 Mehitabel, 305
 Mercy, 56, 58
 Nathaniel, 17
 Priscilla, 46
 Ralph, xiii fn, 12
 Robert, 68, 70, 73, 75, 77, 79,
 80, 82, 305, 314
 Samuel, 43, 51, 58, 79, 80
 Sara, 43
 Sarah, 29
 Susanna, 80

Susannah, 79, 80
 Thomas, 16, 17, 43
 William, 39 fn, 41
 Sothwick — see Southwick
 Southerick — see Southwick
 Southrick — see Southwick
 Southwick, Sothwick, Southerick,
 Southrick, Sutherick
 Benjamin, 47
 Cassandra, 8
 Hanna, 226
 Hannah, 45
 Isaack, 49
 Jo., 41
 John, 39, 42, 43, 45, 47, 49
 Joseph, 41
 Larance, 17
 Laurance, 8
 Mary, 14
 Provided, 17
 Ruth, 40
 Sarah, 42
 Spooner,
 Amy, 7
 Thomas, 7
 Stackhouse, 29, 30, 31, 34, 36
 Abigail, 34
 Abygaile, 21
 Hana, 21
 Jonathan, 21
 Mary, 24
 Richard, 21, 22, 23, 24, 31
 Roger, 36
 Ruth, 22
 Samuel, 23
 Sarah, 29
 Susana, 13
 Thomas, 30
 Stacy, Stacey, Stacyes, 19, 21, 34, 37,
 40, 139, 163
 Abigail, 32
 Agnes, 32, 144, 158
 Deborah, 19
 Edward, 34
 Elizabeth, 32, 139 fn
 Hanna, 37, 53, 223
 Hugh, 15
 John, 19, 21, 40, 139, 156, 158,
 169, 179
 Joseph, 139 fn
 Martha, 36
 Mary, 55, 139 fn, 245
 Nimphas, 139 fn
 Priscilla, 33, 41, 62, 233
 Rebecca, 139 fn
 Samuel, 53, 223, 62
 Simon, 43, 62
 Susanna, 139
 Symon, 139 fn
 Thomas, 139, 169
 W., 33
 William, 33, 36, 41, 43, 55, 139,
 141, 185, 245
 Stacey — see Stacy
 Stacyes — see Stacy
 Standish,
 James, 8
 Sara, 7
 Stanton, 276
 Katherine, 67
 Robert, xx fn, 67, 262, 262 fn,
 266, 267
 William, 67
 Star, Starre, Starres, 30, 114
 Mary, 30, 238
 Richard, 50
 Susanna, 50
 Starre — see Star
 Starres — see Star
 Steevens — see Stevens
 Stephens — see Stevens
 Stevens, Steevens, Stephens, 17, 27,
 28, 32, 41, 178, 322
 Andrew, 306
 Anna, 43, 175
 Benjamin, 28
 Ebenezer, 306, 324
 Elizabeth, 41
 Isaak, 17
 John, 4, 71, 82, 322
 Josua, 27
 Love, 108
 Mary, 17, 82, 306, 322
 Ruth, 18

- Sarah, 82
 William, 9, 18, 32
 Steward — see Stewart
 Stewart, Steward, 39
 Charles, 39
 Charls, 40
 Eunice, 77, 79
 Mary, 79
 William, 77, 79
 Stileman, 96, 124
 Elias, 5, 8, 17, 125
 Elizabeth, 68
 Hannah, 14
 Isaac, 68, 314
 Mary, 68
 Preserved, 68, 314
 Richard, 23
 Samuel, 23
 Stokes, 318
 Arthur, 76, 318
 Christian, 76, 318
 Elizabeth, 76
 Margarett, 76
 Stone, 236, 316
 Ab:, 117
 Abigail, 27
 Elizabeth, 27, 105
 Ellen, 14
 Hanna, 39, 40, 169
 James, 69, 72, 316, 332
 Jo:, 116
 John, 14, 27
 Joseph, 69
 Margaret, 68
 Margarett, 314
 Nathaniel, 27
 Rem., 117
 Robart, 40
 Robert, 54, 236
 Samuel, 27
 Sarah, 69, 72, 316, 332
 William, 27
 Stoughton, William, 136, 150
 Stricker — see Striker
 Striker, Stricker, 33, 34
 Benjamin, 39
 Dorcas, 33
 H., 39
 Hanna, 158
 Joseph, 34
 Suasy — see Swazy
 Sutherick — see Southwick
 Swan,
 Elizabeth, 21
 Henry, 8, 19, 21
 Thomas, 19
 Swasy — see Swazy
 Swasye — see Swazy
 Swazey — see Swazy
 Swazy, Suasy, Swasy, Swasye, Swazey,
 34
 Abigail, 27
 Ammi, 55, 58, 61, 63, 66, 72, 78,
 327
 Elizabeth, 27, 36, 66, 72
 John, 27
 Joseph, 27, 29, 36, 37, 63
 Mary, 27, 110
 Nathaniel, 58
 Samuel, 27, 55, 58, 61, 66, 78, 327
 Stephen, 29, 78
 Swinerton — see Swinnerton
 Swinnerton, Swinerton, 153
 Abigail, 40
 Antipas, 37
 Benjamin, 35
 Elizabeth, 8
 Ester, 35
 Hanna, 42
 James, 38
 Jo., 34
 Job, 35, 38, 42, 153
 Job., 40
 Jobe, 8
 John, 35, 37, 53, 240, 297, 317,
 333
 Margarett, 297
 Mercy, 34, 53, 202, 263, 297,
 317, 333
 Symmes — see Simmes
 Symms — see Simmes
 Symonds — see Simonds
 Sympson — see Simpson
 Syms — see Simmes

- Tailer — see Tailor
- Tailor, Tailer, Taylor,
 Elizabeth, 59, 308, 332
 John, 59, 308, 317, 332
 Mary, 59, 317
 Thomas, 279 fn
 William, 59
- Talby,
 Difficulty, 16
 Jon, 16
- Tapleigh — see Taply
- Tapley — see Taply
- Taply, Tapleigh, Tapley, 145
 Benjamin, 42, 54
 Elizabeth, 42, 46, 174, 288, 331
 G., 41
 Gilbert, 44, 45
 [John], 42
 John, 48
 Joseph, 41
 Lidia, 44
 Mary, 42, 51
 Samuel, 42
 William, 46, 48, 51, 52, 54
- Tarrin, Mary, 49 fn, 200
- Tarzin,
 John, 49
 Mary, 200 fn
- Tawly, 33
 Elizabeth, 33
 Jo., 36
 John, 36
- Taylor — see Tailor
- Tewksbury,
 James, 306
 Jane, 76
 John, 80
 Jonathan, 76, 78, 80, 82, 306,
 324
 Mary, 76, 78, 80, 82, 306
 Naomi, 82
 Susanna, 305
 Susannah, 324
 Timothy, 78
- Thacher — see Thatcher
- Thatcher, Thacher, 271 fn
 Thomas, xv fn, 23
- Peeter, 23
- Thomas, Nathaniel, 275, 326
- Thorndike,
 Abigail, 71
 Lydia, 71
- Ting, Edward, 136
- Tompkins, 144, 197
 Debora, 39
 Deborah, 23
 Elizabeth, 17, 21, 35, 200, 226
 Hanna, 17, 18
 Jo., 37
 John, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22, 35, 39,
 166
 Jon, 17, 20, 21, 23
 Katherne, 11
 Margaret, 35, 199, 250
 Mary, 22, 37, 197, 226
 Nathaniel, 35
 Rebecca, 35, 154
 Rebecka, 199
 Sarah, 19
- Tompson, Tomson, 19, 21
 Anna, 21
 Edmond, 9
 Thomas, 19
- Tomson — see Tompson
- Toppan,
 Bezaleel, 78, 81, 83
 Mary, 78, 81, 83
 Sarah, 83
 Thomas, 81
 Willoughby, 78
- Town, Towne,
 Goodwife, 13
 Johanna, 100
 Joseph, 22
 Sarah, 22
- Towne — see Town
- Trask, 23, 25, 30
 Anna, 24, 59
 Elizabeth, 20, 47, 59, 62, 64, 186
 Esther, 79, 319
 George, 59, 62, 64
 Jon, 19
 Mary, 16, 23, 24, 64
 Sara, 25, 30

- Susana, 16
 W., 31
 William, 5, 16, 18, 19, 20, 31
 Treadwell, 337 fn
 Trew — see True
 True, Trew,
 Benjamin, 24
 Henry, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Jemminah, 25
 John, 20
 Joseph, 23
 Lyddea, 22
 Trusler,
 Ellinor, 9
 Thomas, 9
 Tuck, John, 46
 Turner, 40, 47, 48, 49, 51, 53
 Bethiah, 57
 Charles, Mr. Maston's negro, 53
 Eliz[abeth], 40
 Elizabeth, 7, 40 fn, 48
 Eu[nice], 40
 Eunice, 40 fn, 53
 F[reestone], 40
 Freestone, 40 fn
 Isaac, 62
 James, 62
 Jane, 288, 331
 John, 40 fn, 47, 51, 57, 69, 188,
 315
 Jno., 55
 Mary, 49, 62, 188
 Robert, 55
 Titus, negro servant of John
 Turner, 69
 Twist,
 Abigail, 60, 65, 326
 Daniel, 72, 333
 Hannah, 65, 72
 John, 60, 65, 326
 Mary, 72, 333
 Tyle, Hanna, 151
 Tyler,
 Joshua, 68
 Margaret, 68
 Mary, 68
 Upham, Charles Wentworth, xxi
 Upton, Mary, 305 fn
 Vaile,
 Abigaile, 20
 Jeremiah, 20, 21, 22
 Katherne, 12
 Sara, 21
 Venner, Thomas, 7, 9, 18
 Venus, 23
 Elizabeth, 23
 Grace, 14
 William, 23
 Veren, Verin, 127, 144, 155, 157,
 337 fn, 338
 Abigaile, 24
 Bethiah, 18
 Deliverance, 21
 Dorcas, 6, 19, 23
 Hilliard, 22, 24
 Hillyard, 13, 21, 23, 24
 Hilyard, 150, 151
 Jane, 9, 10
 Joshua, 10
 Mary, 12, 21
 Phillip, 5, 9, 10, 18, 19, 20
 Sarah, 24
 Verin — see Veren
 Verry — see Very
 Very, Verry,
 Alice, 48
 Benjamin, 49, 51, 197
 Elizabeth, 48, 196, 226, 229
 Eunice, 77
 James, 73
 Jemina, 51, 197, 226
 Jonathan, 48, 59, 196
 Joseph, 48, 49, 65, 66, 70, 73,
 75, 77
 Mary, 59, 75
 Nathan, 66
 Ruth, 49, 65, 66, 70, 73, 75, 77
 Samuel, 49
 Thorndike, 48
 Vial, 52, 209
 Benjamin, 52

- Elizabeth, 50
 Samuel, 50
 Vincent,
 Jacob, 25
 William, 25
 Vinning,
 Elizabeth, 304
 Sarah, 304, 306
 Thomas, 304, 306
 Vinson, William, 14
 Wadsworth,
 Benjamin, 268
 Christopher, 162
 Wait — see Wate
 Wakefield,
 John, 80
 Joseph, 80
 Mary, 80
 Walcot — see Wolcot
 Walcott — see Wolcot
 Walk, Walke
 Abigail, 41, 42, 230
 Jehodan, 41
 Walke — see Walk
 Walker, 183
 Abigail, 169
 Abraham, 17
 Christopher, 100
 Percis, 9, 17
 Sarah, 13, 17
 Susanna, 114
 Walter, 31, 40
 Elizabeth, 40
 Thomas, 40
 Welthan, 40
 William, 40
 Walton, 17, 18, 20
 Josiah, 18
 Mary, 20
 Samuel, 17
 Ward, xxvi, 18, 28, 30, 33, 34, 39
 Abigail, 29, 46, 73, 75, 121
 Alce, 10
 Benjamin, 45, 65, 73, 76, 78, 327
 Daniel, 65
 Deborah, 65, 73, 76, 78, 327
 Ebenezer, 51
 Elizabeth, 29, 43, 70, 72, 73, 75, 332
 James, 39
 [Jehodan], 41
 Jehodan, 41, 42
 John, 18, 28, 42, 43, 45, 46, 48, 49, 50, 71, 178
 Jonathan, 76
 Joshua, 45, 64, 65, 71, 311
 Lyddea, 21
 M., 71
 Margarett, 10
 Margret, 48
 Martha, 22, 30, 78
 Mary, 29, 39, 49, 78
 Miles, 9, 18, 21, 22, 39, 45, 50, 51, 70, 72, 73, 75, 183, 270, 296, 332
 Rebecca, 33, 78
 Remember, 29
 Samuel, 30
 Sara, 263
 Sarah, 34, 64, 65, 70, 71, 183, 270
 Thomas, 78
 Warly,
 Abigail, 35
 Sarah, 35
 Warren, John, 295, 295 fn, 296
 Wate, Wait,
 Goodie, 125 fn
 John, 136
 Water, 31
 Hannah, 30
 Mary, 30
 Samuel, 30
 William, 31
 Waterman, 16
 Nathaniel, 16
 Richard, 16
 Waters, 18, 30, 32, 33, 34, 35, 171, 185, 196
 Abigail, 35, 48, 51, 195
 Abigaile, 20
 Barbara, 48
 Daniel, 43

- Debora, 32
 Dorcas, 31
 Ebenezer, 41, 51
 Elizabeth, 19, 32, 187, 194, 196,
 226, 310, 327
 Eunice, 49
 Ez., 33
 Ezeckiel, 43
 Ez[ekiel], 41
 Ezekiel, 21, 32, 35, 36, 37, 41,
 42, 171, 274
 Hanna, 23
 Hannah, 46
 John, 32, 35, 47, 48, 49, 51, 178,
 187, 195
 Joseph, 34
 Joyce, 11, 36
 Lydia, 48
 Martha, 41, 46, 183
 Mary, 46, 47, 52, 185, 187, 274
 Mehitabel, 48, 50
 Mercy, 50, 53
 Nathanael, 53
 Nathaneel, 196
 Nathaniel, 32, 48, 50, 51
 Priscilla, 42
 Richard, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23,
 31, 32, 46, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52,
 183, 210, 226
 Samuel, 32, 46, 48, 49, 50, 53,
 185
 Sara, 53, 145
 Sarah, 32, 145, 226
 Sary, 47
 Susanna, 22, 37
 Wathen, Georte, 11
 Wats — see Watts
 Watson,
 Johane, 6
 Thomas, 9
 Watts, Wats,
 G., 158
 Goodie, 125
 Waugh,
 Matthew, 75
 Susannah, 75
 Waye,
 Elizabeth, 24
 Henry, 23
 Richard, 14, 23, 24
 Web — see Webb
 Webb, Web, 209, 244
 Ammi, 304, 307, 323
 Abigail, 63
 Daniel, 41, 43, 72
 David, 40
 Elizabeth, 41, 51, 63, 72, 304,
 327
 George, 68
 Hannah, 68
 John, 51, 53, 56, 58, 63, 209,
 304, 307, 323, 327
 Jona, 55
 Jonathan, 44, 51, 55, 56, 58, 68,
 244, 263
 Margaret, 43
 Mary, 40, 72
 Nathaniel, 47
 Perez, 40
 Priscilla, 55, 58, 68, 244
 Samuel, 44, 47, 51
 William, 56
 Webber,
 John, 79, 335
 Jonathan, 79
 Sarah, 79, 335
 Weekes, Weeks,
 Alce, 8
 Bethiah, 18
 Hanna, 20
 Thomas, 18, 20
 Weeks — see Weekes
 Weld, 30
 D., 33 fn
 John, 33 fn
 Micheson, 30
 Wells, Wels, 29, 30, 31, 32, 34, 35
 Barbara, 30, 181
 D., 33
 Daniel, 46
 Edward, 46
 Elizabeth, 34
 John, 32, 33

- Joseph, 29, 31
 Ruth, 35
 Wels — see Wells
 Wesgate — see Westgate
 West, 198
 Benjamin, 27, 73
 Daniel, 45
 Elizabeth, 27, 30, 31, 42, 49, 52, 59, 108, 197
 George, 70
 H., 31
 Harry, 29
 H[enry], 27, 30
 Henry, 27, 29, 49, 50, 52, 53, 54, 108, 197, 198, 249, 308, 326, 332
 John, 28, 43, 49, 62, 64, 65, 67, 70, 74
 Joseph, 27
 Judith, 54, 197
 Mary, 31, 48, 53, 55, 59, 62, 64, 65, 67, 69, 70, 73, 74, 194, 249
 Mehitabel, 56, 64
 Nathaniel, xxi
 Ruth, 332
 Samuel, 27, 42, 43, 45, 48, 49, 55, 56, 59, 62, 64, 67, 69, 73, 194, 249
 Sarah, 64, 67, 74
 Susannah, 62, 178, 308, 326
 T., 31
 T[homas], 28
 Thomas, 27, 108, 145
 William, 69
 Westgate, Wesgate, 244
 Elizabeth, 55, 244, 245
 Ingersol, 39
 John, 26
 Mary, 26, 96
 Ruth, 165
 Thomas, 26, 39
 Weston, Westone, 26, 27
 Elizabeth, 26
 John, 13, 25
 Jon, 25
 Samuel, 27
 Sarah, 25
 Westone — see Weston
 Wheeler, 22, 49, 125, 197
 Isaack, 22
 Joseph, 49, 197 fn
 Mary, 13
 Zippora, 22
 Wheelwright, 141
 Whipple,
 John, 44
 Joseph, 44
 White, 19, 20, 93, 146, 154, 188
 Abigail, 47
 Anne, 76
 Daniel A., 103
 Desire, 67, 71, 73, 76, 78, 305, 313
 Elizabeth, 47
 Hanna, 217
 Joane, 11
 John, xi, 47, 67, 71, 73, 76, 78, 305, 313
 Josiah, 19
 Margarett, 305
 Mary, 67
 Mercy, 78
 Ruth, 20
 Sara, 19
 William, 73
 Whiting, 120
 Joseph, 151
 Samuel, 120
 Widger, Anna, 37
 Wigglesworth, 299
 Samuel, 296
 Wilcolk — see Wilcox
 Wilcox, Wilcolk, Daniel, 224, 224 fn
 Wilkin, Wilkins, 14, 38, 169
 [Abigail], 39
 Benjamin, 39, 160
 Bray, 14, 169
 Henry, 37, 162
 Nehemia, 37
 Sarah, 38
 Susanna, 37
 Wilkins — see Wilkin
 Wilkis — see Wilks

- Wilks, Wilkis, 40, 169
 Benjamin, 36, 169
 Henry, 46, 169
 Jonathan, 36
 Willard, 36, 37, 197, 210, 231, 236
 Abigail, 56
 Elizabeth, 54
 Hannah, 55, 244, 263
 Jacob, 49, 51, 52, 54, 56, 197
 Jane, 248, 263
 Josiah, 34, 51, 53, 54, 210, 248, 263, 283
 Margaret, 56
 Martha, 36, 56, 204, 263
 Mary, 54
 Richard, 55, 56, 244
 Samuel, 51, 53, 228 fn
 Sarah, 49
 Simon, 34, 37, 228, 228 fn, 229, 250, 254 fn, 263, 264, 265, 267
 William — see Williams
 Williams, William, 28, 31, 33, 37, 99, 144, 281, 310
 Abigail, 31, 44, 179
 Ann, 9
 Aquila, 36
 Benjamin, 26, 69
 Bethiah, 19
 Daniel, 36
 Debora, 26
 Ebenezer, 31, 37
 Ebenzer, 32
 Eleazer, 7
 Elizabeth, 26, 36, 61, 62, 96, 310
 Esther, 58
 George, 5, 16, 17, 19, 20, 28, 29, 82
 Henry, 27, 36
 Hilliard, 179
 Hillyard, 28
 Is., 31
 Is[aac], 30
 Isaac, 26, 55, 56, 58, 60, 61, 63, 65, 66, 69, 244, 336
 Isack, 26, 28, 99, 100
 J., 183 fn
 J[ohn], 29
 Jo:, 27, 32
 John, 28, 30, 45, 61, 62, 181
 Jonathan, 16, 28, 61, 62, 66, 310
 Joseph, 17, 106, 111, 112, 121, 122
 Joshua, 35
 Margery, 99
 Margret, 178
 [Mary], 144
 Mary, 27, 29, 48, 63, 311
 Mascol, 56
 Mehitabel, 65
 Nathaniel, 46, 63
 Rebecca, 36
 Richard, 33, 38
 Robert, 61, 63, 66, 310
 Roger, xxiv
 Ruth, 31
 Samuel, 26, 27, 28, 29, 31, 35, 38, 44, 46, 48, 103, 105
 Sarah, 26, 45, 58, 60, 61, 63, 65, 66, 69, 181, 310
 Susannah, 61
 Willis, 68, 314
 Anne, 68, 314
 Ebenezer, 48
 Eunice, 48, 188
 George, 63, 311
 Robert, 47, 188
 Thomas, 47, 67, 313, 329
 Willoby — see Willowby
 Willougbe — see Willowby
 Willoughby — see Willowby
 Willoughbee — see Willowby
 Willoughby — see Willowby
 Willowby, Willoby, Willougbe, Willoughby, Willoughbee, Willoughby, 33, 34, 42, 53, 200
 Abigail, 33
 Bethia, 51, 53
 Elizabeth, 38
 Francis, 49, 51, 200, 204, 236
 Hanna, 42
 John, 39
 Mary, 205
 Nehemia, 39

- Nehemiah, 36, 38
 Sarah, 36
 William, 34, 49
 Wilson, 43
 J., 183
 Martha, 156
 Winslow, Joseph, 52
 Winston, Joseph, 211
 Winter, 29, 31, 33
 Abigail, 36
 Debora, 36, 160
 Edward, 29, 36
 Mary, 31, 33
 William, 36
 Winthrop, John, xviii
 Wise, 159, 268
 John, 159 fn
 Witherel, Witherell, Withereth,
 Witherill, Wytherill, Wytherlie
 Abigail, 83
 Dinah, 55 fn, 61, 83, 246
 Joshua, 55, 55 fn, 57, 61, 246,
 323
 Mary, 83
 Samuel, 61
 William, 55, 55 fn, 83
 Witherell — see Witherel
 Withereth — see Witherel
 Witheridg — see Witheridge
 Witheridge, Witheridg
 Prudence, 51, 208
 Witherill — see Witherel
 Witherspoon, Isabel, 198 fn
 Wolcot, Walcot, Walcott, Wolcott,
 Woolcot, 29, 39, 45, 53
 Anne, 38
 Deliverance, 38, 164, 170
 Elizabeth, 39, 49, 74
 Freek, 53
 Freke, 43, 53 fn
 John, 47, 74
 Jonathan, 29
 Josia, 236
 Josiah, 43, 43 fn, 44, 46, 47, 49,
 175, 199, 212, 214, 231, 234,
 256, 327
 Mary, 49, 74, 175, 327
 Mehitabel, 45
 Thomas, 44
 Treet, 43 fn
 Wolcott — see Wolcot
 Wolfe, Woolfe, 99, 116
 Martha, 6
 Peeter, 6
 Peter, 116
 Wood,
 Robert, 55
 Susanna, 55
 Woodall,
 Jonathan, 42
 Samuel, 42
 Woodberry — see Woodbery
 Woodbery, Woodberry, Woodberye,
 18, 28, 116
 Abigail, 24, 26
 Abigaile, 16, 24
 Agnes, 6
 An, 116
 Andrew, 27
 Ann, 14, 24
 Anne, 24
 Christian, 25
 Ebenezer, 28
 Eliz., 116
 Elizabeth, 10, 25, 26, 28, 97
 Frances, 14
 H., 116
 Hanna, 110
 Hannah, 16
 Hugh, 14, 23, 24, 25, 27, 116
 Humph, 116
 [Humphrey], 20
 H[umphrey], 25
 Humphrey, 23
 Humphry, 13, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25
 Isaack, 20
 Isack, 27
 Jo:, 116
 Joane, 24
 J[ohn], 97
 John, 5, 16, 18, 25, 26
 Jon, 16, 18
 Joseph, 27
 Mary, 93

- N., 116
 Nathaniel, 17
 Nicholas, 24, 25, 27
 Nicolas, 25
 Peeter, 18, 23
 Peter, 28, 116
 Priscilla, 27
 Richard, 24
 Samuel, 23
 Sarah, 24
 Sus:, 116
 Susanna, 22
 Tho:, 117
 Thomas, 28
 W:, 116
 William, 9, 17, 20 fn, 23
 Woodberye — see Woodbery
 Woodbridge,
 Anne, 60, 62, 65, 69, 72, 271,
 309
 Benjamin, 55, 57, 59, 63, 65, 69,
 72, 75, 328, 336
 Dudley, 63, 72, 75
 Elizabeth, 65
 John, 123 fn
 Joseph, 62
 Margarett, 65
 Martha, 59, 60, 69, 72
 Mary, 55, 59, 63, 65, 69, 72, 75,
 328
 Nathl., 60
 Nathaniel, 62, 65, 69, 72, 271,
 309
 Samuel, 72
 Woodcocke — see Woodcok
 Woodcok, Woodcocke, 26, 99
 Susanna, 26
 Woodman, 36
 Edward, 36
 John, 36
 Maverick, 36
 Moses, 36
 Remember, 36
 Samuel, 36
 Woodruf — see Woodruff
 Woodruff, Woodruf, 34
 Mary, 34
 Lyddia, 37
 Woodwall,
 Mary, 162
 Samuel, 174
 Tomizen, 174
 Woodwel — see Woodwell
 Woodwell, Woodwel, Wordwell, 37,
 201
 Benjamin, 41
 David, 45
 Elizabeth, 43, 58, 61, 64, 178,
 308
 Gideon, 39
 John, 38, 49, 59, 178, 200
 Jonathan, 59, 62, 64, 66, 70, 74,
 308, 330
 Joseph, 62
 Mary, 49, 61
 Priscilla, 59, 62, 64, 66, 70, 74,
 330
 [Samuel], 38
 Samuel, 39, 41, 43, 45, 61, 64,
 294, 308, 326
 Stacy, 70
 Woodworth,
 Elizabeth, 58
 Samuel, 58
 Woolcot — see Wolcot
 Woolfe — see Wolfe
 Wordwell — see Woodwell
 Wright, Elizabeth, 10
 Wytherill — see Witherel
 Wytherlis — see Witherel
 Yell, 324
 Abigail, 307
 Elizabeth, 306, 307, 324
 Nathaniel, 306, 307, 324
 Young, Younge, Younges, 18, 19, 20
 Benjamin, 334
 Christopher, 17, 120
 Elizabeth, 58
 John, 58
 Judith, 19
 Ruth, 18
 Sarah, 17

Younge — see Young
Younges — see Young
Youngs — see Young

Ziff, Larzar, xvi fn

Names from the text without
surnames or titles:

————, 30, 63

Abigail, 30, 36

Benjamin, 36

Caleb, 33

Charles, 53

Deliverance, 36

Ebenezer, 30

Eliz., 44 fn

Elizabeth, 29, 31, 36, 44, 59

Hanna, 33, 45

Hannah, 30, 69, 315, 327

Isaac, 62

John, 38

Jonathan, 30

Mary, 30

Phillis, 69, 315

Rebecca, 61

Samuel, 30

Sarah, 78

Susanna, 37

Thomas, 44, 44 fn

Index of Subjects

- Aged persons, 193, 274
 American Colonies, 164 fn
 Andover, 223
 South Parish, 216, 216 fn, 223
 Andros government protested, 172
- Bay Psalm Book*, 115, 138
 Bedford, Church of, 300
 Beverly, 46, 116, 129 fn, 142 fn, 186 fn, 267, 291 fn, 312, 325
 First Church of, xix, xix fn, 57 fn, 71, 128, 141, 145, 156, 159, 185, 186, 188, 236, 237, 259, 268, 274, 291, 295, see also Salem, Bass River Side.
 Second Church (Royal Side) of, 243 fn, 281, 292, 295
 Boston, xvii fn, xix, xxii, 9, 30, 86, 102, 118, 119, 120, 124, 129, 129 fn, 137, 139, 144, 145 fn, 148, 150 fn, 164, 171, 186, 198 fn, 236, 253, 271, 271 fn, 275, 275 fn, 287 fn, 297, 312, 318, 325, 337 fn
 Arlington Street Church of (Irish Presbyterian Church), 335, 335 fn
 First Church of, 9 fn, 102 fn, 122, 141, 186 fn, 260 fn, 268, 281
 Fourth Church of (Brattle Street Church), 236 fn, 237, 246 fn, 259, 260 fn, 268, 281
 New Brick, 'Revenge' Church of, 271 fn
 New North Church of, 270, 271, 271 fn
 Second Church (North Church) of, 175, 183, 198, 236, 237, 260 fn
- Third Church (Old South Church) of, 120 fn, 151, 228 fn, 260 fn, 297, 309
 Boxford, Church of, 208
 Bradford, 160 fn
 Bradford Association of Ministers, 279 fn
 Braintree, First Church of, 335
 Bread corn, scarcity of, 230
- Cambridge, xviii fn, 37
 Church of, 176, 179, 292
 Cambridge Platform, xvii, 115, 115 fn
 Cambridge University, 120 fn, 339
 Canada, 216
 Canada Expedition, 170
 Cape Ann, xi
 Cape Sable, 142
 Catechism, Mr. Cotton's, 87
 Centennial address, first in America, xx, 289, 290
 Charlestown, 122
 Church of, 133, 246, 291
 Charter from King Charles I, xi
 Chebacco, 326, see also Essex
 Church of, 159, 202
 Chelmsford, xxiv fn
 Church of England, xi, xiii, xvi
 Clare Hall, Cambridge, 339
 Commission to the Indians, 142
 Commissioners of New England, 160
 Committee of Safety, 169
 Concord, Church of, 250
Confession of Faith and Covenant, xiv, xv
Confession of Faith and Platform of Discipline, 152
 Congregational Churches, xviii, xx

- Connecticut River, 136
 Consecration of Churches, 120
 Consumption, 81, 272, 306, 321, 325
 Cork, Ireland, 157 fn
 Church of, 93
Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism, 86 fn
- Danvers (Salem Village), 147, 152 fn, 164, 164 fn, 170 fn, 182 fn
 Church of, 143, 143 fn, 207, 207 fn, 243, 243 fn, 250 fn
 Declaration of the Faith, xviii
 Delaware, 285 fn
 Dissenting chapel in London, 224 fn
 Dorchester, 180 fn
 Church of, 180
 Dorchester, England, xi
 Dorchester Adventurers, xi
 Drought, 180, 250
 Dunstable, 170 fn
 Dutch ships, 107
- Earthquakes, xvii, 284, 285, 285 fn
 Ecclesiastical Councils, xviii, xix, xx, xxii, 109, 110 fn, 120, 121, 123, 129 fn, 132, 141, 149, 150, 150 fn, 268, 269, 269 fn, 277, 278, 279, 279 fn, 281, 282, 286 fn, 287, 287 fn, 291, 292, 295
 Edgartown, 164 fn
 Edict of Nantes, 164 fn
 Elizabethtown, New Jersey, 194 fn
 England, xi, xii, xiii, xviii, xix, 84, 85 fn, 114, 119, 136, 139, 143, 144, 148, 150, 150 fn, 154, 164 fn, 325
 English Puritan Parishes, xi
 Essex, 151 fn, 159 fn
 Essex Institute, xxiv fn, 82
- Falmouth, Maine, 152 fn
 Famine, 123
 Farms — see Danvers
 Fevers, 230
 Fiske Ms., 3 fn
 French, enemy invasion by, 180
- French Ministers, 146
 French Protestants, 164, 164 fn
- Germany, Reformed Church of, 334
 Gloucester, 11, 11 fn, 144 fn, 309
 First Church of, 319
 Second Church of, 334
 Great Awakening, xxiii fn
 Great Britain, 71, 276, 301
 Guilford, Connecticut, 84
- Haddam, Connecticut, 156 fn
 Halfway Covenant, 103, 119, 120, 120 fn, 162
 Hartford, Connecticut, 92
 Harvard College, 45 fn, 57 fn, 131 fn, 143 fn, 151 fn, 152 fn, 156 fn, 159 fn, 160 fn, 172 fn, 182 fn, 186 fn, 216 fn, 228 fn, 243 fn, 245 fn, 246 fn, 247 fn, 250 fn, 255, 262 fn, 273 fn, 281 fn, 284, 286 fn, 287 fn, 290 fn, 291 fn, 295 fn, 302 fn, 307 fn, 314 fn, 339
 Harvest, 166, 180
 Hatfield, 159 fn
 Haverhill, Church of, 145, 151
 Hingham, 27, 27 fn
 Hopkinton, 293, 294
 Huguenots, 164 fn
- Indians, xii, 89, 100, 101, 136, 142, 144, 171, 276
 Indian attacks, 152 fn
 Indian wars, xvii
 Ipswich, 197 fn, 228 fn
 Church of, 86, 117, 126, 128, 129 fn, 143, 150 fn, 156, 157, 159, 183, 203, 228, 229, 236, 237, 259, 260, 284, 295, 309, 318, 320, 335, 336
 Second Church, 269, 269 fn, 336, 337
 Third Church, 295
 Ireland, 72, 157, 164, 175, 198 fn, see also Cork and Newton
 Isles of Shoals, 287 fn

- Jersey, Isle of, 146, 164 fn
 Jesus College, Cambridge, 339
 Judgment of Worms, 166
- Kennebeck, 285 fn
 Killingworth, Connecticut, 143 fn
 King's College, Cambridge, 339
 King Philip's War, 136, 137, 141, 142
- Leyden, Holland, xi
 Liberty of religion, King's declaration of, 166
 London, xi, 102, 102 fn, 108, 114, 139, 224 fn
 Lynn, xix, 120 fn, 151 fn, 165, 175, 224
 First Church of, xix, 86, 120, 121, 127, 128, 129, 129 fn, 151, 159, 171, 172, 179, 273, 273 fn, 274, 293 fn
 Second Church of, 293, 293 fn
 Third Church of, 293 fn
- Magistrates, duty and power in matters of religion, xiv
Magnalia Christi Americana, xv
 Malden, Church of, xix, 129 fn, 171, 291
 Manchester, 247, 247 fn
 Church of, 292, 334
 Marblehead, xix, xx, 29 fn, 33, 34, 35 fn, 36, 62, 100, 109, 121, 125, 142 fn, 156, 158, 159, 159 fn, 252, 279
 First Church of, 143, 158, 159, 236, 237, 246, 246 fn, 259, 281, 292, 320, 323, 335
 New Church of, 245
 Presbyterian Church of, 274
 Second Church of, 245 fn, 292, 324
 Marlborough, 270
 Marshfield, 154
 Church of, 126, 154
 Maryland, 85 fn
 Massachusetts Bay Colony, xvii
 Laws of, 137
- Massachusetts Bay Company, xi, 85 fn
 Measles, 230
 Medford, 57 fn
 Medway, Church of, 307, 307 fn
 Mendon, Church of, 204
 Merrimack River, 285 fn
 Millis, Church of, 307 fn
- Naumkeag (Salem), xi
 Negro man, 49, 62, 73, 229, 310, 317
 Negro woman, 45, 61, 181, 218, 221, 308, 310, 315, 325, 327
 New Castle, Pennsylvania, Presbyterian Church of, 247
 New England, xi, xvi, 148, 160, 164, 164 fn, 166, 253
New England Chronology, 5
 New England Company, xi
 New England Council, xi
New-England Weekly Journal, xx
 New Jersey, 194
 "New Lights", xxiii fn
 New London, Connecticut, Church of, 125
 New Salem, 302, 303, 303 fn
 Newbury, 253, 285 fn
 Church of, 123, 123 fn, 142 fn, 143, 156, 157, 194, 197
 Newfoundland, 311
 Newton, Ireland, 311
 Norwell, 164 fn
 Norwich, Church of, 125
- Occupations,
 Agents, 144, 154
 Assessor (tax), 234
 Carpenter, 51
 Clerk of the Court, 226
 Clothier, 228 fn
 Collector of the Port, 226
 Fishermen, 39
 General, xxv
 Gentleman, 85 fn
 Gentlewoman, 145
 Joyner, 34

- Mariner, 39, 85 fn
 Merchant, 85 fn, 145 fn, 226 fn
 Miller, 139
 Schoolmaster, 45 fn, 287 fn
 Selectman, 11
 Servants, 61, 62, 73, 78, 181, 310, 317
 Town Clerk, 214
 Town Treasurer, 233
 Weaver, 228 fn
- Peabody, Church of, 57 fn, see also Salem, Middle Precinct Parish
- Pestilence, 108
- Pharisees, Doctrine, 5
- Platform of Discipline, 119, 123, 148
- Plymouth, xv, xvi, xx, 136, 275, 339
 Church of, xi, xii, xvi fn, 126
- Plymouth Colony, 136
- Portsmouth, New Hampshire, 322
 Church of, 125, 287 fn, 335
- Presbyterian Church, 247
- Presbyterian ideas, xxiv
- Properties, King's confirmation of, 166
- Puritan clergy, xii
- Quakers, 5, 89, 167, 192, 193, 316, 325
- Rain, 163, 166, 275
- Reading, 309, 314, 314 fn
 First Church of, 86, 274, 291, 333
 Second Church of, 277, 278, 281, 291
- "Reforming Synod" in 1679, xvii
- Rehoboth, 160 fn
 Church of, 146, 147
- Rowley, 149, 151 fn
 Church of, 128, 129 fn, 156, 157
- Royal Side, North Church, see Beverly, Second Church
- Saint Christophers, Island of, 110 fn, 198, 199, 199 fn
- Salem,
 Bass River, 113
 Bass River Side, xix, 115, 116, 117
 Charter Street Cemetery, 262 fn
 East Church, xx, xxv, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 270, 274, 277, 280, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 296, 297, 333
- Salem,
 First Church of,
 Absence of people noted, 295
 Accusation of duplicity, 150 fn
 Acts, 15, 18
 Association meeting held at, 289
 Baptisms, 15, 16 - 83, 93, 110, 111, 120, 125, 126, 127, 140 fn, 144, 161, 169, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 194, 195, 196, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 208, 209, 210, 211, 216, 217, 218, 221, 222, 223, 224, 226, 229, 230, 233, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 261, 272, 273, 275, 276, 304 - 328, 330 - 337
 Baptisms of adopted children, 115
 Baptisms of children, xxiv, 90, 103, 107, 114, 137, 138, 160, 161, 162, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 188, 189, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 200, 201, 203, 204, 208, 209, 210, 211, 216, 222, 223, 227, 230, 236, 238, 239, 241, 242, 245, 246, 248, 249, 251, 259, 274, 276, 296, 301, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324 - 336
 Baptisms of children of members, state of, 89, 90
 Baptisms of children initiated, 103 - 105
 Baptisms of children withheld, 250
 Baptisms of deaf, 333 - 334
 Baptisms of elder children, 112 - 113

- Baptisms, enlarging of, 160
 Baptisms of infants, 90
 Baptisms, private, 272 - 273
 Baptisms, propositions of synod touching, 102 - 103
 Bible given to John Massey, 193
 Centennial, xx, xxi, xxi fn, 289 - 290
 Centennial sermon, xx
 Church book, xxiv, 87, 253, 257, 265
 Church meeting, xxii, xxiv, 15, 130, 134, 137, 139, 144, 149, 156, 189, 218, 230, 253, 255, 257, 264, 266
 Church record book, xxiii, xxv, xxv fn, xxvi
 Collection by contribution, 271
 Committee to attend the Parish Committee, 255
 Communion, 5, 6, 15, 87, 90, 91, 92, 114
 Communion, admission to full, 93, 109, 110, 111, 117, 121, 127, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 148, 152, 153, 154, 155, 157, 158, 160, 161, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 174, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 189, 194, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 208, 209, 210, 216, 217, 218, 221, 222, 223, 224, 227, 228, 229, 230, 236, 237, 238, 239, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 325 - 337
 Communion granted those baptized in other countries, 239
 Communion, not admitted to full, 134
 Communion, record of those who came to, 15
 Communion restored to, 194, 225
 Communion refused, 155
 Communion time agreed, 142
 Contribution for support of the Lord's Table, 266
 Contributions for the French Protestants, 164
 Contributions for the people of Saint Christophers, 110 fn, 198, 199
 Contributions for the poor, 143, 150, 190, 191, 264, 270, 274, 275, 276, 277, 280, 283, 284, 285, 286, 288, 289, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 299, 300, 301, 302
 Contribution for the propagation of the Gospel, 263 - 264
 Contribution for the redemption of captives, 171
 Contribution for 13 men that suffered shipwreck, 164
 Contributions not taken, 276
 Contributions to be given to the Reverend Mr. Fisk, 256
 Contributions, voluntary, 234
 Covenant, 3 - 5, 114, 151, 159
 Covenant, entry into, 108, 109, 114, 118, 121, 126, 139, 143, 144, 147, 152, 154, 175, 176, 177, 179, 180, 181, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 193, 195, 196, 198, 199, 201, 202, 204, 208, 209, 210, 211, 216, 217, 218, 221, 222, 223, 227, 229, 230, 233, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 248, 249, 251, 252, 275, 276, 308 - 325
 Covenant, owning of, xvi, 90, 91, 107, 108, 126, 127, 141, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 200, 201, 204, 205, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 216, 217, 218, 221, 222, 230, 233, 236, 238, 247, 324
 Covenant, renewal of, xvii, xviii, xxiv, 15, 88, 89, 92, 93, 121, 141, 151, 162, 176, 177, 178,

179, 180, 182, 184, 185, 188,
189, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198,
199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204,
208, 209, 210, 216, 217, 218,
221, 223, 224, 227, 229, 230,
236, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242,
243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248,
249, 250, 251, 252, 272, 274,
308 - 337

Day of Fasting, xviii, 88, 102,
118, 119, 127, 136, 142, 144,
145, 148, 150, 151, 153, 154,
160, 163, 166, 169, 170, 172,
174, 177, 181, 190, 191, 203,
206, 216, 230, 237, 249, 250,
267, 271, 274, 275, 276, 277,
280, 283, 284, 285, 286, 289,
292, 293, 294, 296, 297, 298,
299, 300, 301, 302

Day of Feasting, xxiv

Day of Humiliation, xiii, xvii, 5,
87, 88, 91, 92, 100, 103, 108,
109, 113, 114, 118, 125, 127,
132, 136, 141, 174, 201

Day of Thanksgiving, xvii, xxiv,
87, 108, 113, 118, 119, 122,
123, 125, 127, 143, 150, 152,
160, 164, 166, 170, 172, 173,
174, 177, 180, 182, 191, 217,
248, 252, 263, 270, 274, 276,
277, 280, 283, 285, 288, 291,
293, 294, 296, 297, 299, 300,
301, 302

Deacons, xiv, 139, 150, 151, 157,
164, 165, 190, 191, 226, 227,
228, 229, 253, 254, 263, 264,
265, 266, 267, 268, 273, 287

Discipline (Admonitions, Confes-
sions, Excommunications, Restora-
tions, Suspensions), 140

Attempting to murder herself, 223

Being with child in the time of
her widowhood by him that was
afterward her husband, 247

Breach of the 7th Commandment
not fit to be named, 167

Breaking peace, 111

Company keeping and drinking
and consenting to them, 200 - 201

Cursing and swearing, 168

Drunkenness, 100 - 102, 125,
154, 155

Error and rashness partaking of
the Elements, 274 - 275

Excessive drinking, 111, 149,
153, 168, 193, 202

Fornication, 106, 121, 125, 140,
145, 147, 149, 163, 185, 189,
193, 195, 209, 224, 239, 250,
261, 271, 274, 296, 297, 301,
309, 313, 318, 322, 328

Forsaking the church and ordi-
nances of God, 192

Fuddling, 153

Gross unchastity, 166

Incontinency, 166

Lasciviousness, 166

Long absent from the Lord's Sup-
per, 133

Luxury, 125

Neglecting her duty to her hus-
band, 149

Neglect of discipline, xxii

Offences against God and his
Church, 171

Offensive miscarriages of his form-
er conversation, 250

Oppression, 125

Pride, 125

Quakerism, 192

Refusing to appear before the
Church, 134, 192

Scandalous offences, 194

Scandalous sin, 144

Sin, 126, 192

So overtaken with drink as was
publicly observed in the street, 168

Such evils as had been observed,
171

Theft, 106, 121

To go on still in the way of
Quakerism, 167

Too early birth of her first child,

after marriage, 319, 321, 322
Uncleanness, 125, 133, 134, 140
Unruliness in rising up against
[], 140
Violation of 7th Commandment,
175 - 176, 276, 300
Walked disorderly, 149
Witchcraft, 173
With child by him who is now
her husband before marriage, 173,
194

Division in church, xxi, xxv
Division in membership la-
mented, 119
Elders, xiv, xvi, xvii, xxiv, 85, 89,
90, 107, 119, 120, 123, 125,
128, 129, 132, 137, 157, 174,
182, 243, 245, 246, 247, 248,
258
Excommunications erased and blot-
ted out, 219
Exhortation to keep the wheel of
prayer in continual motion, 172
Farewell sermon, 139
Founders of church, 15
Gifts to the church, 221
Joint meeting with Eastern Parish,
285
Lectures, xxii
Lectures discontinued, xxi
Legacy left church, 220
Letters of recommendation and
dismissal, 86, 153
Maintenance of the Lord's table,
191, 192
Marriage, 198 fn
Meeting house erected, xxiii
Membership, 6 - 15, 89, 91
Membership, admission to, 108,
109, 114, 118, 121, 125, 126,
127, 139, 141, 142, 143, 144,
146, 147, 150, 151, 153, 154,
156, 157, 158, 160, 162, 163,
165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170,
171, 174, 181, 183, 185, 189,
195, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201,

202, 210, 211, 222, 228, 229,
247, 304 - 307, 334
Membership, desire that a member
withdraw, 155
Membership, dismissal to an-
other, 92, 93, 100, 102, 116,
117, 118, 125, 127, 133, 139,
145, 146, 154, 155, 158, 169,
170, 183, 194, 203, 204, 208,
216, 223, 250, 270, 274, 275,
277, 278, 280, 288, 293, 294,
296, 297, 300, 302, see also Dan-
vers
Membership, encouragement of,
154
Membership, former member's
status of, 84
Membership, not admitted to, 121
Membership, restored to, 122
Ministers, calling, ordination, and
installation of, xiii, xv, xv fn, xvii,
84, 86, 155, 156, 157, 207, 231,
232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237,
244, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257,
259, 260, 261
Ministers, calling of assistant, 115,
116, 208
Ministers, calling of, judged il-
legal, 135 - 136
Ministers, charges against, 132 -
133
Ministers, Congregation advised to
look for, 154
Ministers, debate about assistant,
212 - 216
Ministers, dismissal of, xxi, xxii,
xxiii, xxiv
Ministers, dispute with town over
calling of, 212 - 216
Ministers, house of, 125, 256
Ministers, list of, 339
For individual ministers, see
under name in Index of Per-
sons
Ministers, ordination expenses,
236

- Ministers, reasons for not retaining, 130 - 131
- Ministers, request for assistant, 205 - 206
- Ministers, salary and maintenance, 138, 149 fn, 232, 233 - 234, 256, 279 fn, 282, 283, 287 fn
- Moderator chosen, 253, 257
- New book, 88
- Parish Book, 234
- Parish Committee, 255
- Parish line, 265, 270
- Petitions to form new churches, xix, xx, 109, 110, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 119, 120, 121, 128, 129, 134, 225, 226, 227, 228, 262, 263, 264
- Petitions to form new churches judged illegal, 135 - 136
- Poor, 87, 221, 252, see also Salem, First Church, Contributions for the poor
- Property of, 265,
- Baptismal basin, 220, 337 fn, 338
- Beakers, 337 fn, 338
- Box, 266
- Candle cup, 337 fn
- Dish for bread, 337 fn, 338
- Flagons, 221, 337 fn, 338
- Holland table cloth, 338
- Napkin, 338
- Silver plate, 265, 267, 337, 337 fn
- Spoon, 337 fn
- Stone jug, 338
- Utensils, 267
- Records, 15
- Scandalous contention between two members, 155
- Seal of the Covenant, 90
- Second century address, xxi
- Settlement of accounts, 230
- Singing, xx, xxi, 115, 291, 295, 299
- Tax to raise ministerial salary, 233
- Fourth Church, 281, 292, 307, 335
- Lower Parish, 285
- Middle Precinct Parish, xx, 57 fn, 228 fn, 259, 274
- North Church, xxv fn
- Second Church (Salem Village Church), 44, 67 fn, 169, 170, 170 fn, 180, 182, 182 fn, 236, 237, 243, 243 fn, 250, 259, 262 fn, 275, 286 fn, 292, 295, 307, 307 fn, 324, 332
- South Church, xxiii, xxiii fn, 337 fn
- Tabernacle Church, xxiii, xxiii fn, 337 fn
- Third Church, xxiii, xxv fn, 255, 281, 290, 291, 292, 295, 330, 339
- Town of, 212 - 216, 233
- Salisbury, Church of, 141
- Sandwich, 286 fn
- Church of, 286
- Saugus, First Congregational Parish of, 293 fn
- Savages, 168
- Scituate, 146
- Scotland, 177
- "Scripture language", xiv
- Scurvy, xii
- Seabrook, Church of, 127
- Separatists, xi, xii, xiii, xiii fn, xvi
- Smallpox, 144, 275, 275 fn
- Spain, 301
- Springfield, 155
- Church of, 153
- Stoneham, Church of, 290, 290 fn
- Suicide, 223
- Synods, xvii, xviii, 115, 119, 148, 149, 150, 152, 162
- Synod book, 150
- Topsfield, 318
- Church of, 100, 188
- Trinity College, Cambridge, 339
- Virginia, 85, 85 fn, 89, 126, 126 fn

- Waltham, First Church of, 179 fn
 War between Britain and Spain, 301
 Watertown, 16
 Church "gathered at Watertown,
 East End", 179, 179 fn
Way of the Churches, 115
 Wenham, 10, 131, 131 fn, 142 fn,
 328
 Church of, xix, xxiv fn, 57 fn,
 117, 131, 146, 156, 159, 207,
 236, 237, 259, 268, 269, 269 fn,
 292, 295, 295 fn, 296
 Weston, Church of, 281
 Weymouth, 270, 271 fn
 Wilmington, 305 fn
 Windsor, Connecticut, Church of,
 123
 Witchcraft, 172, 173, 219
 Woburn, xix, 281 fn
 Church of, 129 fn, 281
 Yale College, 194 fn
 Yarmouth, 287 fn
 West Church, 287
 York, Maine, 171
 Church of, 142

Phillips Library

The records of the First Church in Salem

F74.S1 S173 1974



3 6234 01007001 2

